



**Grand Master Fra Angelo de Mojana di Cologna, Malta, 1960s** <sup>#720</sup>

**77<sup>th</sup> Grand Master, Sovereign Military Order of Malta, 1962 – 1988**

Holding the rank of a Cardinal and thus a “Prince of the Church,” the Grand Master visits the tomb of 49th Grand Master Fra Jean de La Vallette-Parisot (1557-1568) on the Order’s island of Malta. The fourth most powerful man on earth (the first three being the Jesuit Superior General, the Pope and the Pope’s Cardinal Secretary of State), we must pause with awesome wonder in beholding the man whose faithful soldiers carried out the JFK assassination and continue the ~~Great Jesuit Cover-up~~. In command of The Grand Council, the “tongues” or branches of the Order are composed of highly placed Knights in government, finance, religious institutions, academia and every major profession. Subject to the Bishops of their immediate diocese, when called upon to obey an order for the benefit of Rome absolute obedience is expected and rendered without “fear of offense.” Abject silence is maintained upon pain of death, lest Rome should be implicated in the Order’s public deed of blood. Advising Cardinals ruling their subordinate Archbishops and Bishops are the Jesuits, the brains and penholders of the Pope, directing every Vatican conspiracy “for the greater glory of God.” For interfering with the Order’s Cold War during which the ~~Black Pope’s~~ plot to build communist China, communist Russia and Near Eastern Moslem nations for the ultimate invasion of North America, JFK “the usurper” was “extirpated.” *The Shield and the Sword: The Knights of Malta*, Ernle Bradford, (London: Collins Clear-Type Press, 1972).

## **Chapter 47**

### **The Jesuits — 1963 – 1979**

#### ***Knight of Malta Lee Iacocca***

***Head: Dearborn Division, Ford Motor Company***

***Congressional Loan to Chrysler; Knight of Malta William E. Simon***

***Payback for Obedience in the Kennedy Assassination***

“ ‘Under the curse of God, and the blessing of the Pope of Rome,’ said Bridgenorth. ‘You, lady, so quick-sighted in matters of earthly prudence, are you so blind to the gigantic pace at which Rome is moving to regain this country [*England*], once the richest gem in her usurped tiara? **The old are seduced by gold, the youth by pleasure, the weak by flattery, cowards by fear, and the courageous by ambition. A thousand baits for each taste, and each bait concealing the same deadly hook.**’ ” <sup>{1}</sup>

[Emphasis added]

**“Bridgenorth the Calvinist”**

**Freemason Sir Walter Scott, 1820**

**Scottish Presbyterian and Author**

***Peveril of the Peak***

“God will raise me up a champion . . . It cannot be that in merry England—the hospitable, the generous, the free, where so many are ready to peril their lives for honour, there will not be found one to fight for justice. . . . I know not if it be of Heaven the spirit which inspires me, but most truly do I judge that I am not to die this death, and that a champion will be raised up for me.” <sup>{2}</sup> [Emphasis added]

**“Rebecca the Jewess”**

**Freemason Sir Walter Scott, 1829**

**Scottish Presbyterian and Author**

***Ivanhoe***

In Fourteenth Amendment America **Lee Iacocca** has become loved and admired as an exceptional auto designer and savior of Chrysler, the company having been founded by another high-level Freemason, **Walter P. Chrysler**. He is known for his tremendous leadership abilities and great personal drive. He is also respected for his courage demonstrated towards **Henry Ford II** in resisting his corporate tyranny and personal hypocrisy. **Lee Iacocca**, of Italian Roman Catholic descent, is what many American men would love to be and rightly so.



It is for these reasons the author proceeds with a great sorrow of heart in exposing the terrible deed of **Lee Iacocca**, as he participated in the assassination of **President John F. Kennedy**. Hopefully this chapter will serve as corrective surgery rather than a dagger to the heart. Since Mr. Iacocca still lives the writer has **prayed** that he would repent and confess his sin to **God the Father** in **Jesus'** name, for:

*“He that covereth his sins shall not prosper:  
but whoso confesseth and forsaketh them shall have mercy.”*

*– Proverbs 28:13*

Since a great host of us Americans are murderers, having polluted our land with the blood of aborted millions, we are no better than Mr. Iacocca. May we also confess and find forgiveness and mercy, even as our friend may.

Knowing **the Black Pope's POWER** that would rage against **Lee Iacocca** if he would dare to tell all, the hundreds of assassins that would appear to expedite his demise via *“the poison cup, the strangulation cord, the steel of the poniard (the blade of the knife) or the leaden bullet,”* we realize the request to confess to the nation is monumental. But we are convinced his personal greatness is equal to the task even though he has backed the wicked **NAFTA** and **GATT** treaties now ruining the manufacturing base of America further destroying our Middle Class. And there are many of us fundamental, **Bible-believing** Baptists and Protestants who would **gladly** hazard our lives to protect him from every Jesuit assassin, be he Mafia, CIA or Mossad. For we are **Calvinist warriors** wielding both the **Sword of the Spirit** and the **Sword of Just Defense**, believing that to fight and die in defense of a righteous man for a righteous cause is to die well, that we *“might obtain a better resurrection”* (*Hebrews 11:35*) at the **Judgment Seat of Christ** (*II Corinthians 5:10*).

On November 22, 1963, **President John F. Kennedy** was assassinated in Dallas, Texas. The evidence inside the limousine proved there was more than one shooter, as there were several obvious primary strikes. It was for this reason that Dallas reporters were not allowed to take close-up photographs inside the limousine, but were kept at a distance by agents under orders from co-conspirator SSA **Leroy Kellerman**. The Secret Service, controlled by **Jesuit Francis Rowley** through his brother, SS Director **James J. Rowley** (the old friend of White House detail member **William Greer**), took great pains in destroying this evidence. We read:

*“Three days after the assassination, **Carl Renas**, head of security for the Dearborn Division of the Ford Motor Company, drives the limousine, helicopters hovering overhead, from Washington to Cincinnati. In doing so, he noted several bullet holes, the most notable being the one in the windshield's chrome molding strip, which he said was clearly ‘a primary strike’ and ‘not a fragment.’*

The Limousine was taken by **Renas** to Hess and Eisenhart of Cincinnati, where the chrome molding was replaced. **The Secret Service told Renas to ‘Keep your mouth shut.’** ” {3} [Emphasis added]

As we saw, the man who drove the limousine to Cincinnati was the head of security for the **Dearborn Division** of Ford Motor Company. And *who* was the head of the Dearborn Division in 1963 *who* dispatched Renas for the task of his life? According to author **Robert Lacy** it was **Lee Iacocca**. We read:

“**Henry Ford II** says today that the first time he can remember meeting **Lee Iacocca** was in November 1960, when he summoned the young salesman to his office to tell him he was giving him command of the Ford Division [*at Dearborn*].” {4} [Emphasis added]

**Lee Iacocca** remained the head of the **Dearborn Division** until 1970 when he became President of Ford Motor Company. Therefore, as the General Manager of the Dearborn Division in 1963, Iacocca participated in the Secret Service’s suppression of evidence. By dispatching his security chief to drive the limousine from Washington to Cincinnati for the removal of all primary and secondary bullet strikes, Lee Iacocca became an accessory to the murder of President Kennedy.

As a prominent Roman Catholic, **Lee Iacocca** was well acquainted with the Jesuit Order and **Ignatius Loyola’s** *Spiritual Exercises*. He writes of his life during the Depression caused by **Cardinal Hayes’** Knight of Malta, **Joseph P. Kennedy**:

“It took me a number of years to fully understand why I had to make a good confession to a priest before I went to **Holy Communion**, but in my teens I began to appreciate the importance of this most misunderstood rite of the Catholic Church. I not only had to think out my transgressions against my friends; I had to speak them aloud. In later years, I found myself completely refreshed after confession. I even began to attend weekend retreats, **where the Jesuits, in face-to-face examinations of conscience, made me come to grips with how I was conducting my life.**” {5} [Emphasis added]

The most important tie to the conspiracy in assassinating **Kennedy** was Iacocca’s subordination to **Cardinal Spellman** and the Knights of Malta. According to his autobiography he had eaten supper with **Cardinal Spellman** {6} and shortly after the assassination, Knight of Malta **Henry R. Luce**, who bought and suppressed the Zapruder Film, gave **Iacocca** a great write-up in his periodicals.

“Unveiled at the New York World’s Fair in the spring of 1964, the Mustang proved a sensation . . . Lee Iacocca well deserved the rare accolade of simultaneous cover stories in both *Time* and *Newsweek*.” {7}

Could this have been the beginning of the rise of the **Lee Iacocca's** star, leading to his appointment in 1970 as President of Ford Motor Company [*founded by 33° Freemason Henry Ford*], then to his appointment in 1975 as the President of Chrysler [*founded by 33° Freemason Walter P. Chrysler*], and finally the U.S. Government loan to Chrysler in 1979 resulting in the making of an American hero?

And who was the force in Congress that was ultimately responsible for the passing of the Act creating the **Loan Guarantee Board** that extended the loan to Chrysler? **Iacocca** declares that it was House Speaker, **Thomas "Tip" O'Neill**.

*"Tip O'Neill was our real point man in Congress. . . . As soon as he turned on his lights to help us, the tide started to turn. . . . By the time the vote came, we had a lot of backers in Congress. Still, Tip O'Neill's support was crucial. Just before the vote, he stepped down as Speaker and spoke as the representative from Massachusetts. In an impassioned plea for the loan guarantees . . . Tip used raw emotion to sell his guys in the House. He was one of our leaders in this whole episode. . . . When the vote came in, the House had agreed by a two-to-one margin (271-136) to help Chrysler get back on its feet."* <sup>18</sup> [Emphasis added]

What is the significance of House Speaker **Tip O'Neill** helping **Lee Iacocca** secure the loan? **Tip O'Neill** strongly resisted the proceedings of the **House Select Committee on Assassinations** in 1976-1979, as covered in our previous chapter.

Here we have two Papal Knights, **Iacocca** and **O'Neill**, involved in the assassination of **President Kennedy** through willful acts of suppressing evidence. *The first Knight* was **Lee Iacocca**, a highly placed official in one of Rome's corporate giants, it composing a part of the Jesuits' Military Industrial Complex. (Remember **Nicholas Brady**, the multimillionaire, **Papal Knight of Malta** and personal friend of the Jesuit General's **Francis Spellman**, was one of the original owners of Chrysler.) Ford Motor Company had helped to build **Hitler** and **Stalin's** War Machines during the **Second Thirty Years' War** and therefore had a financial interest in continuing "Spelly's War" in Vietnam. (The guidance unit of the air-to-air missile known as "the Sidewinder" or "AIM-9" (also given to the Soviets!) was built by **Philco-Ford**.)

*The second Knight* was **Tip O'Neill**. Being the Speaker, he was the most powerful man in the House of Representatives for ten years. Handling the nation's business, it was the House that had been responsible for borrowing **600 billion dollars in credit** from the Jesuits' **Federal Reserve Bank** (managed by the Council on Foreign Relations) to finance the **Vietnam War**. The returns for this "investment" would be the fantastic profits generated from the **International Drug Trade**, while further destroying the **Fourteenth Amendment American Empire's** "heretic" and "liberal" population with *debt, drugs, disease, and demoralization*.

Thus, **Iacocca** and **O'Neill**, two kingpins in the Kennedy assassination and cover-up, worked together in obtaining the loan for Chrysler. That loan was credit extended to the American Congress, *created out of nothing*, by the Jesuits' Federal Reserve Bank. The result was the rebuilding of the automaker's entire manufacturing base, exalting Chrysler to one of the Empire's most advanced corporate giants within the Jesuits' Military Industrial Complex. (The author wonders if Chrysler will provide hardware and technology to the army of our coming invaders, the Red Chinese and "the former" Soviet Union?) The victory of Chrysler's recovery was credited to **Lee Iacocca**. But he never would have succeeded had it not been for **Tip O'Neill**. Therefore, what or who could have united these men to accomplish such a feat? Both were devoted Roman Catholics; but more importantly, they were "Roman Knights" loyal to the Pope's American Military Vicar, the Cardinal of St. Patrick's Cathedral in New York. Of **Lee Iacocca's** membership in the Knights of Malta, again we read from the article entitled "*Who are the Knights of Malta?*" written in 1983:

"The SMOM's [*Sovereign Military Order of Malta*] U.S. section has approximately 1,000 members—including 300 "dames" who hail from society's upper crust. Divided into three associations (eastern, southern and western) its roster includes many of the corporate establishment's movers and shakers: **Lee Iacocca** of Chrysler; . . . [**W.**] **Barron Hilton** of the hotel chain [*who allowed the bastard son of a Nazi, Fidel Castro, to use his Hilton Hotel in Havana for the Jesuit-trained dictator's headquarters and who was also a personal friend of SMOM and Mafioso, Frank Sinatra. Hilton's friend, Sinatra, was in turn a bosom friend of Chicago and New York Mafia Dons, Sam Giancana and Carlo Gambino (they being two of Cardinal Spellman's Mafia Commission members), according to Kitty Kelley's His Way: The Unauthorized Autobiography of Frank Sinatra. Nearly twenty years later in 1980, SMOM Frank Sinatra performed at Freemasonic/SMOM U.S. President Ronald Reagan's inaugural ball, as they were both actors in Hollywood—the Jesuit Theater—having been openly founded by the Order's Masonic Jewish Labor Zionists such as Louis B. Mayer (Metro-Goldwyn-Mayer), Jack Warner (Warner Brothers) and Darryl F. Zanuck (Twentieth Century Fox). Reagan, after recovering from his attempted assassination, shot inside the presidential limousine while underneath Secret Service Agent Jerry Parr according to Colonel James "Bo" Gritz in his Called To Serve, went on to be the a faithful servant of Knight of Malta John Cardinal O'Connor and his New York-based SMOM by committing high treason against the American people via formally recognizing the Papal Caesar's nation-state—The Sovereign State of Vatican City—preparing the American Empire for its Concordat with the Pope of Rome] . . . [CFR member] Francis X. Stankard of Chase Manhattan Bank [with a branch bank in Moscow],*

**William E. Simon**, former treasury secretary and energy Tzar of the 1970's and currently a director of **Citicorp** [*and also Secretary of the Treasury and supervisor of the Chrysler Corp. Loan Guarantee board*]. . . **Martin F. Shea**, executive vice-president of **Morgan Bank** . . . [*at which is*] a telex which links SMOM/US to SMOM headquarters in Rome. . . and [CFR] **J. Peter Grace** [*chairman of W.R. Grace & Co., and British Committee of 300 member*], is president of the U.S. SMOM. . . CIA Director **William J. Casey** . . . is a member in good standing of the Knights of Malta. [*Notice that all of the big banks are not in the hands of the Masonic Jewish Labor Zionists but in the hands of Rome's White Gentile-led, Sovereign Military Order of Malta, 'the great men of the earth' (Revelation 18:23)*].” <sup>{2}</sup>

Dear truth-seeker, **Lee Iacocca**, the Knight of Malta, familiar with the Jesuit Order and a personal friend of **Cardinal Spellman**, participated in the Kennedy Assassination. His payback was Congress granting a 1.2 billion dollar loan with the help of Knight of Columbus **Tip O'Neill**, Speaker of the House, and Knight of Malta, **William E. Simon** (*another British Committee of 300 member*), Secretary of the Treasury. For this he will ever be known as the savior of Chrysler Corporation.

May **God the Holy Spirit** help him to repent and seek the **Lord Jesus Christ** while He may be found. Then may he, as our example, tell the nation that we all may repent of our personal and national sins, while seeking the everlasting forgiveness of **God the Father** whose **beloved Son** we have provoked, and the deeply needed *forgiveness of the nations* that we have attacked and destroyed. For in our blind patriotism and ignorance, we Americans, *garrisoned in over one hundred and twenty countries manning seven hundred and twenty-five military bases around the world (like the Roman Legions of old)*, have been used to restore and maintain the usurping **Temporal Power** of the Jesuits' “*infallible*” Pope worldwide, while Washington, D.C., has been under the Satanic spell of Jesuit control *for the last one hundred and fifty years*. That spell included **Francis Cardinal Spellman's** assassination of **President Kennedy**. **Lee Iacocca**, in the words of “**Rebecca the Jewess**,” <sup>{10}</sup>

“**Speak . . . if thou art a man; if thou art a Christian, speak!**

I conjure thee, by the habit which thou dost wear

—by the name thou dost inherit—

—**by the knighthood thou dost vaunt—**

—by the honour of thy mother—

—by the tomb and the bones of thy father—

I conjure thee to say,

**are these things true?”**

**Lee Iacocca**, again, we humbly request an answer to our question,

**“Are these things true?”**



**Knight of Malta Lee A. Iacocca (1924 – Present), 1965** <sup>#721</sup>

**General Manager, Dearborn Division, Ford Motor Company, 1960 -1970**

After the assassination, President Lyndon Johnson the Freemason arranged for all the evidence of multiple gunshots to be removed from Kennedy's limousine. LBJ's old friend, Henry Ford II, made the secret arrangements with a former employee, then Secretary of Defense and CFR member, 33<sup>rd</sup> Degree Freemason Robert Strange McNamara, who in turn contacted his former employee, Lee Iacocca, then General Manager of Ford's Dearborn Division. Iacocca dispatched his head of security, Carl Renas, to drive the bullet-ridden limousine to a dealership in Cincinnati that removed the evidence of more than one assassin ensuring the success of Cardinal Spellman's Warren Commission, Freemason Arlen Specter's "magic single bullet theory" to be its foundation. Lee Iacocca's reward for his obedience in the Kennedy assassination was: the success of his Mustang (made possible by Knight of Malta Henry R. Luce's good press); Pope Paul VI touring New York in a Lincoln (Ford) rather than in a Cadillac (GM); the Presidency of Ford Motor Company in 1970; the Presidency of Chrysler in 1979; and a 1.2 billion dollar loan, saving the late Knight of Malta Nicholas Brady's Chrysler Corporation. Iacocca then converted Chrysler into a major component of the ~~Black Pope's~~ American Military Industrial Complex, further equipping the Empire to fight future Papal Crusades especially against Islam.

*Iacocca: An Autobiography*, Lee Iacocca with William Novak, (New York: Bantam Books, 1984).



**Papal Knight Thomas “Tip” O’Neill behind JFK, 1959** <sup>#722</sup>

Educated by Jesuits at Boston College and later an influential trustee along with Senator Edward Kennedy; a personal friend of its Jesuit President, J. Donald Monan; a close friend of fellow Congressman Jesuit Robert F. Drinan (now at Georgetown University) who introduced the resolution for the impeachment of President Nixon; and a golfing partner of 33<sup>rd</sup> Degree Freemason and Knight of Malta Gerald Ford who suppressed evidence while on the Warren Commission; Irish Catholic Tip O’Neill betrayed his old friend, John F. Kennedy. During the bogus investigation of the House Select Committee on Assassinations (1976-1979), O’Neill did all he could to thwart its conclusion—there was indeed a conspiracy to kill the President. For a job well done, he was made Speaker of the House in 1977. From this exalted seat, nestled between two huge Roman fasces attached to the House-wall behind him, O’Neill controlled the nation’s legislation for ten years during which time he aided his fellow conspirator, Lee Iacocca, in obtaining a Congressional loan to save the Order’s Chrysler Corporation. It is most interesting to note that in his autobiography, he mentions that presidential aides Kenny O’Donnell and Dave Powers heard two shots from the picket fence on the Grassy Knoll, but never once speaks of the House Select Committee on Assassinations or his covert involvement with co-conspirator Texas Congressman Henry Gonzales or CIA-backed G. Robert Blakey who killed the investigation and went on to be employed by Theodore Hesburgh’s Notre Dame University.

Man of the House, Speaker Tip O’Neill with William Novak, (New York: Random House, 1987).

## **Chapter 48**

### **The Jesuits — 1964 – 2007**

***Controlling the Black Pope's "Holy Roman" Fourteenth Amendment  
American Empire From Masons Lyndon B. Johnson to George W. Bush  
Games and Amusements; CIA "Fun and Games;" Project Monarch  
Arming Our Sino-Soviet-Moslem Invaders for Rome's World War III***

*"Wherefore do the wicked live, become old, yea, are mighty in power?  
They spend their days in wealth . . .  
Therefore they say unto God, Depart from us: for we desire not  
the knowledge of thy ways . . .  
Who shall declare his way to his face? And who shall repay him  
[for] what he hath done?"*

*– Job 21:7, 13, 14, 31*

*"And the devil, taking him up into an high mountain, shewed unto  
him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time.  
And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee  
and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me;  
and to whomsoever I will I give it.  
If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine."*

*[If Satan has truly given the Pope his de facto political power to rule every  
nation from Rome, which power the Pope accepts at his coronation, the  
"Vicar of Christ" must then be a willing and conscious devil-worshipper!]*

*– Luke 4:5-7*

*"Now," said the Jesuit, "listen to me a few moments and I will tell you what  
I know. Your president is elected by the conclave of cardinals at Rome, the  
same who elect the pope. Your people nominate the candidates. Our  
confidential agents select from the number, the one whom they believe to  
be the most favorable to the interests of the church. . . . He, of course, is  
always elected." <sup>13</sup> [Emphasis added]*

***"The Jesuit to the American"  
J. Wayne Laurens, 1855  
American Patriot and Historian  
The Crisis: Or, The Enemies of  
America Unmasked***



“. . . and while they amused the public with games [*the majority of American professional sports franchises being owned by Papal Knights*], they spent their own time planning the murder of their defenseless subjects, whose only crime was that they loved God better than the Pope, and that they worshipped Christ and looked to Him alone for salvation, instead of to the Church and the Virgin.” <sup>{2}</sup>

[Emphasis added]

M. F. Cusack, 1896

Converted Nun of Kenmare Convent

*The Black Pope*

“How long shall the Roman Catholic Hierarchy play the people for fools? Shall the government be of the people, for the people, and by the people, or by the pope? **Let’s not let the pope of Rome name our President for us.** Lovers of your country, **beware of Jesuitical intrigues, the political power of Romanism**, and the honeyed words of politicians reaching after the presidency!” <sup>{3}</sup> [Emphasis added]

Jeremiah J. Crowley, 1912

Irish American Ex-Priest

*Romanism: A Menace to the Nation*

“**The power of the Society of Jesus in the Catholic Church is beyond doubt enormous.** It is said, apparently with truth, that the Jesuit General, the “**Black Pope**” as he is called, can make and unmake bishops and even cardinals. He has various agents and representatives within the walls of the Vatican, and he can gain the ear of the Pope whenever he wishes. . . . Again and again the Society has been able to oppose successfully the plans and wishes of Popes. . . . the Society which is perennial at Rome is able to block the efforts of passing Popes [*like Pope John Paul I who sought to prematurely establish diplomatic relations with Israel prior to the end of the Company’s Cold War*]. . . . The Order is to the Church what the Church is to the world. The Order is a kind of parasite sucking the vital power of the Church. . . . It holds the confidence and consciences of so many bishops, cardinals, and prelates; . . . in fine, [*it*] works in so many ways on the functionaries of the Church, that it has become as it were an inner circle in the Church. It has made the Pope more and more like its own autocratic General; and has reduced the bishops more and more to the status of Provincials in the Society who are officials nominated by and controlled by the General, without any inherent authority. An interesting proof of Jesuit prestige and power in this country is the existence, in the shadow of the Capitol, at Washington, of **the Jesuit School for Foreign Service** [*which*

*trained the past CFR/CIA Director, Knight of Malta **George J. Tenet** having overseen the demolition of the World Trade Center in obedience to his master, **Edward Cardinal Egan**], opened a few years ago through the instrumentality of an Irish-American, **Fr. Edmund Walsh, S.J.** At this school of diplomatic service, said to be the largest of its kind in America, young Americans [*to be later recruited into the Order's CFR*] are trained to guide the future fortunes of the Republic. . . . There is no small irony in the situation. **Jesuits by rule are detached from love of country . . . Each and every Jesuit is bound under oath to obey the behests of his General at Rome, who at present happens to be a Pole [Wladimir Ledochowski] and who most probably will never be an American.** It is quite within the power of the General to dictate the principles and theories to be taught by the Jesuits at Washington . . . one cannot forget the words of the Pope, **Clement XIV**, who accused them of '*rising up against the very kings who admitted them into their countries.*'" <sup>{4}</sup> [Emphasis added]*

**E. Boyd Barrett, 1927**  
**Irish American Ex-Jesuit**  
*The Jesuit Enigma*

"**They are a public plague, and the plague of the world . . .** From the Jesuit colleges there never is sent a pupil obedient to his father, devoted to his country, loyal to his prince." <sup>{5}</sup> "Every species of vice finds its patronage in them. There is no perjury, nor sacrilege, nor parricide, nor incest, nor rapine, nor fraud, **nor treason** which cannot be masked as meritorious beneath the mantle of their dispensation." <sup>{6}</sup> [Emphasis added]

**Paolo Sarpi, 1620**  
**Italian Roman Catholic Historian**  
**of the Jesuits' evil Council of Trent**  
**Assassination Attempted by the Jesuits**

"WASHINGTON — Glass cases along a wall on the top floor of [*Jesuit*] Georgetown University's Lauinger Library contain a surprisingly timely and provocative exhibit: 'Georgetown in the Sixties: from **Pat Buchanan** to the SDS [*Students for a Democratic Society*].' . . . Photos and clips show presidents **Lyndon Baines Johnson**, **Bill Clinton** [*and*] a two-time presidential candidate [*an Irish Roman Catholic, Jesuit-trained Knight of Malta, noted author of Right From the Beginning, A Republic, Not an Empire and The Death of the West; also a founding member of NBC's Jesuit-controlled "The McLaughlin Group" and CNN's "The Capital Gang" and "Crossfire"] **Pat Buchanan** . . . Apart from the university*

president of that period, the late **Jesuit Fr. Edward Bunn**, only one priest is mentioned twice in the exhibit, **Jesuit Fr. Richard McSorley** [*accomplice in the Order's JFK assassination and confessor of Jackie Kennedy*], now 80 and head of the one-man Center for Peace Studies at Georgetown . . . [*Freemason and CFR member*] **Johnson** is mentioned for saying the only reason he left Georgetown Law School was because **Lady Bird** was in Texas . . .

[*High-level Freemason and CFR member*] **Bill Clinton** [*one of his Georgetown classmates later becoming the world famous Roman Catholic actor and activist Tommy Lee Jones who played Clay L. Shaw in Oliver Stone's JFK, Director's Cut and played the part of a top secret intelligence officer—a modern super secret Jesuit above the law—using high-tech weapons against “aliens” (whose existence is notoriously espoused by Jesuits of the Vatican Observatory) in Men In Black*] was one of the students who helped clean up after the Washington [*Civil Rights*] riots [*of 1968*]*—but the exhibit deals more with his class presidencies . . .* In 1969, **McSorley** took a sabbatical to visit peace groups throughout the world. His first stop was England. Fellowship of Reconciliation members and Quakers directed him to a big antiwar demonstration at the U.S. Embassy. **Bill Clinton was there and recognized McSorley . . .** After the demonstration, **Clinton** asked the Jesuit whether he would lead the Catholic prayers the next day at an interfaith prayer meeting he'd helped organize in a nearby Anglican church. **McSorley** offered the prayer of [*occultist*] St. Francis; **Clinton** joined in and they marched back to the embassy and left white crosses to symbolize the deaths of Americans. **McSorley** then went to France and Scandinavia to meet peace people. Stepping off the train right behind him in Oslo, Norway, was **Bill Clinton . . .** That evening, before **McSorley** boarded his train for an overnight trip south, he and **Clinton** dined together. 'He was just like most of the students,' said **McSorley**. . . .

On July 6, [1995] **Clinton** was back at Georgetown. In a lengthy talk, he laid out his stance as a candidate for reelection and reaffirmed the [*Fabian Socialist*] values of activism in the '60s and '70s.” <sup>{2}</sup> [Emphasis added]

**Arthur Jones, 1995**  
**American Journalist**  
*National Catholic Reporter*

“ . . . the Catholic Vatican's Intelligence arm of Jesuits were working closely with U.S. Intelligence to usher in the New World Order . . . those who were actively laying the groundwork for implementing the New World Order through mind conditioning of the masses made no distinction between the

Democratic and Republican Parties. Their aspirations were international in proportion, not American. Members were often drawn from, among other elitist groups, the **Council on Foreign Relations**. Like **George [H. W.] Bush**, **Bill Clinton** was an active member of the **CFR**, **Bilderbergers** [*founded and organized in 1954 by a former Nazi SS officer and Knight of Malta*, **Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands in conjunction with a Jesuit priest and 33<sup>rd</sup> Degree Freemason, Joseph Rettinger**], and **Tri-Lateral Commission**. Based on numerous conversations I overheard, **Clinton** was being groomed and prepared to fill the role of the President under the guise of Democrat in the event that the American people became discouraged with Republican leaders . . . Governor of Arkansas **Bill Clinton** . . . [*using*] standard Jesuit hand signals and cryptic language, triggered/switched me and accessed a previously programmed message . . . Torture to the point just before death, such as with Death's Door programming, was jointly used by **the Catholic Jesuits and the CIA in Project Monarch** [*bringing to power the Order's Universal Monarch of the World*]." <sup>{8}</sup> [Emphasis added]

**Cathy O'Brien, 1995**  
**Ex-CIA Presidential Prostitute**  
*Trance: Formation of America*

**"I did not have sexual relations with that woman, Miss [Monica] Lewinsky!"** <sup>{2}</sup> [Emphasis added]

**William "Bill" Clinton, 1998**  
**Freemason and Jesuit Coadjutor**  
**42<sup>nd</sup> President of the United States**  
*CBS, National Television Interview*

" 'Indeed, father! Is that not a lie, and perjury to boot?' 'No,' said the father; '[Jesuits] **Sanchez** and **Filiutius** prove that it is not; for, says the latter, "**it is the intention that determines the quality of the action.**" And he suggests a still surer method for avoiding falsehood, which is this: After saying aloud, "*I swear that I have not done that,*" to add, in a low voice, "*to-day;*" or after saying aloud, "*I swear,*" to interpose in a whisper, "*that I say,*" and then continue aloud, "*that I have not done that.*" This you perceive, is telling the truth.' " <sup>{10}</sup> [Emphasis added]

**Blaise Pascal, 1656**  
**French Roman Catholic Jansenist**  
**Greatest Enemy of the Jesuits to Date**  
*The Provincial Letters*

“Today we have seen the absurd farce of the liberal **Jesuit Father Drinan** [*who introduced the House Resolution for the impeachment of President Richard Nixon*] being driven from Congress because the most overtly Pope of our time [**John Paul II**] feels Drinan’s position in Congress is ‘too political!’ As sinister organizations like the Spanish and Latin America-based **Opus Dei** gain in power [*now aiding and abetting the Order’s Roman Catholic, Latin American, alien invasion of the US*], their rise abetted by rightwing elements in the Jesuit Order itself, it will be the moderates in the Church structure and not just the extreme [*communist*] ‘theology of liberation’ minority who will find themselves more and more on the out. To understand the rise of rightwing Catholic power worldwide it is necessary to clearly identify the heart of the beast. That is an organization called the **Sovereign Military Order of Malta** (SMOM), a Vatican order which has been in existence for almost a thousand years. . . .

Today the resurgence of SMOM is best symbolized by the fact that SMOM member **William Casey** is the current head of the CIA. Casey will be one of the figures who will give the ‘Donovan Award’ trophy of the OSS ‘old boys’ to [*JFK assassin*] **John McCone**, devout Catholic, SMOM member and former head of the CIA. It was McCone, in his position as one of the heads of ITT, who played a leading role in coordinating the destabilization of the Allende government [*in Chile*]. Other leading members of American SMOM are **William** and **James Buckley**. With the replacement of rightwing Catholic [*SMOM*] **Richard Allen** by the equally rightwing Catholic [*SMOM*] **William [P.] Clark** as President Reagan’s National Security Council Advisor, the influence of SMOM has increased. . . . With his new post Clark has brought along [*SMOM*] **William F. Buckley** as one of his political consultants. Another devout Catholic [*SMOM and JFK assassin*] **General Vernon Walters**, the brains behind the 1964 coup against the Goulart government in Brazil and one of the dirtiest figures in the American intelligence community, has become the key man for both **Alexander Haig** and **William Clark** in dealing with Central America. Given the fact that Alexander Haig (whose brother [**Francis R. Haig**] is a Jesuit priest) himself has the closest ties to the rightwing Catholic-run [*Jesuit*] Georgetown Center for Strategic and International Studies (CSIS), it is safe to say that Reagan will be under total control of this group should they decide to go ‘eyeball to eyeball’ with the Soviet Union in some new ‘Cuban missile crisis’ situation [*or the ending of the Cold War*].” <sup>{11}</sup>  
[Emphasis added]

Kevin Koogan, 1982  
American Roman Catholic Journalist  
“*The Men Behind the  
New Counter-Reformation*”

“We see Rome’s satanic, **Nazi Fourth Reich** using United States troops to murder the leaders and peoples of nations so that the **Roman Antichrist** can place his own like-minded leaders in the place of those he ordered to be assassinated or murdered [*as in the assassination of Knight of Columbus John F. Kennedy and thus replacing him with high Freemason Lyndon B. Johnson*]. These actions are causing all the nations of the world to hate the people of the United States of America. We who were once the most loved nation are now the most hated. The **Antichrist in Rome** doesn’t allow his world-controlled media to fully tell the truth about what the people of other nations think about us or why they think this way. They hate us because of what the **Antichrist**, through the high-ranking **Roman Nazi agents**, which have infiltrated our government, is doing to them [*Serbian, Moslems, etc.*]. When these nations respond to the Roman Nazi agents’ unholy aggression which is coming from the U.S. through the orders of the **Antichrist in Rome**, the Pope’s [*CFR-controlled*] media and his puppets lead us to believe we should go to war against them. Would you not hate someone who’s bombing you, your family and your friends for no apparent reason? . . .

**The BATF, FBI, DEA, the Federal Bureau Task Force, CIA, CFR, Knights of Malta, all these are branches of the Vatican.** The Vatican doesn’t care at all if you come against a president, a king, a queen, or one of these branches, because they’re nothing but **smokescreens for the Pope**. . . .

**President [George W.] Bush is the most Catholic president we’ve ever had. He is surrounded with cardinals. From the beginning of his presidency, George Bush has been promoting the Vatican-Nazi Jesuit agenda.** Two months into his presidency, surrounded by cardinals of Rome, the President dedicated a cultural center in Washington, D.C., to the greatest enemy this Republic has ever had, **the Pope of Rome**. Bush declared that he is going to enforce the words and teachings of the Pope here in America. [*According to Patricia Zapoa of the Catholic News Service, March 24, 2001*] President Bush said,

**‘The best way to honor Pope John Paul II, truly one of the greatest men, is to take his teachings seriously, to listen to his words and put his words and his teachings into action here in America [*which “teachings” include inquisitional torture by the FBI and the Department of Homeland Security following the Jesuit-authored US Patriot Acts*].’ ”** {12}  
[Emphasis added]

**Tony Alamo, April-June, 2003**  
**Evangelical American Pastor**  
**Alamo Christian Ministries**  
**World Newsletter**  
[www.alamoministries.com](http://www.alamoministries.com)

“The Bolsheviks were originally saved from collapse by **Herbert Hoover** (CFR) [*the Secretary of Commerce under high-level Freemason President Warren G. Harding*] who raised money to buy food which was appropriated by Lenin and his gangsters. . . . After the Bolshevik Revolution, **Standard [Oil] of New Jersey** bought 50 percent of the Nobel’s huge Caucasus oil fields even though the property had theoretically been nationalized [*the Knights of Malta consolidating all oil production into the Morgan/Rockefeller banking cartels under their control*]. . . . In 1927, **Standard Oil of New York** built a refinery in Russia, thereby helping the Bolsheviks put their economy back on its feet. . . . In order to rescue the Bolsheviks, who were supposedly an archenemy [*the Jesuit Order’s FBI conducting mass-roundups in 1919 under the guise of the “Red Scare,” furthering American fascism*], the **Chase National Bank** was instrumental in establishing the [*SMOM-led*] **American-Russian Chamber of Commerce** in 1922. . . . The Rockefeller’s Chase National Bank also was involved in selling Bolshevik bonds in the United States in 1928. . . .

Professor [**Antony**] **Sutton** proves conclusively in his three-volume history of Soviet technological development that the Soviet Union was almost literally manufactured by the U.S.A. Sutton quotes a report by [*CFR member, Lend-Lease Chairman, Skull and Bonesman, and Knight of Malta*] **Averell Harriman** to the State Department in June, 1944 as stating:

‘**Stalin** paid tribute to the assistance rendered by the United States to Soviet industry before and during the war. **He said that about two-thirds of all the large industrial enterprise in the Soviet Union had been built with United States help or technical assistance.**’ . . .

Sutton shows that there is hardly a segment of the Soviet economy which is not a result of the transference of Western, particularly American, technology. This cannot be wholly the result of accident. For fifty years the Federal Reserve-CFR-Rockefeller Insider crowd has advocated and carried out policies aimed at increasing the power of their satellite, the Soviet Union. Meanwhile, America spends **\$75 billion** a year on defense to protect itself from the enemy *the Insiders* are building up. . . . Under the Nixon Administration which, contrary to campaign promises, had multiplied trade with the Reds tenfold, American concerns are building the world’s largest truck factory [*the Kama River Truck Factory*] for the [*Soviet*] Communists.” <sup>{13}</sup> [Emphasis added]

Gary Allen, 1971  
American Author, John Birch Society  
Jesuit Temporal Coadjutor  
*None Dare Call It Conspiracy*

“Tragically, since the day in 1993 when [*CFR/Jesuit Temporal Coadjutors*] **Bill Clinton** and **Al Gore** were sworn in, hands on the Bible, as president and vice president, respectively, it has become far more likely that this scene will become a familiar one to Americans. The danger to all Americans, but especially to those in uniform, of facing an attack by a well-armed **Chinese People’s Liberation Army (PLA)** will be the haunting legacy of the **Clinton-Gore** administration well into this new century. . . . We have detailed our assaults on our national security—nuclear espionage, failure to stop Chinese arms sales to [*Islamic*] terrorist nations, and technological assistance to China’s military, especially its missile programs. All of these increase the dangers to the American homeland, our friends and allies abroad, and our men and women in uniform. . . . Consider just some of the many [*allegedly “post Cold War,” i.e., “no more Communist Threat”*] Russian military transfers to Communist China during **Vice President Gore’s** stewardship of the **U.S.-Russian** relationship:

- destroyers equipped with nuclear missiles
- SU-27 fighter aircraft and SU-30 attack aircraft
- kilo-class submarines and advanced nuclear submarine technology
- long-range cruise missile technology
- military helicopters and transports
- a wide range of air-to-air, ground-to-air, and anti-radar missiles
- space technology with direct military applications, including long-range ballistic missiles, multiple warheads, and anti-satellite technology

All of these weapons can be used against the United States military, as well as our allies. . . . Crucially, the United States never objected to Russian arms sales to Communist China. This would have been Gore’s job: to lead the diplomatic effort to stop these arms sales. He didn’t do it. The result is a **Russian-Chinese** ‘strategic partnership’ (the two nations have even agreed to conduct joint combat training) aimed at the United States. . . . As America’s military might was declining, **Bill Clinton** and **Al Gore** were helping to strengthen a hostile **PRC**.” <sup>{14}</sup> [Emphasis added]

**Edward Timperlake and  
William C. Triplett II, 1998  
American Marine Corps Fighter Pilot  
Chief Republican Counsel: Senate  
Foreign Relations Committee  
Year of the Rat: How Bill Clinton and  
Al Gore Compromised U.S. Security  
For Chinese Cash**



“**The great threat of the twenty-first century**—to the United States and the world—is the nuclear-armed communist dictatorship in the **People’s Republic of China**. Its rulers oppress 1.3 billion people under ‘socialism with Chinese characteristics.’ . . . The result of [*the pro-Red Chinese Clinton-Gore Administration*] has been that the United States has actually helped create a new superpower threat to world peace and stability in the decades to come. . . . One confidential Chinese government report leaked to the Hong Kong press in 1997 predicted a future war between China and the United States over Taiwan:

‘With the return of [*international banking havens*] **Hong Kong and Macao** to Chinese rule, the Taiwan issue will inevitably become China’s major event around **2010**. If the United States uses force to meddle in China’s sovereignty and internal affairs, China will certainly fight a war against aggression, thus leading to a limited **Sino-U.S.** war. . . .’ . . .

How could China’s presence in Panama pose a threat [*via **Hutchinson Whampoa** owned by billionaire, **Li Ka-Shin**, now in control of the locks*]? The [*U.S. Army*] report’s final declassified passage was short and succinct: ‘Hutchinson’s containerized shipping facilities in the **Panama Canal**, as well as the **Bahamas**, could provide a conduit for illegal shipments of technology or prohibited items from the West to the PRC, or facilitate the movement of arms and other prohibited items into the Americas [*preparing for America’s coming Sino-Soviet-Moslem-Latino military invasion*].’ . . .

The Cox Committee report on the **Wen Ho Lee** case is considered the worst-case scenario. But it is also the most credible because it is relatively untainted by the spin from the White House. It said that China ‘has stolen classified information on all of the United States’ most advanced thermonuclear warheads.’ . . .

The People’s Republic of China is the most serious national security threat the United States faces at present and will remain so into the foreseeable future. This grave strategic threat includes the disruption of vital U.S. interests in the Pacific region and even the possibility of a nuclear war that could cost millions of American lives [*due to controlled detonations of pre-placed nuclear devices in both countries by ~~the Black Pope’s~~ International Intelligence Community rather than by mutual airborne nuclear detonations which possibility the author denies*].” <sup>{15}</sup> [Emphasis added]

**Bill Gertz, 2000**  
**American Author and Reporter**  
*The China Threat: How the People’s*  
*Republic Targets America*

**“You talk as if you have nothing to do with this. This is all your doing. This infection you call ‘freedom,’ without meaning, without purpose. You have given my country to gangsters and prostitutes. You have taken everything from us. There is nothing left.”** <sup>(16)</sup> [Emphasis added]

**“Russian Terrorist, 1990s”  
Spoken to the “American President”  
American Actor Harrison Ford  
*Air Force One***

**“AS A FORMER COLONEL** in the GRU—the military counterpart of the **KGB** (now called the **SVR**)—I am the GRU’s highest ranking Soviet defector to the United States. . . . And if I have one message for my adopted country, it is this: **the Cold War is not over**; the new cold war is between the Russian mafia [*controlled by the Vatican (via her Russian Priory of the **Knights of Malta** now resident in Moscow and St. Petersburg ruling Russian Intelligence—FSB/SVR/GRU) and, like the Bolshevik Revolution, OPENLY led by the Pope’s Masonic Court Jews—Ludwig Feinberg, Vadim Rabinovich, etc.*] and the United States; and in this new cold war, the Russian mafia has every tool, every weapon, every intelligence asset at its disposal that the old Soviet Union had. **America is facing a nation led by gangsters—gangsters who have nuclear weapons. And some of those weapons are actually on American soil . . .**

Today, American business is the chief target of the **GRU**, the **SVR**, and the entire network of Russian spies. Their paymaster is the Russian mafia [*exactly as the SVR’s counterpart, the CIA, is financed by the Sicilian-led American Mafia’s international drug trade as admitted by **Knight of Malta** and **DCI William J. Casey***]. . . . If this isn’t bad enough, Russia and China have signed agreements to share economic and military intelligence. . . . Mayors of the largest cities around the United States are welcoming Russian mobsters to their communities. They do not want to hear from the FBI that their new local moguls are criminals in disguise. [*Italian-American Roman Catholic, 911 co-conspirator and **Knight of Malta** **Mayor Rudolph Guilliani** of New York, for instance, enthusiastically welcomes Russian investment in his city, but his administration is apparently unconcerned about its source [in obedience to the Archbishop of New York, **Knight of Malta Edward Cardinal Egan**]*. . . . Another problem for the United States is **Iran** [*armed by the CIA during the 1980s via the Reagan/Bush Iran-Contra Scandal*]. . . . Iran, it is believed, already has chemical and biological weapons. With Russia’s help, Iran will have nuclear weapons as well [*so that when America experiences her coming NSA/CIA/DIA-triggered nuclear detonations, Iran can be blamed*]. . . .

Russia helped **North Korea** develop its Nodong missiles, which can attack the entire [*Bible-reading*] South Korean peninsula. Russia has also given North Korea the technology to develop its own nuclear weapons. . . .

Though most Americans don't realize it, America is already penetrated by Russian military intelligence to the extent that **arms caches** lie in wait for use by Russian special forces—or *Spetznatz*. As a GRU officer, my main mission was to prepare for war. I can tell you that for the Soviet Union and for the Russian Federation, America was and is the main expected wartime adversary. Other countries count only as a means to attack America. . . . ***Spetznatz troops are currently training inside the United States***. They regularly enter the country as foreign tourists, using fake passports and their knowledge of foreign languages to pass as Germans or Eastern Europeans. They are the best-supplied troops in the Russian military. One of the GRU's major tasks is to find drop sites for their supplies of clothes, cash, and special equipment—including even small nuclear devices, the so-called 'suitcase bombs.' . . . In wartime, many GRU officers—all of whom are men—would go undercover to directly aid the *Spetznatz* forces. These wartime plans were fully in place during the Caribbean Crisis—or the **Cuban Missile Crisis**, as Americans refer to it—and remain fully in place today. In 1962, *Spetznatz* forces were deployed all over the free world, ready to commit acts of sabotage [*financed by New York banks*]. . . .

Most of the Arab terrorist groups were also trained by *Spetznatz*. Even the terrorist group [*aided by the high command of the ~~Black Pope's~~ FBI and CIA*] that sponsored the [1993] World Trade Center bombing had been trained by people who themselves had been trained by the GRU.” <sup>{17}</sup>  
[Emphasis added]

**Stanislav Lunev, 1998**  
**Soviet Defector; Colonel, GRU**  
*Through the Eyes of the Enemy*

“[**Knight of Malta George H. W.**] **Bush** and [**CFR/Secretary of State James**] **Baker** were among the architects of a series of secret policies that committed American taxpayer dollars to assisting [**Freemason**] **Saddam** [**Hussein**] and allowed the reckless export of U.S. technology to some of the Iraqi dictator's most cherished and lethal weapons projects.” <sup>{18}</sup>  
[Emphasis added]

**Alan Friedman, 1993**  
**Jewish American Journalist**  
*Spider's Web: The Secret History*  
*Of How the White House*  
*Illegally Armed Iraq*

Every President from **Johnson** to **Clinton**, and now **Bush**, has been the abject tool of the Order fulfilling “Jesuitical Politics”—treasonous, internationalist and plotting to make **the Company’s** “*infallible*” Pope, “the Universal Monarch of the World.” **Satan’s Theocratic Kingdom**, offered to **the Lord Jesus Christ**, has been given to the Jesuit Superior General who rules the Pope’s Vatican with its American Hierarchy directing the American Empire’s socialist-communist, corporate-fascist “democratic processes”—in their entirety! This occult, diabolic and monopolistic political control was clearly described in 1933 by **Lady Queenborough** who wrote:

“The game of politics is the pursuit of power. In all democracies, there are two separate organizations playing the political game. The open and *visible* one, the members of which hold office as members of a government, and the *invisible* one composed of individuals who control this visible organization and in whom is vested the real power, the essence of which is *finance*, controlling the publicity which makes or unmakes its tools. This financial power may be used to promote truth or fallacies, good or evil, national prosperity or national ruin. . . . the strength of a democracy thus lies at the mercy of invisible leaders who, being nationally irresponsible, cannot be called to account for the consequences of the acts of the governments they control [*a perfect description of the Pope’s CFR*].

This at the same time constitutes the inherent weakness of any form of government, the apotheosis of which is the control of both parties in the state, right and left, radical and conservative, by the same forces. Then, only the puppets change while the rule of the individuals controlling the machine continues unhindered. Voters who wonder why their efforts have failed, wonder in vain. As the dupes of a controlled publicity their privilege of the vote is a farce [*see Votescam, Collier and Collier, (1992)*]. If all factions in a state can be controlled from one source [*the CFR*], why should International Control [*from Rome*] be impracticable?” <sup>{19}</sup>

From the reversal of **President Kennedy’s** policy to end the Vietnam War (1963), to the war in Yugoslavia (1998), and now the Crusade in Central Asia against Islam (2001-Present), the Jesuits have maintained control over the Executive, Legislative and Judicial branches of the Empire’s government. The murder of “heretics” continues abroad, from the “infidel” Buddhists in the Far East to the “heretic” Orthodox Serbians in the Balkans. The Jesuits, in control of both **George H. W. Bush** (along with the American military) and **Saddam Hussein**, through 33° *Freemasonry*, “extirpated” the “infidel” Shiite Moslems of Iraq while initiating the unification of Europe’s military, *largely Roman Catholic*, during **Operation Desert Storm**. An anonymous source suggests why the Islamic people of Iraq have been mass-murdered by the Military Industrial Complex of the Order’s “**Holy Roman**” **Fourteenth Amendment American Empire** for the last twenty-eight years:

“At the request of **Pope Pius XI** in 1931, and as directed by **Jesuit General Ledochowski**, the Jesuits of the New England Province, headquartered in Boston, opened a new high school in 1932 by the name of **Baghdad College**, located in Baghdad, Iraq, and staffed by the Jesuit Fathers, Scholastics, and Brothers from four US Provinces. Over the years Baghdad College flourished on what became a beautiful date-palm-covered property, was attended by both Catholic and Islamic students, and developed a reputation as one of the finest schools in Iraq. The Jesuits in Iraq operated under a government restriction that they engage in no proselytizing of their Islamic students, although they were free to service Catholic communities in the country. Some years later, in 1956, the Jesuits opened **Al-Hikma University**, with curricula in business and engineering. Al-Hikma was also located in the Baghdad area, several miles from Baghdad College.

*[Remembering that the Universities of the Military Company of the Society of Jesus are in fact military fortresses through which the Jesuits carry out their military quest in subordinating all nations to the absolute Temporal Power of the Papal Caesar in Rome, we read further that:]*

The political events in Iraq from 1932 to 1979 included:

1932 – Independence, League of Nations Mandate.

**Faisal I** becomes King of independent Iraq.

Jesuits open **Baghdad College** (high school) in Iraq.

1933 – King Faisal I dies. **Faisal II** becomes King of Iraq.

1956 – Jesuits open **Al-Hikma University** in Baghdad.

1958 – **Hashemite** dynasty overthrown (as had been done by the Order’s

**Wahhabi al-Saud** tribe to the Arabian **Hashemite** dynasty in 1926),

**King Faisal II** and **Prime Minister Nuri Said** are killed;

**Karim Kassem** seizes power; Republic proclaimed.

1963 – President Karim Kassem overthrown and killed.

1966 – **President Muhammed Aref** killed in a helicopter crash.

1968 – November. **Al-Hikma Jesuits expelled from Iraq;**

allowed five days to leave the country.

1969 – **All Jesuits expelled from Iraq** (including **Fr. Joseph MacDonnell**).

1979 – **Saddam Hussein** becomes President of Iraq;

*payback time* for the Moslem People of Iraq [1979-Present]

I wonder if the above **expulsion of the Jesuits** entitled Iraq [*ravaged by more than two decades of war, depravation and Jesuit tyranny administered by the Black Pope’s Masonic Hussein Dynasty*] to the mass-destruction and horrendous massacres connected with the various wars and bombings—the Iran-Iraq War; the Gulf war, etc. [*and now invaded during the Order’s anti-American, Anglo-American-led, bogus “War on Islamic Terrorism”*].” <sup>{20}</sup>

Dear truth-seeker, could it be that **Saddam Hussein**, the resultant Moslem military dictator of Iraq for twenty-five years, who used chemical weapons not only on Iran *but on his own Iraqi people*, was put in power by the Jesuit Order? Is it not extremely telling that Saddam Hussein was never eliminated by an easily ordered “Special Operation” of the Jesuits’ American Military Intelligence during the Gulf War, as he had been a brother Shriner Freemason and business partner with the Order’s CFR member, Mafia associate and former CIA Director, **President George H. W. Bush**? (See **Pete Brewton’s** *The Mafia, CIA and George Bush*, (1992).) Clearly, **the Black Pope’s** wars upon Iraq for the last twenty-eight years have been waged against the Moslem peoples of Iraq, *not the Jesuit-controlled government of Iraq (as Saddam was secretly removed and his “stand-in double” was openly hung)!*

Meanwhile, we American people have been brainwashed into embracing the addiction of games and amusements, while our intelligence communities are pursuing “fun and games” against false enemies, intrigues and assassinations, in restoring and maintaining the **Temporal Power** of the Pope around the world. The revived Greco-Roman Olympic games fulfill a major goal of the Jesuit Order—the bringing of the world’s people together glorifying the physical abilities of Man! One day it will be an international union around one **Satanic Man**—the “risen” **Papal Caesar** having razed the Vatican and ruling the world under a new name, possibly “SET.” The American people are not only addicted to the Olympic games but we are consumed with the vanities of professional sports, all of which should be abolished!. This is precisely what the Jesuits said they would do in their blueprint for world government, *The Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion*. Protocol number 13 declares:

“In order that the masses themselves may not guess what [*our fruitless agitations*] are about, we further distract them with **amusements, games, pastimes, passions, people’s palaces** . . . Soon we shall begin through the press to propose competitions in art, in sport of all kinds: these interests will finally distract their minds . . .” <sup>{21}</sup> [Emphasis added]

Dear truth-seeker, it is a matter of fact these games and amusements are not controlled by a *Jewish conspiracy*, as the authors of *The Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion* would have us believe, but by a *Gentile conspiracy*. How do we know this? **Jesus the Messiah** declared to his Old Testament, Hebrew/Jewish disciples:

*“And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies,  
then know that the desolation thereof is nigh . . .  
And they shall fall by the edge of the sword,  
and shall be led away captive into all nations:  
and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles,  
until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.”*

– Luke 21:20, 24

Thus, the biblical explanation of the present plight of the physical descendants of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob is clear. The destruction of **Jerusalem**, along with its **Second Temple** by the Roman legions of **General Titus** (the fifth “**king**” or Roman Caesar of *Revelation 17:10*), occurred in 70 A.D. *Due to Israel’s breaking of the conditional Mosaic Covenant, which includes the rejection of “That Prophet” (Deuteronomy 18:18) Jesus the Messiah, National Israel*, composed of the Hebrew/Jewish Race, has been “*the tail*” of all nations (*Deuteronomy 28:13*), scattered and persecuted by ruling and rich Gentiles throughout the world, as foretold by *Moses the Prophet*. Somberly moved by the **Holy Spirit of God** Moses wrote:

*“The LORD shall cause thee to be smitten before thine enemies:  
thou shalt go out one way against them, . . .  
and shalt be removed into all the kingdoms of the earth . . .  
And thou shalt become an astonishment, a proverb, and a byword,  
among all nations whither the LORD shall lead thee . . .*

*The stranger that is within thee shall get up above thee very high;  
and thou shalt come down very low.  
He shall lend to thee, and thou shalt not lend to him:  
he shall be the head, thou shalt be the tail . . .  
And the LORD shall scatter thee among all people,  
from the one end of the earth even unto the other;  
and there thou shalt serve other gods,  
which neither thou nor thy fathers have known,  
even wood and stone.*

*And among these nations shalt thou find no ease,  
neither shall the sole of thy foot have rest:  
but the LORD shall give thee there a trembling heart,  
and failing of eyes, and sorrow of mind:  
And thy life shall hang in doubt before thee;  
and thou shalt fear day and night,  
and shalt have none assurance of thy life:*

*In the morning thou shalt say,  
Would God it were even!  
and at even thou shalt say,  
Would God it were morning!  
for the fear of thine heart wherewith thou shalt fear,  
and for the sight of thine eyes which thou shalt see.*

– Deuteronomy 28:25, 37  
– Deuteronomy 28:43, 44  
– Deuteronomy 28:64-67

During this time of dispersion **Jerusalem** has been under *Gentile* dominion. And even though **the Holy City** is presently governed by Masonic Jewish Labor Zionists, they willingly rule—*by permission only*—on behalf of evil White Gentiles now governing New York, London and Rome—**the Black Pope** with his “*infallible*” **White Pope** backed by his blueblood, “Illuminati bloodlines” within the militaristic Knights of Malta and hundreds of “commoner” Masonic secret societies! Therefore, we are living under the preeminence of a **White Gentile Jesuit Conspiracy** centered in **Rome** with its tentacles directing **Britain** and **America** and thus all nations of the world, including **China**, **Russia** and all **Moslem Nations**. It employs notorious **Masonic Jews** (and Gentiles) as their agents. This furthers the deception of an “**International Jewish Conspiracy**” oppressing the nations. Using this lie, **Satan**, with his **White Gentile Jesuit General** in control of all major secret societies, is creating global, anti-Jewish fury once again! This fury will one day culminate in the last mad attempt of the world’s *Gentile Nations* to invade Israel, “*the holy land*” (***Zechariah 2:12***), and attempt the destruction of the physical descendants of Jacob—“*the holy people*” (***Daniel 12:7***) or “*the holy seed*” (***Isaiah 6:13***)—in the plains of Megiddo, called “**Armageddon**” (***Revelation 14:14-20; 16:16; 19:11-21***).

A few examples of this **White Gentile Jesuit Conspiracy** will suffice, as the players are always members of the same secret societies. **Walt Disney**, the founder of “Disneyland” and “Disney World,” was a 33<sup>rd</sup> Degree Freemason. The **Irish Leo J. O’Donovan**, Professed Jesuit of the Fourth Vow, past president of Georgetown University and a bosom friend of **President Clinton**, was on the seventeen-member board of directors of the Walt Disney Company from 1996 to 1998. The racial Jew and Roman Catholic Knight of Malta, **Bowie Kuhn**, was the Commissioner of Baseball. Knight of Malta **Frank Capra** was Hollywood’s greatest director and censor of World War II, and the land upon which Yankee Stadium sits was, and still is, owned by the **Knights of Columbus**. Of the Knights of Columbus we read:

“The Knights of Columbus is a fraternal organization of Catholic men with a membership of nearly 1.2 million [*over 1 million junior-Jesuit crusading executioners for the Pope!!!*] . . . the Knights bought for \$6.5 million the land on which **Yankee Stadium** in New York stands . . . Thus when in October 1965, Pope Paul [**Paul VI**] went to New York City to visit the United Nations and later at a pontifical mass in Yankee Stadium, His Holiness in effect was on home ground.” <sup>{22}</sup> [Emphasis added]

After the death of **Spellman’s President Johnson**, **Richard Nixon** became Commander-in-Chief. **Nixon**, the old friend of **Spellman** and fellow “Cold Warrior,” extended the War in Vietnam to the bombing of Cambodia *at the advice of a Jesuit*, **Dan Lyons**, who personally consulted **General Abrams**, the Commander of U.S. Forces in Vietnam! **Nixon** continued to promote the Jesuit agenda as outlined in *The Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion*, as his speechwriter was another Jesuit!



“One of Nixon’s main speech writers during three whole years was a Jesuit father, the **Rev. John McLaughlin**, who wrote the Nixon speeches at a salary of \$32,000 a year [*and presently heads the publicly aired “The McLaughlin Group,” formerly televised by an atheist CFR member, Ted Turner, through his media monopoly, Cable News Network (CNN).*” {23} [Emphasis added]

(Dear truth-seeker, do you see how **the Black Pope**, in controlling his **Fourteenth Amendment American Empire** through the Cardinal’s **Council on Foreign Relations** and implementing *The Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion*, fulfills his evil **Council of Trent** through his Black-robed Militia, **the Company of Jesus**?)

The progress of the **Great Jesuit Conspiracy** controlling American Presidents from **Lyndon Johnson** to **George W. Bush** is clearly described in two great works. The first is **Colonel James “Bo” Gritz’s** *Called to Serve: Profiles in Conspiracy from John F. Kennedy to George Bush*, from which we read:

“This is a definite account of a nation betrayed. A spider web of ‘patriots for profit,’ operating from the highest positions of special trust and confidence, have successfully circumvented our constitutional system in pursuit of a **New World Order**. They have infused America with drugs [via the CFR’s CIA/Mafia alliance] in order to fund covert operations while sealing the fate of our servicemen left in Communist prisons . . . At the very least this book represents a factual, true-life adventure that will take you on a riveting journey from the White House, down a heroin highway, to Burma’s Golden Triangle where you will meet **General Khun Sa**—undisputed drug overlord. You will infiltrate the jungles of Communist Asia to rescue U.S. POWs, and in turn be pursued. You’ll be taken behind the veil of U.S. covert operations to view deceit and betrayal. At best, this will produce a crack in the facade of 20<sup>th</sup> century American government, through which concerned citizens can view the looming peril and act in time to reverse our course while God gives us time.” {24} [Emphasis added]

(Dear truth-seeker, we must never forget that the Mormon, **James “Bo” Gritz**, Army Colonel and Commander of the Green Berets—though he appears to have remained a CIA operative and thus in the employ of **the Company’s** American Intelligence Community—was the most decorated soldier of the Vatican’s War in Vietnam.)

The second is **Mark Phillips’** and **Cathy O’Brien’s** *Trance: Formation of America*, which declares:

“This book is primarily the autobiography of **Cathy O’Brien**, who did not volunteer for service to her country, but was used her entire life against her innate, voluntary will for perpetrating criminal activity by many so-called

leaders within the U.S. Government . . . Together, Cathy and I have dedicated our lives to the pursuit of justice and rehabilitation for her and **Kelly** [*Cathy's repeatedly raped, tortured and abused daughter*]. All avenues of justice and rehabilitative relief have been blocked **For Reasons of National Security**. . . . The question arises, whose security? Cathy O'Brien provides the logical answer." <sup>{25}</sup> [Emphasis added]

(Cathy O'Brien, forced into compulsory prostitution to "service" American Presidents **Ford, Reagan** and **Bush**, has bravely come forth and told her story, for which she should be honored by all Americans! **Mark Phillips**, who rescued her from White slavery and near death, ought to be given the same. For in recalling **Jeremiah Crowley's** great work written in the early Twentieth Century, *The Pope—Chief of White Slavers, High Priest of Intrigue*, our hero proved "**the Vicar of Christ**" controlled organized prostitution in the American Empire. Today **Pope Benedict XVI**, now advised by **Henry Kissinger**, controls it through his CIA/Mafia, protected by his CFR-ruled, Attorney General (*Grand Inquisitor*), directing the Department of Justice (*Holy Office of the Inquisition*) serviced by "*the Order of the FBI*."

These works, including "*Jesuit Vatican Tyranny*," a twenty-one page article (found at <http://members.foothills.net/ricefile/JesWat.htm>) updating the reader on the traitors presently empowered by **the Company** to despotically rule over its "Holy Roman" Fourteenth Amendment American Empire, serve as companions to **Vatican Assassins: "Wounded In The House Of My Friends,"** and are most heartily recommended by the author in describing the Jesuit control of Washington through the **Council on Foreign Relations** for the last eighty years. Author **Joel Bainerman** in his 1992 masterpiece, *The Crimes of a President: New Revelations on Conspiracy & Cover-up in the Bush & Reagan Administrations*, further sums up the matter:

"[33<sup>rd</sup> Degree Freemason] **George [H. W.] Bush** has corrupted the American system to such an extent that he can get away with any crime [*just like his son, President George W. Bush*]. . . . **George Bush. Skull and Bones. Drug trafficking by the CIA. The assassinations of JFK and RFK. The Council on Foreign Relations and the Trilateral Commission.** There is a global conspiracy founded on the Freemasonry notion of a **New World Order** and global domination, and President Bush [*and now his President son who is a party to the Jesuit-controlled CFR/CIA demolition of the WTC*] plays a major part in it." <sup>{26}</sup> [Emphasis added]

Let us read, diligently **pray**, and then acquit ourselves as men remembering the **LORD's** exhortation at the mouth of **Joab** found in *I Chronicles 19:13*:

*"Be of good courage, and let us behave ourselves valiantly for our people,  
and for the cities of our God:  
and let the LORD do that which is good in his sight."*



**Jesuit Dr. John McLaughlin (1927 – Present), 1973** <sup>#723</sup>

This arrogant Jesuit was a speechwriter and special assistant (i.e., “confessor”) to Presidents Nixon and Ford. He has written for SMOM William F. Buckley, Jr.’s, *National Review* and hosts “The McLaughlin Group.” Popular in the Jesuit Theater (Babylonish “Hollywood”), he has appeared in several motion pictures.



**US Congressman: Jesuit Priest Robert F. Drinan, 1973** <sup>#724</sup>

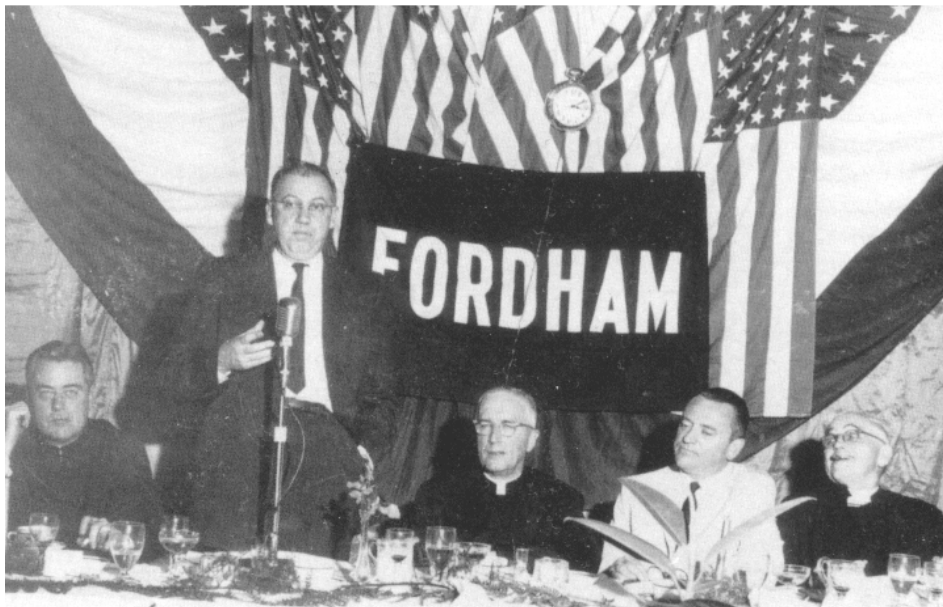
This Son of Loyola introduced the House Resolution for the impeachment of President Nixon for ending the Vietnam War prematurely. Instead of killing the Commander-in-Chief, as the Company had murdered President Kennedy, Nixon was removed with the CIA scandal known as “The Watergate Affair” backed by Papal Knights Kissinger and Haig. After Nixon’s resignation Shriner Freemason and Warren Commission conspirator, President Ford, was ordered to pardon the broken Quaker. Drinan, America’s “Rodin the Jesuit,” is now a law professor at the nation’s true capital, the Black Pope’s Jesuit Georgetown University.

*The History of the Jesuits*, James Arrabito, (Angwin, CA: LLT Productions, 1989), Video.



**Knight of Malta William J. Casey, 1913 – 1987 #725**

**Servant; Archbishop of New York, SMOM John Cardinal O'Connor  
Director, Central Intelligence Agency, Reagan Administration, 1980 – 1987**



**William J. Casey with Fordham University Jesuits, 1950s #726**

**A graduate and trustee of the Jesuit Order's Fordham University, an officer of SMOM Bill Donovan's OSS, a Director of the SEC and Export-Import Bank, Irish Roman Catholic William J. Casey, friend of William F. Buckley, Jr., was a most important person of the SMOM-dominated government of Papal Knight Ronald Reagan who chose Jesuit William J. Bennett to be his Secretary of Education, SMOM Admiral James D. Watkins to be Chief of Naval Operations and gave formal recognition to the ~~Papal~~ Caesar's Vatican City-State in 1984.**

**The Last Hero**, Anthony Cave Brown, (New York: Times Books, 1982).

**Casey**, Joseph E. Persico, (New York: Penguin Books, 1991).



**President Nixon, SEC Commissioner Casey and Wife; Judge Sirica, 1971** <sup>#727</sup>



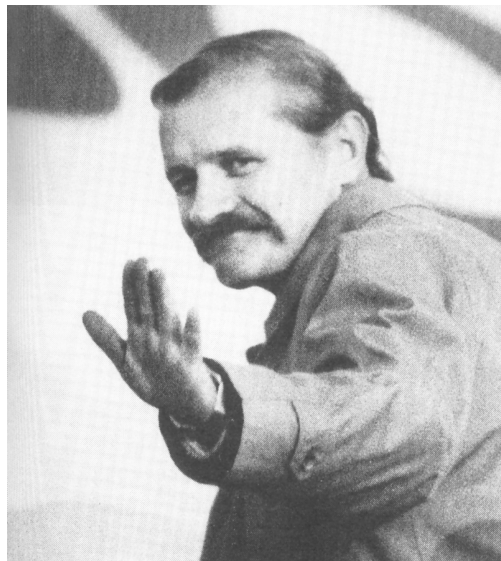
**President Ronald Reagan; CIA Director William J. Casey, 1985** <sup>#728</sup>

Above we have one of President Nixon's Jesuit-controlled masters being sworn in to the Office of Securities and Exchange Commissioner by Federal Judge John J. Sirica, the very Roman Catholic judge who sentenced Jesuit-trained G. Gordon Liddy to twenty years in prison for refusing to betray Nixon during the Order's Watergate scandal. Below, we have honorary Knight of Malta and "Irish American" crypto-Roman Catholic President Ronald Reagan (the abject tool of New York Archbishop John Cardinal O'Connor's Knights of Malta including J. Peter Grace, Jr., of the Grace Commission and Alexander M. Haig, Jr.) sitting with his advisor and mastermind behind the Iran-Contra Scandal, the Jesuit-trained Fordham University graduate and Knight of Malta, William J. Casey. Casey later "died suddenly" at the Order's Georgetown University Hospital shortly before his Congressional testimony concerning the Iran-Contra Scandal. *Veil: The Secret Wars of the CIA, 1981-1987*, Bob Woodward, (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1987).



**CIA Director William J. Casey; KGB Officer Arkady Shevchenko <sup>#729</sup>**

Casey warmly chats at a Washington party with the former Under-Secretary General of the UN for the Soviet Union who “defected” to America in 1978.



**Rome’s U.S.-based KGB Officer Vitaly Yurchenko, 1985 <sup>#730</sup>**

In meeting with his American NSA/CIA boss, KGB Officer Vitaly Yurchenko “defected” to America in 1985 but returned to the USSR three months later having no fear of being shot or imprisoned in the Order’s Gulag Archipelago. During his CIA “debriefing” Yurchenko met with Knight of Malta William J. Casey for an “informative” business dinner one evening at CIA Headquarters in Langley, Virginia. Indeed, the ~~Black Pope’s~~ CIA and KGB have worked together since the beginning of the Vatican’s Cold War. As of April 1, 2003, General Yevgeni Primakov—the former KGB head—has been hired as a “consultant” by the ~~Company’s~~ American Gestapo, the Department of Homeland Security, created by Jesuit Temporal Coadjutor and CIA officer, CFR member John C. Gannon.

*Veil: The Secret Wars of the CIA, 1981-1987*, Bob Woodward, (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1987).





**Reagan with “October Surprise” Boss, William J. Casey, 1980 #731**

Overthrowing Prime Minister Mossadegh who patriotically nationalized Iran’s oil industry thus attacking the ~~Black Pope’s~~ British-owned, Anglo-Iranian Oil Company, the Shah returned to his throne via the CIA and MI6’s “Operation Ajax.” Shah Pahlavi, having recognized the Pope’s Labor Zionist government of Israel, created his dreaded Secret Police (SAVAK) in 1957 and ruled Iran with “an iron fist in a velvet glove” until departing for the US in 1979. Aided by the CIA, that same year Ayatollah Khomeini assumed power in Iran as did Masonic Saddam Hussein in Iraq. Rome’s American Knights of Malta, including DCI William J. Casey, would then arm Iran via secret deals (the “October Surprise”) still shrouded in mystery, including the Iran-Contra Affair. In the name of the American people, the Pope’s CFR-controlled US government illegally armed Iran (“Irangate”—1985) and Iraq (“Iraqgate”—1985-89) during the Iran-Iraq War. The purpose of the merciless and bloody war was to create mutual annihilation of Shiite Moslems, drive the Jews of both nations back to Israel and create anti-American fury throughout the Moslem World. The arms sold to Iran and Iraq would ultimately be used against invading American soldiers through their ordered, unprotected mass-detonations of chemical and biological weapons, weakening our armed forces during its Vatican-decreed Crusade against Islam. Upon the Jesuits using their American Military Industrial Complex to arm the Soviets and Moslem nations during the Pope’s Cold War, as well as arming the Chinese and Russians during the post-Cold War, the weapons of our coming Sino-Soviet-Moslem-Latino invaders will have been “made in the USA.”

*October Surprise: America’s Hostages in Iran and the Election of Ronald Reagan*, Gary Sick, (New York: Times Books, 1991).



**Reagan Consents to the Illegal Arming of Iraq, White House, 1985 #732**

With Italian Prime Minister Giulio Andreotti, Reagan illegally armed Masonic Saddam Hussein's Iraq (1985-1989) during its war with Iran (1980-1988). This was the secret policy of Rome, Reagan the mere tool of Knights of Malta: Vice President George H. W. Bush; CIA Director William J. Casey; National Security Advisor Richard V. Allen; Sec. of State Alexander M. Haig, Jr.; Ambassador-at-Large Vernon A. Walters; and J. Peter Grace, Jr. of the Grace Commission.



**Jordan's King Hussein with President Bush, Maine, 1990 #733**

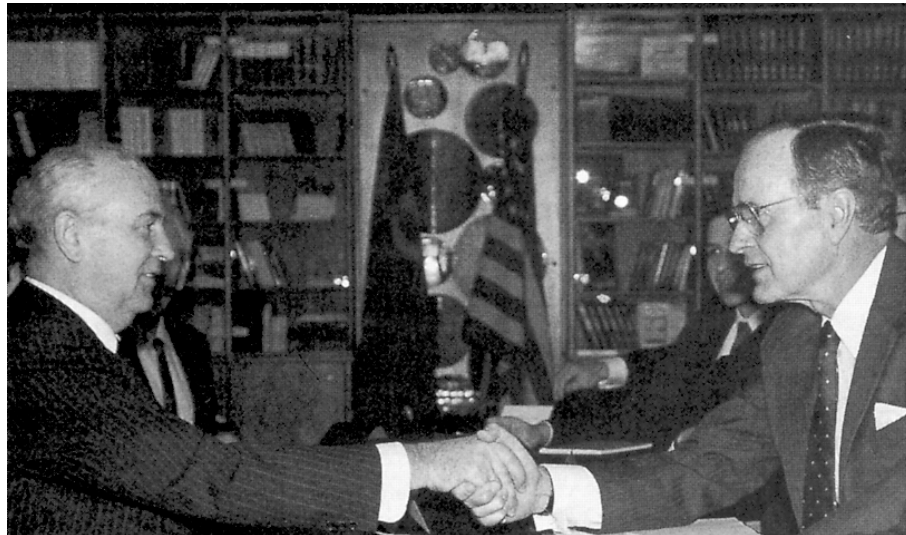
Freemason Hussein greets Freemason Bush at Kennebunkport enjoying sweet memories of covert arms transfers through Jordan to Masonic Saddam Hussein. Saddam's arms depots would be blown up by US forces after the 911 attack and resultant "War on Terror," spreading death among both Iraqis and US soldiers.

*Spider's Web: The Secret History of How the White House Illegally Armed Iraq*, Alan Friedman, (New York: Bantam Books, 1993).





CFR/Edward Stettinius; Anthony Eden; Harry Hopkins, Malta, 1945 <sup>#734</sup>



Freemasons Mikhail Gorbachev & George H. W. Bush, Malta, 1989 <sup>#735</sup>

**The Black Pope** began and ended his Cold War on the Roman Catholic island of Malta. Before Jesuit Coadjutor Harry Hopkins arrived at Malta with SMOM Charles E. Bohlen and SMOM W. Averell Harriman, he first had an audience before Pius XII with SMOM Myron C. Taylor.\* Receiving his instructions for the Yalta conference, details were finalized at Malta. Forty-five years later Bush and Gorbachev ended the Cold War on Malta graciously hosted by the Knights of Malta in control of the island since 1964. Thereafter, the Russian “Tongue” of SMOM was re-admitted into Russia, now based in Moscow and St. Petersburg.

*Harry Hopkins: A Biography*, Henry H. Adams, (New York: G. P. Putnam’s Sons, 1977) p. \*373.

*All The Best, George Bush: My Life and Letters and Other Writings*, George H. W. Bush, (New York: Simon & Schuster, 1999).



**Archbishop of New York, Edward Cardinal Egan, New York, 2000 #736**  
**Presidential Candidates George W. Bush and Al Gore with their Master**



**George W. Bush; Edward Cardinal Egan; and Al Gore, 2000 #737**

As it was in 1963 with Francis Cardinal Spellman controlling both presidential candidates, John F. Kennedy and Richard M. Nixon, so it is today. Taken at the Waldorf-Astoria Hotel in New York at the annual (Knight of Columbus) Alfred E. Smith Memorial Dinner, we can see the reverence of both Republican and Democratic Party candidates towards their political master, and the absolute power wielded by “the Archbishop of the capital of the World.” This champion of the Temporal Power of the Pope of Rome, Edward Cardinal Egan was John Paul II’s trusted agent who orchestrated the terrorist events of 911 using his Knights of Malta directing every detail of the NSA/CIA/FBI “black operation.”

UTO050749/RM/ReutersNewMedia Inc./CORBUS.

FT0061677/RM/AFP/CORBIS



**American Bush Royal Family at the Funeral of JP II, 2005 #738**

This photo speaks volumes as to who is the real master of America's Bush Royal Family now ruling the Company's pro-Labor Zionist, "Holy Roman" Fourteenth Amendment, Corporate-Fascist, American Empire. Why would President George W. Bush and his father, former President George H. W. Bush, as well as former President William J. Clinton, all be kneeling in obeisance to the Pope of Rome when none of them are Roman Catholics? The answer is the Pope is the "ruler of the world," the "King of kings and Lord of lords," declaring "the nation that will not serve me shall perish." Thus, we see the most influential American Knight of Malta at the pinnacle of his power carefully ascended during the last fifty years. For George H. W. Bush, as an oil tycoon, participated in: the Bay of Pigs "sacrifice of the mass," further securing Jesuit Castro's Cuba for our future Sino-Soviet-Moslem invasion into Miami; the Kennedy Assassination and Great Jesuit Cover-up while a covert, CIA contract agent; the Watergate Scandal ousting a disobedient President Nixon from office; the Iran-Contra Scandal arming Iran for the Empire's coming war with the Moslem World, and financing the Nicaragua Contras who, like the Cuban patriots who sought to overthrow Castro, were betrayed by the fascist CIA; the Savings and Loan Scandal, one of the largest thefts in the history of the world; the Bank of Credit and Commerce International (BCCI), the largest bank fraud in financial history; and the 911 demolition of the World Trade Center providing the pretext for invading Iraq and Afghanistan, igniting the Black Pope's 21<sup>st</sup> Century Crusade against Islam. Rome's expanding Temporal Power is promoted by the Bush Family dynasty.

Photo was forwarded to the author by an Internet researcher.

## **Chapter 49**

### **The Jesuits — 1906 – 2007**

#### **Jesuit Medica—Biowarfare and Genocide:**

*The Allopathic American Medical and Dental Associations*

*Continuing Hitler's Nazi SS Tortures and Medicalized Killing*

*The Food & Drug Administration: 100 Years of Murder*

*Protecting the Pope's Petroleum-Based Pharmaceutical Monopoly*

*Rome's Holy Office of the Inquisition Under Another Name*

“Ah! the blood of **sixty-eight millions of the human race**, which has flowed from the veins of the saints and martyrs of **Jesus**, and which cries to God for vengeance against the Babylonish harlot, leaves us no room to hesitate respecting the application of Daniel's prediction! The Church of Rome has literally worn out the saints of the Most High! Witness the heartless cruelties practiced upon the simple and pious **Waldenses!** See the torrents of blood, which have been poured out like streams of water among the martyred **Culdees**, and **Albigenses**, and **Bohemian** brethren [*the Protestant Bohemian Czechs being the first victims to be sent to Hitler's Death Camps during the Order's 20<sup>th</sup> Century Second Thirty Years' War*]!

Look in to the horror dens of the Inquisition, before whose ghostly tribunal the young men, the blooming maiden, the aged father and the fond mother were dragged under the pretext of the suspicion of heresy, but in reality to glut the avarice or lust, or malice of the diabolical inquisitors [*exactly as was done in Hitler's Nazi Germany and Stalin's Communist USSR—both secretly ruled by the Jesuits*]! The saints of the Most High were worn out by the tortures of the rack, and the fire. **Satan ruled supreme in this infernal office!** Its interior was in strict accordance with the deeds of darkness and of blood, which were daily enacted within its gloomy walls! It seemed as though the **seat of Satan** had been removed to the earth, and as if he had established a hell in miniature among men! There, by the flash of the gleaming torch, you see the servants of the Holy Inquisition; their countenances stern with cruelty, frowning with the scowl of malice upon the victims of ghostly tyranny. In vain does the affrighted prisoner shriek with terror, and call for help, when he views the instruments of death! The torturing dungeons are so deep; the massy doors are so close, that no groan however loud, no wail of men in their death agony, no shriek, however piercing, can reach the upper air! There, in hopeless, helpless misery, the unhappy victims of **Antichrist** submit to the horrid cruelties with which he wears out the saints of the Most High! One mode of torture, I will mention.



‘When the Spanish Inquisition was thrown open by the troops of **Napoleon** and **King Joseph**, an image of the Virgin [known as “The Iron Maiden”] was found standing in a dark corner of a cell. On closer inspection it was discovered by the French officer to be an engine of torture; underneath the robes with which the image was covered, was a metal breastplate stuck full of needles, spikes and lancets. The familiar was ordered to manoeuvre it. He did so; it raised its arms as if to embrace; a knapsack was thrown into them; gradually the arms closed, pressing the object within them closer and closer to the breast of the image, crushing and piercing it with a hundred wounds.’

This is one of the implements of death with which papal Rome in the nineteenth century stood prepared to wear out the saints of the Most High [even as **Pope Pius IX** called for the return of the guillotine to be used against “accursed heretics and liberals” according to Scottish Protestant historian **James A. Wylie**! Oh! who can number the tears, and count the sighs that have been wrung from the weeping, tortured prisoners of that accursed office! . . . Spain is strewn with the ashes of many an **Auto de Fe**, at which those who loved **God’s Word**, and gloried in God’s truth, were roasted alive by the hideous crew of Monkish Inquisitors, and Popish priests! England has quivered in every nerve, under the torturing grasp of **Antichrist**; and Ireland has been drenched with Protestant blood!

If the blood of 68 millions of the human race is not enough to make the Babylonish woman drunk, she surely must be proof against intoxication! This blood has dyed her with its scarlet hue, and fixed the gory mark upon her, which stamps her as the blood-stained **HARLOT**, drunk with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus!” <sup>11</sup>  
[Emphasis added]

**Joseph F. Berg, 1842**  
**American Protestant Historian**  
*The Great Apostacy, Identical With*  
*Papal Rome; Or An Exposition*  
*Of the Mystery of Iniquity and the*  
*Marks and Doom of Antichrist*

“The time will arrive very soon, in which the ‘**Company of Jesus**’ will become very solicitous in the **human sciences**, *but without a single application to virtue*, the ambition will be to dominate, the overbearing and pride penetrating its soul, to rule alone and no one can restrain them.” <sup>12</sup>  
[Emphasis added]

**Gerome Lanuza, 1650?**  
**Bishop of Albarracin**

“My work on *The Nazi Doctors* began and ended with [a Bavarian-born Roman Catholic, SS Captain and Medical Doctor, Jesuit Temporal Coadjutor] **Josef Mengele**. . . . Although I had originally considered focusing my study on Mengele, I soon realized that such a focus could further the cult of demonic personality already surrounding him and thereby neglect the more general Nazi phenomenon of medicalized killing. . . . It was only in 1958 that he began to reach a status of public infamy, . . . And as Mengele moved through various parts of South America [thanks to Pope Pius XII’s Vatican Ratlines overseen by the Jesuits] to prevent capture or extradition, these testimonies of survivors continued unabated . . . While he is known to have spent considerable time in Argentina and Paraguay [in which had been located the Order’s communist Reductions (1609-1767)], his long stay in Brazil [founded by the Jesuits] has been less recognized: . . .

What we know about the thirty-two year old man who arrived in Auschwitz on 30 May 1943 is not especially remarkable. He was the second son of a well-to-do Bavarian industrialist . . . The family is described as ‘strict Catholic,’ and Mengele identified himself as a Catholic on all his official forms . . . Matriculating at the universities not only in Munich, but also in Bonn, Vienna, and Frankfurt, Mengele came to concentrate on the physical anthropology and genetics of his time, eventually working under **Otmar von Verschuer** at the Frankfurt University Institute of Hereditary Biology and Racial Hygiene: . . . Mengele [was] so kind that women at the institute referred to him as ‘**Father Mengele**’—a nickname that could of course have other connotations [*including a clandestine priesthood*]. . . .

His medical dissertation published in 1938 and entitled, ‘Genealogical Studies in the Cases of Cleft-Lip-Jaw Palate’ [*which deformity is usually a result of nutritional deficiencies, not genetic insufficiencies*] prefigured his Auschwitz work on genetic abnormalities . . . His third publication was entitled ‘Hereditary Transmission of Fistulae Auris’ [*and was published*] in a journal *Der Erbarzt*, ‘**The Genetic Physician**.’ . . .

[*Dear truth-seeker, American allopathic physicians today attribute nearly all deformities and chronic diseases to genetic causes; never to vaccines, inherited infections, abusive lifestyles, toxic poisonous environments or adulterated foodstuffs. Thus, this false genetic theory of disease provides the non-empirical religious dogma necessary for all allopathic treatments, they being prescription drugs, radiation therapies and radical surgeries in addition to stem-cell research and genetic engineering. Put upon historic White Protestant nations, the Society of Jesus makes a fortune through its pharmaceutical industries while congruently destroying the health of those nations. The Allopathic Genetic Physician is in truth the Nazi Physician.*]

What did Mengele actually do in Auschwitz? . . . ‘He had a reputation; it was a name that was heard the most. He was everywhere.’ . . . He . . . committed real crimes, murderous crimes, direct murder. The Frankfurt Court, in indicting him for extradition [*knowing full well that he was in Brazil*], spoke of ‘hideous crimes’ committed alone or with others ‘willfully and with bloodlust.’ These crimes included selections, **lethal injections**, shootings, beatings, and other forms of deliberate killing. . . . ‘He was brutal, but in a gentlemanly, depraved way. . . . he had no problems—not with his conscience, not with anybody, not with anything . . . he was absolutely convinced he was doing the right thing . . . while he continued to whistle his [Richard] Wagner . . . like an automaton, a gentleman carrying out indifferent functions . . . very cold, businesslike, matter-of-fact. . . . a very bad person, . . . and you saw it . . . in his eyes . . . brown and bloodshot,’ . . . his eyes ‘had a ‘cruel expression’ or were ‘the eyes of a fish,’ or ‘dead eyes,’ ‘wild eyes,’ or eyes that never looked at one’s own [eyes]. . . . He was free to do whatever he pleased with us . . . [He was] the lord of life and death. . . . How we hated this charlatan! . . . How we despised his detached haughty air, his continual whistling, his absurd orders, his frigid cruelty! Dr. Mengele had the air of a man who took great satisfaction in his work and was pleased with his calling [while many of the guards at Auschwitz wore belt buckles with Catholic crucifixes on them according to the late Hungarian survivor, Theodora Moscovitz],’ . . .

Mengele prepared a special dissection room, including a ‘dissection table of polished marble,’ a basin with ‘nickel taps,’ and ‘three porcelain sinks,’ . . . The overall arrangement, . . . was, ‘the exact replica of any large city’s institute of pathology. . . . Mengele, in the laboratory, ‘became a different person entirely, . . . a [demon-possessed] fanatic . . . like a dual personality [and] if he didn’t see blood on his white uniform [in shedding the blood of the heretic in accordance with the Jesuit Oath], he wasn’t content.’ ”

[Dear truth-seeker, **Josef Mengele** was an SS Jesuit Temporal Coadjutor under Extreme Oath evidenced by his calm mannerisms while committing cold-blooded murder. Disguised as a “doctor,” and imbibed with the false theory of the “Genetic Physician,” he was the perfect “Manchurian Candidate,” meticulously performing his professional duties for his master controlling **I. G. Farben** via German Knights of Malta. That evil master was then and is today **the Black Pope** invisibly manipulating tens of thousands of American physicians who, like Mengele, are convinced they are doing the right thing.]” <sup>13</sup> [Emphasis added]

Robert Jay Lifton, 1986  
American Professor of Psychology  
*The Nazi Doctors*

**“Largely unbeknownst to the American people there is a war going on that has claimed victims in every family. This war is escalating and threatens every human life.** It is a war being waged in the interests of the multibillion-dollar pharmaceutical industry [*ruled by the Pope’s Knights of Malta*], which is not a health industry but rather an investment business built on the continuation and expansion of global diseases. Your health and the health of every person in America are threatened in several ways:

**1. ‘The business with disease’ as the basis of the pharmaceutical industry.** The pharmaceutical industry is a multibillion-dollar investment business that has orchestrated the largest fraud in human history. It promises health, but in fact **thrives on the continuation of diseases**. This fraud scheme is easily unmasked. Most pharmaceutical drugs are designed to merely cover disease symptoms, but are not intended to cure or eradicate diseases. As a direct result of this multibillion-dollar fraud business, no cure has ever been found for **cardiovascular disease, cancer, diabetes**, or any other chronic disease. On the contrary, these diseases continue in epidemic proportions, killing about 5,000 Americans every day. This compares to the annihilation of a city the size of San Francisco every year.

**2. The epidemic of dangerous side effects caused by pharmaceutical drugs.** The dangerous side effects of Vioxx, Celebrex, Lipitor and Prozac are not the exception; they are the rule. Due to their synthetic nature, most pharmaceutical drugs are toxic to our bodies, causing organ damage and other serious side effects. According to the **American Medical Association**, one million Americans suffered disabilities from taking pharmaceutical drugs and more than 100,000 of them die as a result of this every single year.

**3. Legislation that protects the expansion of the deadly business with disease.** For decades drug companies have used their giant profits to manipulate the public and influence legislation, including that from the U.S. Congress and the White House. Now that the deadly consequences of the pharmaceutical fraud business have been unmasked, the survival of this industry depends on the **protectionist laws**. The current push of the [**George W.**] **Bush** administration for so-called medical liability reform is not about protecting gynecologists and the medical doctors from medical liability lawsuits. The centerpiece of the proposed medical liability legislation is to prohibit punitive damage awards and liability lawsuits brought by injured patients against drug companies! This medical liability legislation is being used as a cover to grant amnesty to drug manufacturers, protecting them from having to compensate millions of patients for the harm their drugs have caused. It is payback for the pharmaceutical



industry, which was the largest corporate sponsor of the Bush election campaign. . . . As the direct consequence of this law, tens of millions of Americans will suffer disability and die from preventable diseases within the next decades [*further fulfilling the Order's wicked Council of Trent*].

**4. Withholding life-saving information about the health benefits of vitamins and natural therapies.** A precondition for this ‘business with disease’ based on patentable synthetic drugs is the suppression of effective and safe, but nonpatentable and therefore less profitable, natural therapies. For decades the pharmaceutical industry has strategically expanded its influence on medical education with devastating results. It has deliberately blocked any information about the essential role of vitamins and other micronutrients in maintaining health (*[that information which is]* contained in every textbook of biology, biochemistry, and natural science) from entering medical school teaching and practice. Through their strategic influence, the pharmaceutical industry has established a **global monopoly** on medicine. As a direct result, generations of medical doctors have not received adequate training in nutritional and other natural therapies. Doctors and patients alike have become victims of the pharmaceutical industry’s efforts to monopolize human health. As a result, **tens of millions of Americans** have died unnecessarily over the past decades because this life-saving health information has not been available to them.

**5. Suppressing effective natural therapies by law.** Effective, safe, and nonpatentable natural therapies threaten the very basis of the pharmaceutical investment business. They target and correct the underlying cellular deficiencies of today’s most common diseases, thereby preventing and even eradicating them. The elimination of any disease inevitably destroys a multibillion-dollar market for the pharmaceutical industry, thus the pharmaceutical industry has launched a **global campaign** to protect its patent-based ‘business with disease’ by outlawing natural non-patentable therapies at the **national** and **international level**. This is the background for the Bush administration’s attack on the Dietary Supplement Health and Education Act—the key legislation protecting the rights of the American people for free access to natural therapies and to freedom-of-health choice. If this fundamental human right to natural health is taken away, the health of billions of people will be compromised and tens of millions of them will pay the ultimate price for generations to come.” <sup>{4}</sup>  
[Emphasis added]

Kevin Trudeau, 2004  
American Patriot and Author  
*Natural Cures “They” Don’t Want  
You to Know About Health*

“Yes, **Judyth Vary Baker** had the technical qualifications to be ‘the technician’ that did ‘the bench work’ in the **Ferrie-Sherman** medical laboratory. Hearing Judyth admit that as a 19-year old she assisted **Lee Harvey Oswald**, **David Ferrie**, **Dr. Mary Sherman**, and [*New Orleans Jesuit Temporal Coadjutor*] **Dr. Alton Ochsner** in their efforts to develop a biological weapon is . . . a brain buster! . . . **Judyth** is adamant that **Mary Sherman** was definitely part of the cancer-virus research project that was going on at **David Ferrie’s** apartment. In fact, part of Judyth’s daily operational cycle was to bring ‘the extracts’ of her cancer-causing virus research from Ferrie’s apartment to Mary Sherman’s apartment. She also clearly states that **Dr. Alton Ochsner** was ultimately in charge of the Ferrie-Sherman lab. And that both she and **Lee Oswald** were part of the effort to use the cancer-causing monkey viruses to develop a biological weapon [*secretly intended to be used against us Americans, thus furthering the Order’s Counter-Reformation*]. . . . The mice were delivered to his apartment several times per week for processing as part of the operation. To my mind, this has always been what I called ‘**the worse case scenario**’—the confirmed existence of the secret cooperation between talented scientists, dangerous radioactive equipment, monkey viruses and political extremists in an underground laboratory. . . . Judyth’s knowledge of and personal involvement with the subject of cancer research is remarkable to this day. Upon seeing a **2006** news article about a breakthrough in cancer research involving a mouse whose immune system was extremely good at resisting cancer, Judyth sent me an email which said:

‘**We could have cured cancer . . . decades ago. . . . and here you see that macrophages in mice do it—and yes, just as I have claimed they could.** . . . This can be turned into an efficient and cheap way to combat cancer. Oh, if only I could have convinced somebody to just give me a chance to direct a lab! . . . And also because they are still just using murine (mouse) macrophages, a first step that I knew would work way back in 1961. Oh, I feel as if my whole life has been wasted! Have to admit I just sat down after reading this and wept tears of anger and frustration for the millions who have suffered and died from cancer, especially children, and I knew the key, but my mouth had been stopped up with clay. I cannot stop weeping. . . . This is awful, to feel such anger and helplessness. Yet happy that at last they should be able to see what to do.’ ” <sup>{S}</sup> [Emphasis added]

**Edward T. Haslam, 2006**  
**American JFK Researcher and Author**  
**Discovered Lee Oswald’s Girlfriend**  
**Researcher Judyth Vary Baker**  
***Dr. Mary’s Monkey***

“As everyone knows, rumors surrounding the Kennedy assassination persevered, even after the Senate Select Committee on Intelligence and the House [Select] Committee on Assassinations had issued reports [*the HSCA having concluded JFK had been killed by a “conspiracy”*]. The old **conspiracy theories** continued to circulate, and a new generation of theorists arose. . . . Many of these theories depended in part on the idea that the autopsy at Bethesda Naval Hospital was somehow flawed. In response to the heated public dialogue following the release of **Oliver Stone’s JFK**, the [*CFR-controlled*] **American Medical Association** decided to review the autopsy findings and determine whether navy doctors had indeed participated in a grand cover-up [*proven by Harrison Edward Livingstone in High Treason 2*]. In May 1992, the *Journal of the American Medical Association (JAMA)* published the first of two articles exploring allegations that the autopsy findings were untrustworthy. The conclusions dealt a severe blow to **conspiracy theories**. *JAMA* stated unequivocally that the physicians who performed the autopsy on the night of November 22 had established beyond reasonable doubt that the president was struck by only **two bullets**, which hit him from above and behind his head. . . .

In the October 7, 1992, issue of *JAMA*, editor **George D. Lundberg, M.D.**, stated: ‘A series of unbiased experts, forensic scientists, pathologists, and radiologists over the years have re-examined the Kennedy autopsy findings, using written materials, testimony of Humes [**James Joseph Humes, M.D.**], Boswell [**J. Thornton Boswell, M.D.**], and Finck [**Pierre Finck, M.D.**], the Zapruder film, photographs, X-rays, and microscopic slides.’ Lundberg concluded that these experts have almost unanimously supported the published findings and interpretations of the autopsy team and the Warren Commission, the single dissenting voice being that of **Cyril H. Wecht, M.D.** [*who is now a regular guest on the ~~Black Pope’s~~ pro-Bush Fox News Network*]. Yet even he agreed in 1966 and wrote in 1973 that ‘all shots were fired from the rear.’ The calm expert testimony in the most distinguished medical publication in the United States countered the emotional outcries of the amateurs. It was, of course, no surprise to those of us who had continued to follow the case. The autopsy findings were confirmed by the Warren Commission in 1964; and in 1968, an impartial panel of four pathologists and radiologists examined all available evidence and made a sixteen-page report to [*protector of the CIA’s SMOM Clay Shaw and David Ferrie*] **Attorney General Ramsey Clark**.” <sup>163</sup>  
[Emphasis added]

Cartha “Deke” DeLoach, 1995  
SMOM; Ex-Assistant Director, FBI  
*Hoover’s FBI*

“He who thinks he knows the Jesuits by having read all the books that were written in the past century [*the Eighteenth Century*] to unmask them, would be grossly deceived. The Jesuitism of that day was an open war against the Gospel and society; the **Jesuitism** of the present is a slow but contagious and deadly disease, which secretly insinuates itself; **it is a poison taken under the name of medicine.**” <sup>{2}</sup> [Emphasis added]

**Luigi Desanctis, 1852**  
**Official Censor of the Inquisition**  
*Popery, Puseyism and Jesuitism*

“... the health of the people is really the foundation upon which all their happiness and all their power as a state depend. . . . but if the population of the country is stationary or yearly diminishing—if, while it diminishes in number it diminishes also in stature, in strength, that country is doomed. The health of the people is, in my opinion, the first duty of a statesman.” <sup>{8}</sup> [Emphasis added]

**Benjamin Disraeli, 1877**  
**Masonic British Prime Minister**  
**under Queen Victoria**

“The Jesuits awed Casey. ‘They are brilliant . . . I’m absolutely convinced that they have the right dope on this world . . . I want to be . . . a **Colonel House**, the guy behind the throne, advising the President of the United States.’ . . . As his wife was later to observe, ‘Bill got his self-assurance from the Jesuits.’ . . . **The Jesuits had done their work well . . .** He was armored in his religion.” <sup>{2}</sup> [Emphasis added]

**Joseph E. Persico, 1990**  
**Roman Catholic CFR Member**  
**American Journalist and Author on**  
**Roman Catholic William J. Casey,**  
**Student of the Jesuits, 1930**  
**Fordham University**

“**Baby Doc**, in his tireless devotion to saving the demonically possessed cannot bear the burden of watching his people die the wretched death unleashed upon those doomed for hell. We are left with no alternative but to heed the word of God [*the Pope*] and spare him from annihilation. For this reason, we will send in the missionaries (Jesuit Mercenaries) to inoculate the population with a vaccine that will spare only the good of heart by virtue of its design . . . Baby Doc has complied with the Vatican’s

orders [!!!] to the best of his abilities in his demon-infested land, and must resign his post." <sup>{10}</sup> [Emphasis added]

**William J. Casey, 1985**  
**Knight of Malta and Director,**  
**Central Intelligence Agency**  
*Trance: Formation of America*

“ ‘We the People of the United States,’ and peace-loving citizens around the world, now face a nightmarish danger. Deadly animal viruses are now multiplying in our bodies.” <sup>{11}</sup> [Emphasis added]

**Leonard Horowitz, 1997**  
**American Physician and Author**  
**Russian Orthodox Knight of Malta**  
*Emerging Viruses: AIDS and Ebola*

“Current Medical Science is nothing but a false dogma, imposed almost universally, by no matter what means, legitimate or not, by a **Medical Power**, in close alliance with the **Chemical Syndicate**. Their purpose, as will be demonstrated in the following chapters, is not the people’s health, which is just being used as a pretext for extorting large sums of money, but the aggrandizement of their own wealth and might. . . .”

**In every country, the ruling Medical Power is one of the Syndicate’s most reliable collaborators, the more efficient for being unrecognized by the ignorant, misled majority. The Medical Power has today the role that belonged to the [inquisitional Roman Catholic] Church in the Middle [Dark] Ages.”** <sup>{12}</sup> [Emphasis added]

**Hans Ruesch, 1982**  
**Swiss Investigative Journalist**  
*Naked Empress: Or*  
*The Great Medical Fraud*

*“How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning!  
How art thou cut down to the ground,  
Which didst weaken the nations! . . .  
They that see they shall narrowly look upon thee, and consider thee,  
Saying, Is this the man who made the earth to tremble,  
Who did shake kingdoms, who made the world like a wilderness,  
And destroyed its cities, who opened not the house of its prisoners?”*

– Isaiah 14:12, 16, 17

No better description of **the Company** has ever been so simply put than that of **Mr. Luigi Desantis**, who later became a Reformed pastor. When his description is applied to the **American Medical Association (AMA)**, the **American Dental Association (ADA)** and the **Food & Drug Administration (FDA)** we can easily see these three agencies as arms of **the Great Jesuit Conspiracy**, described by **Abate Leone** in his *The Jesuit Conspiracy: The Secret Plan of the Order* printed in 1848. The purpose of the AMA, ADA and FDA is to destroy the “heretic and liberal” American people in the name of helping them. By making the people chronically ill these agencies break any will to resist an American fascist tyranny (possibly to be overseen by **Fox News Network’s** Jesuit-trained Knight of Malta, **Patrick J. Buchanan**) and the coming “New World Order” under the Jesuits’ “*infallible*” Pope.

The AMA, as we know it today, began in the early 1900s. The Jesuits, through 33<sup>rd</sup> Degree and Shriner Freemasonry, the **Morgans** and the **Rockefellers** in particular, began to control the medical education of young physicians, teaching them to treat symptoms with their petroleum-based drugs. Later came surgery, and then radiation completing the medical “**unholy trinity**” of “**cut, burn and poison.**”

Warning us of the drug-happy, allopathic doctor we read in 1912:

“. . . for the doctor who imagines he can kill disease by his drug gatling-gun will quite as oft kill his patient [*as has been the case with tens of thousands of WWII veterans*]. Be suspicious of the doctor who comes into the sickroom with an air of omnipotence, takes out his stethoscope as though it was **Gabriel’s Trumpet**, writes a lot of **Latin prescriptions** [*i.e., the language of Rome*] and asks never a question regarding the daily habits of the patient. . . . Beware, I say, of this class of physicians. They will sit with one hand on your pulse and the other on your pocketbook and not leave until one or the other gives out; but cure you—never! It isn’t in them. They haven’t the first conception of what a real, progressive, up-to-date physician really is able to do for his patients.” <sup>{13}</sup> [Emphasis added]

Dear truth-seeker, *is this not the heart and soul of American medicine?*

The monstrous drug companies controlled by the Knights of Malta were some of the financiers behind the Jesuits’ **Council on Foreign Relations**, which in turn created and now control the medical inquisitors—the **AMA, ADA and FDA**.

Purposing to sicken White Celtic-Anglo-Saxon Protestant American people, the AMA and FDA promoted mass vaccinations and immunizations. (**Senator Edward “Ted” Kennedy**, that darling of Georgetown University and Boston College Jesuits, knowing who really murdered his brothers, introduced new legislation that would attempt to vaccinate all children in the American Empire, while severely limiting exemptions parents could claim. He also seeks to set up a nationwide vaccine

registry to track parents who resist the injections of monkey pus, mercury and formaldehyde into their childrens' bloodstreams.) These slow poisons in the name of medicine contain live viruses, which later erupt into "incurable diseases" such as "Cancer." **Dr. William Campbell Douglas** tells us in his *Second Opinion*:

"I reported nearly 10 years ago, on the alarming finding that a **monkey virus—simian virus 40**—had contaminated both the **Salk** and **Sabin** polio vaccines [*the Jesuits always using Rome's "Court Jews" in the forefront*]. It was known at the time that this virus caused brain cancer in experimental animals but, it was covered; there was no worry as it caused no problems in humans. What the public was not told is that since **SV40** is a retro virus (like AIDS), it would take 20 to 40 years before we would know what damage had been done. I noted at the time that brain tumors had increased in frequency since I was graduated from medical school. In 1950, they were rare, but by 1990 they were common—1950 plus 40 equals 1990 (the year I made my first report on **SV40** and brain tumors). The horrifying truth came out in the February 14, 1999, *London Telegraph*:

'The mass vaccination campaigns of the 50's and 60's may be causing hundreds of deaths a year because of a cancer-causing virus which contaminated the first polio vaccine, according to scientists. Known as **SV40**, the virus came from dead monkeys whose kidney cells were used to culture the first **Salk Vaccines**. Doctors estimate that the virus was injected into tens of millions during mass vaccination campaigns before being detected and screened out in 1963. Those born between 1941 and 1961 are thought to be most at risk of having been infected.' . . .

'Now a new study of the effects of **SV40** points to disturbing evidence that the monkey virus causes a number of **human cancers** . . . "such as non-Hodgkin's lymphoma and prostate cancer . . . and bone cancer." . . . the **monkey virus** may be passing from those given the contaminated vaccine to their children, spreading the cancer risk still further.' " {14}  
[Emphasis added]

Additionally, we read:

"**Polio Vaccine**: Developed in the late 1940's from **dead pig and monkey kidney pus infected with poliomyelitis**, and lactalbumin hydrolysate, chemical antibiotics, and calf serum. This live-virus vaccine recently tested to harbor 149 live viruses and bacteria living in the vaccine; including the SV40 virus, also found in cancer cells. Can cause intestinal flu, autoimmune diseases, (juvenile) childhood diabetes, children's rheumatoid arthritis, and childhood lupus. The Center for Disease Control (CDC) reported that during 1973 to 1983, **87% of polio cases** were caused by the

**polio vaccine injection** and from 1980 to 1989 the polio vaccine shots caused **100%** of all domestic polio incidences. **Dr. Jonas Salk** is quoted as admitting, ‘When you inoculate children with a polio vaccine you don’t sleep well for two or three weeks’ (**E. McBean**, *The Poisoned Needle*, Health Research, Mokelumne Hill, Calif., p. 144). Dr. Salk’s killed-virus vaccine proliferation resulted in polio incidence doubling nationwide, some states reporting 400-600% increases [*the Jesuits, using their Masonic Jews within the Black Pope’s international medical inquisition, providing another reason to mass-murder American Jews!*].” <sup>{15}</sup> [Emphasis added]

The deliberate poisoning of the bloodstreams of White Protestant nations should not be a surprise in the light of the **Council of Trent**; the Jesuits declared they would do this in *The Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion*. We read from Protocol Number Ten:

“... it is indispensable to trouble in all countries the people’s relations with their governments so as to utterly exhaust humanity with dissension, hatred, [class] struggle, envy and even to the use of torture, by starvation, **BY THE INOCULATION OF DISEASES.**” <sup>{16}</sup>  
[Emphasis added]

Dear truth-seeker, have not our many inoculations, received in both civilian and military life, resulted in the *tortures* of the Order’s many medical “treatments” as well as the *deaths* our countrymen have suffered due to being *eaten alive* by “**Cancer**”?

Later, the agents of the Jesuits would institute the draft creating a huge army. This **Army of the American Empire**, financed by **the Black Pope’s** “fractional reserve” **Federal Reserve Bank** and built for the restoration of the **Temporal Power** of the Pope, would have to fight *globally*. Therefore, its soldiers would be mass-vaccinated. With harmful viruses and bacteria in the semen, their wives and babies would become infected producing more cancers in the women and birth defects in the children. (Composed of **Fourteenth Amendment** citizen/subjects raised on fiat and worthless **Federal Reserve Notes**, the **Army of the American Empire**—including the very lives and health of its fighting men—is the legal property of Rome.) The Gulf War Syndrome, ably defined and righteously attacked by Gulf War veteran **Joyce Reilly**, is a classic example of murder by military/medical injection.

The Vatican, with its **Sovereign Military Order of Malta**, has created or mutated many viruses that have been used for the systematic annihilation of the “heretic and liberal” American people. The Knights, with their former Nazis, CIA and drug companies, created the Human Immune Deficiency Virus (HIV) causing the present Acquired Immune Deficiency Syndrome (AIDS) epidemic. That virus is in every hepatitis B vaccine administered by the medical inquisitors—the AMA! We read from *Emerging Viruses: AIDS and Ebola* by the brilliant **Len Horowitz**:



“Though polio vaccines are also suspected of transmitting HIV-1 and other viruses, the unique epidemiology, and concurrent outbreaks of AIDS in New York City and Central Africa, appears to coincide more closely with the administration of experimental hepatitis B vaccines than with either the Salk or Sabin vaccines.” <sup>{17}</sup> [Emphasis added]

Since the 1930s, *during the tyranny of Masonic FDR*, the Jesuit Conspiracy against the health of Protestant America has greatly advanced. The true cures for viral diseases were heavily suppressed. Those cures were primarily oxygen-ozone, light with color, ultra-violet blood irradiation (so ably explained by **Dr. William Campbell Douglas** in his *Into the Light* <sup>{18}</sup> and **Kenneth J. Dillon’s** *Healing Photons: The Science and Art of Blood Irradiation Therapy* <sup>{19}</sup>) and direct current frequency generators using both photons and electrons. The use of medical grade ozone, **Royal Rife’s** photon/frequency machine, **Emmett Knott’s** blood irradiator and **Darius Dinshah’s** light-color therapy (“Spectro-Chrome”) were all violently suppressed. The use of medical grade colloidal silver was discontinued and all non-drug remedies were forced underground. And why? Because these treatments address *the true causes* of chronic disease. Of these causes, **Dr. William H. Philpott** tells us:

“The oxidoreductase enzymes are necessary to produce biological life energy by oxidation phosphorylation producing ATP and oxidation remnant **negative poled magnetism**. The biological life energy consists of enzyme catalytic production of: (a) adenosine triphosphate (ATP), (b) oxidative remnant magnetism (**a negative magnetic field**). This oxidation/reduction enzymatic response is dependent upon **alkalinity** and **molecular oxygen** (alkaline-hyperoxia) . . .

This oxidoreductase family of enzymes is alkaline-hyperoxic-negative (south-seeking) magnetic field activation dependent. When these 3 physiologically normal factors are not present, then cellular ATP is made by **fermentation**. The 3 factors necessary for fermentation to produce ATP are: 1) **acidity**, 2) **lack of oxygen**, 3) **a positive** (north-seeking) **static magnetic field** as an enzyme energy activator. Human cells have the capacity to make ATP be either phosphorylation or fermentation . . .

ATP made by fermentation with its acid-hypoxic medium cannot maintain human biological life energy. ATP made by fermentation can maintain the life energy of microorganisms such as bacteria, fungi, viruses, parasites and cancer cells. The secret to reverse acute maladaptive symptom reactions, prevent and reverse microorganism infections, maintaining human biological health and providing for the reversal of degenerative diseases is to maintain a normal alkaline body pH, hyperoxia and an adequate negative (south-seeking) static magnetic field.” <sup>{20}</sup> [Emphasis added]

In these great words of wisdom lay the cures for all cancers, heart disease, diabetes and chronic infections. Therefore: by refusing all infective vaccinations and immunizations as well as amalgam fillings and root canals; by using negatively charged photons and ions to kill all anaerobic bacteria, viruses, fungus and microscopic parasites (such as ultraviolet light and ozone/oxidative therapies coupled with internal use of grapefruit seed extract); by keeping the body in a highly alkaline state using enzymes and alkaline minerals (as found in raw, unprocessed foods, whole food supplementation and alkaline water); by keeping a highly oxygenated state through deep breathing, exercise and oxygen therapies (such as hyperbaric oxygen and ozone steam cabinets); by keeping in negatively charged magnetic fields (such as magnetic beds, magnetic wraps, magnetic bricks and seat pads while drinking magnetized, alkaline water—*all north pole*; and by using laetrile and wild-crafted herbs), historic White Protestant/Baptist-Calvinist nations would cease to be the leaders in chronic degenerative diseases and the Jesuit Order's wicked **Counter-Reformation** would begin to be successfully resisted by those peoples once again!

But the licensed treatment of the AMA's created diseases must be by means of Rome's unholy trinity—*cut, burn and poison*. The **Church of Modern Medicine** tolerates no heresy and uses the sword of our CFR-controlled government to punish those "obstinate medical heretics" who would dare to truly cure us Americans of our diseases deliberately put upon us by "*the Mother of Harlots and Abominations of the Earth*." Indeed, **Satan**, using his Jesuit-ruled, "globalist" **Vatican Empire**, has "*weakened the nations*" in every way, especially in our health. And of course, the Knights of Malta control the great pharmaceutical industries such as **Merck, Sharp & Dohme**, as they are connected with the Order's Central Intelligence Agency. The late Knight of Malta **Elmer H. Bobst**, past chairman of **Warner-Lambert Company**, and Knight of Malta **Lewis E. Lehrman**—*the Romanist and racial Jew*—whose family owns the **Rite-Aid** chain of American drugstores, have been and are Papal soldiers. Oh yes, **the Holy Scriptures** are true when describing **Rome**, one day to move her world commercial power to the rebuilt city of **Babylon** on the Euphrates River, as:

*“ . . . that great city, Babylon, that mighty city . . .  
for thy merchants were the great men of the earth;  
for by thy sorceries [pharmacies] were all nations deceived.”*

[Thus the risen **Son of God** will one day cry out to His **Abrahamic Covenant**-bound, greatly beloved, **Semitic-Hebrew-Jewish-Israelitic Racial Brethren**:]

*“Come out of her my people that ye be not partakers of her sins,  
and that ye receive not of her plagues.  
For her sins have reached unto heaven,  
And God hath remembered her iniquities.”*

– *Revelation 18:10, 23*

– *Revelation 18:4, 5*

In place of proven cures, the AMA, ADA and FDA have pushed toxic, mercury-laced fillings and drugs down the throats of trusting Americans. This has resulted in the unnecessary suffering and death of *millions* while at this writing there are over *one hundred million* chronically ill people in the American Empire.

Two brilliant Jews, responsible for the exposure of the American Medical and Dental Inquisitions are **Dr. Robert S. Mendelsohn** and **Dr. Leonard Horowitz**. Dr. Mendelsohn, in his classic, *Confessions of a Medical Heretic*, likens the medical establishment to the Roman Catholic Institution, calling it “the Church of Modern Medicine.” The doctor is the **priest**, the birth certificate is the **baptismal certificate**, toxic silver nitrate applied to the eyes at birth is **baptism**, the nurses are **inquisitors**, etc. He boldly declares:

“I do not believe in **Modern Medicine**. I am a medical heretic. I believe that Modern Medicine’s treatments for disease . . . are more dangerous than the diseases they are designed to treat. I believe that more than ninety percent of Modern Medicine could disappear from the face of the earth—doctors, hospitals, drugs, and equipment—and the effect on our health would be immediate and beneficial. . . . For the hospital is the **Temple of the Church of Modern Medicine** and thus one of the most dangerous places on earth. . . . There’s plenty to be afraid of. The **God** that resides in the Temple of Modern Medicine is **Death**. . . . The **doctor-priest** gets away with a lot because he can claim to be up against the very Forces of Evil . . . Never is he seen in his true light—as the *agent* of the Devil . . .

**We have a Medical Inquisition.** The first sign of an inquisition is the selling of indulgences . . . Medical insurance is the doctor’s version of indulgences . . . Like the communion wafer which Catholics receive on the tongue, drugs are the communion wafers of Modern Medicine. . . . Try getting from one end of life to the other without paying your dues to Modern Medicine: **immunizations**, fluoridated water, intravenous fluids and silver nitrate . . . When you get to the cathedrals and the little “Vaticans” of Modern Medicine, you are up against priests who have the weight of infallibility behind them. They can do no wrong, so they are most dangerous . . .” <sup>{21}</sup> [Emphasis added]

**Dr. Mendelsohn** knew what he was describing. He had been a devoted medical priest and had watched the Inquisitors for years. He was *well acquainted* with the Jesuits at **Loyola University** in Chicago while a professor in the School of Medicine at the University of Illinois. Over the years he observed the horrendous parallels between the **Church of Modern Medicine** and the **Roman Church**. He later became a most eloquent and undefeated champion in exposing the crimes of modern medicine. His opponents in debate would not even make an appearance.

The life and message of **Robert Mendelsohn** was hated by the Jesuits' medical inquisition controlled by the AMA, ADA and FDA through the Archbishop of New York's **Council on Foreign Relations**. Clearly this "perfidious Jew" was believable! Therefore, one day in good health at the age of sixty-three, payback time had arrived for this "obstinate heretic." He suddenly died, a victim of "the poison cup" at the hand of another **Vatican Assassin**—"invisible until his stroke was felt!"

**Dr. Leonard Horowitz** (before his SMOM knighthood) was of the same caliber as **Dr. Mendelsohn**. In his fantastic book, *Emerging Viruses: AIDS and Ebola*, he connects the Vatican's **Knights of Malta** to the Nazis, the pharmaceutical drug companies, and the AIDS/Cancer virus makers within the CIA. We read:

"**The Gehlen Org**, the German intelligence agency run by **Reinhard Gehlen**, was even more powerful than the Merk net. The Org superseded even the Nazi SS because of its prewar connections with the **Abwehr** or German military intelligence. In fact, Gehlen's organization is largely credited for giving rise to the **CIA**. . . . to shield Gehlen and the entire German intelligence network from harm's way? **Gehlen was a ranking official in the Sovereign Military Order of Malta (SMOM)**, which maintained inconceivable financial and political influence. . . . Somehow I wasn't surprised to learn that financial motives . . . were at the heart of **SMOM** and the **Nazi-American** alliance . . . 'Soon after the war, OSS found the extensive documentation of a meeting in Strasbourg on August 10, 1944 . . . between representatives of the SS, Party, and firms like **Krupp** [owned by Knight of Malta **Alfried Krupp**, one of the founders of the Pope's European Union], **I. G. Farben** [its president and Knight of Malta, **Hermann Schmitz**, being a close personal friend of the Fuhrer's ambassador to the Vatican, Knight of Malta **Franz von Papen**] . . . The world's masses knew nothing about the partnership, formed between **John D. Rockefeller's Standard Oil Company**, Germany's **I. G. Farben**, and **Hitler's Third Reich**. The 'pirates of Wall Street,' **Allen and John Foster Dulles**, of the [CFR's] law firm Sullivan & Cromwell, had secretly negotiated this alliance. It was not known to allied airmen, flying bombing missions over Germany, why the **I. G. Farben** plants, where Hitler's munitions were made, were exempted from attack. Likewise, when the **I. G. Farben-Rockefeller Consortium** used concentration camp victims as slaves to build and run their factories it never made the news [controlled by Knight of Malta **Henry R. Luce**]. Nor was it heralded that this same team patented and sold the gas that the Nazis used in the concentration camps to send millions to their graves. Recent headlines have asked to know where the Nazi gold went. Historians only recently recorded that the **Rockefeller's Chase Bank** [manned by a high Knight of Malta, **Joseph J. Larkin**] was among the largest recipients." <sup>{22}</sup> [Emphasis added]

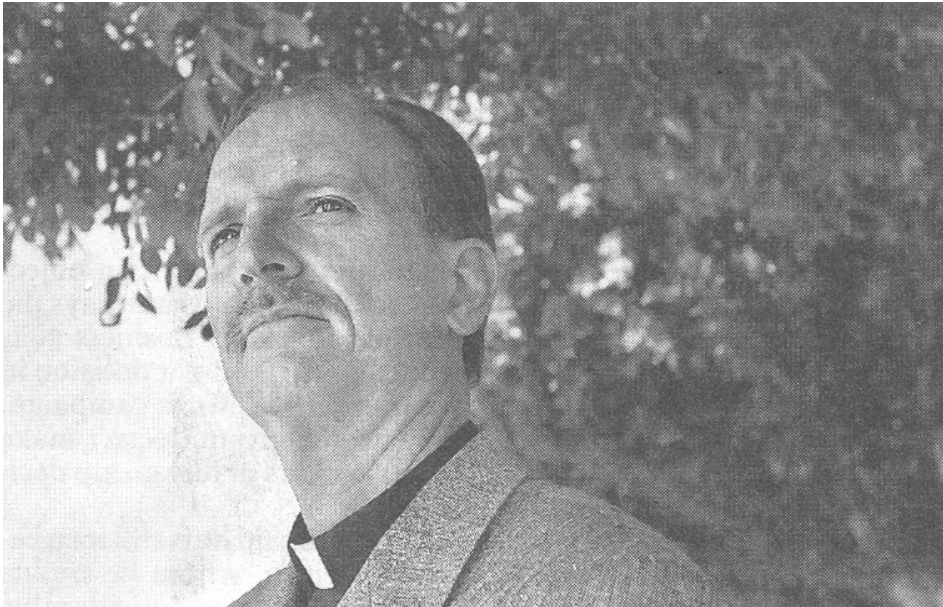
Dear truth-seeker, according to the 1993 *Annual Report of the Council on Foreign Relations*, the Rockefeller Group, Sullivan & Cromwell and the Chase Manhattan Bank are all listed on the Corporate Member Roster of the Jesuits' **Council on Foreign Relations**. Along with these are the drug giants, Dow Chemical, Bristol-Myers Squibb, Johnson and Johnson, Pfizer, and Procter & Gamble. Another member is the Center for Disease Control North America.<sup>{23}</sup> And guess who is one of the guiding lights overseeing the heads of these giant monopolies of murder? It is **CFR** member/presider and President of the Jesuit Order's **Fordham University**, a Professed Jesuit of the Fourth Vow, **Joseph A. O'Hare**.<sup>{24}</sup> Amidst this fraternity we find an erudite Roman Catholic tool of the Jesuits who developed the HIV virus and thus the AIDS epidemic—the world's leading retrovirologist, **Robert C. Gallo**! This fiend, awarded "**The Sword of Ignatius Loyola**" in 1988 by the Order's Saint Louis University, was pardoned by CFR-controlled, Jesuit Temporal Coadjutor, President **Bill Clinton** for scientific misconduct! **Horowitz** correctly concludes:

**"Thus, both of this century's worst genocides [the Jewish Eurasian Holocaust and the AIDS epidemic] appear to have been determined by the same masterminds whose covert operations and deadly deceptions have beaten humanity by default."**<sup>{25}</sup> [Emphasis added]

Those masterminds, **Dr. Horowitz**, are the Jesuits, the monsters who, with their Knights of Malta, financed World War II, murdered millions of your **Semitic Hebrew/Jewish Race**, assassinated our **President Kennedy** and developed killer viruses. The Order, in control of the press, covered all this up and prevented the use of proven treatments that easily cure their created viral diseases. We became their victims as we were forced to go to Mexico for medical help, or herded into their "**Church of Modern Medicine**" to be tortured and mutilated by their medical Inquisitors. Like the docile slaves depicted by the Jesuits' Freemason and Fabian Socialist, **H. G. Wells**, in his *The Time Machine*, we have marched into the caves of **Rome's Medical Inquisition** and have been devoured by the cannibals who cut, burn and poison us. The result has been "*the Final Solution to the 'Heretic and Liberal' Question in North America*," sentencing millions of Baptists, Protestants, Jews and "liberal" Roman Catholics to horrible, ghastly deaths initiated by the hellish, damnable, dreadful and deplorable slow poisons, deceptively called "**vaccinations and immunizations**," *made from the precious little bodies of aborted millions!* This mass-genocide of the "heretic and liberal" American people, carried out by the Order's **American Medical Association** in conjunction with its **Food and Drug Administration** and the **CDC**, has created a nation of "**the walking wounded**." In the words of **Abate Leone**, "this secret war," relentlessly waged against our "heretic and liberal nation" for the last one hundred years, having slowly but surely fattened, sickened, weakened, polluted, agitated, divided and disarmed us, has further enabled our unified, healthy and physically fit **Russian, Moslem, Chinese and Mexican** invaders to *extirpate and exterminate us from the face of the whole earth!*

The **Council of Trent** and the **Jesuit Oath** of the **Fourth Vow** continue to be fulfilled as we remember a portion of the bloody Fourth Vow of the Professed Jesuit:

**“I do further promise and declare, that I will, when opportunity presents, make and wage relentless war, secretly or openly, against all heretics, Protestants and Liberals, . . . I will secretly use the poison cup . . . as I at any time may be directed so to do by any agent of the Pope or superior of the Brotherhood of the holy faith of the Society of Jesus.”** <sup>{26}</sup> [Emphasis added]



**Jesuit Provincial Thomas H. Smolich, 2002** <sup>#739</sup>  
**California Province of the Society of Jesus**

Jesuit Thomas H. Smolich, one of the ten Provincials overseeing the **Black Pope's** “Holy Roman” Fourteenth Amendment American Empire, is the Order’s most powerful, eagle-eyed, West Coast Jesuit. As all Provincials are Professed of the Fourth Vow, Smolich was the immediate master of former California Governor Gray Davis, a Knight of Columbus of the Fourth Degree. Remembering that the official position of the Jesuit Conference is the total abolition of gun ownership, Californians have now been legally disarmed of their “assault rifles” further rendering them unable to repel our coming Sino-Soviet-Moslem-Catholic Latino invasion. Having practiced in the Straits of Formosa, our Asian invaders will be transported by a combined Chinese and Russian merchant marine of over 2000 ships. With Los Angeles to be the beachhead, this attack will be successful unlike the Order’s attempted invasion of repentant, pro-Bible, Protestant England in 1588 using the **Papal Caesar's** Spanish Armada. The Protestant Reformation will be finished and we Americans will be raped, plundered and mass-murdered by foreign, marauding, pagan savages fulfilling the Order’s Bloody Oath.

*The Reno Gazette-Journal, Associated Press, March 2002.*



**Judyth Vary Baker, 2000** <sup>#740</sup>

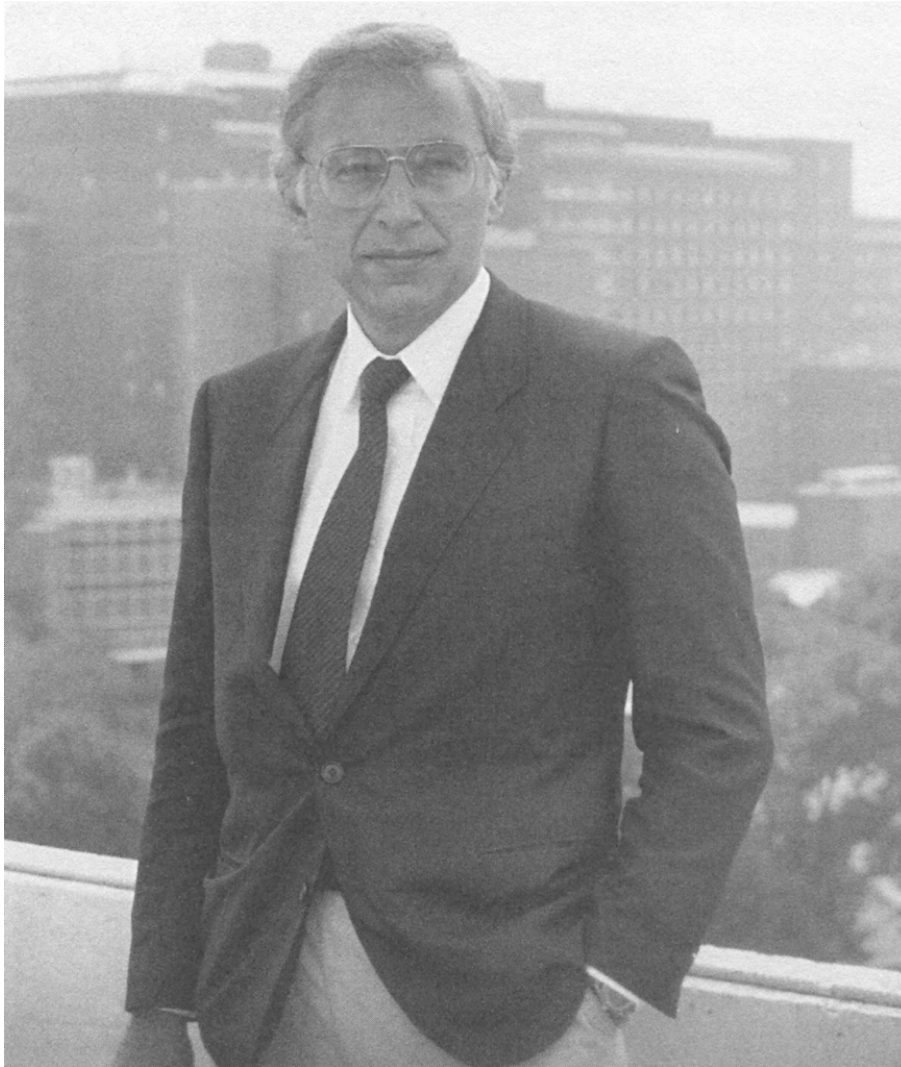


**Cancer Researcher Judyth Vary Baker, 1962** <sup>#741</sup>

Of all those involved in the bio-weapons research lab in New Orleans, Judyth is the sole survivor who has lived to tell the story. CIA assets Lee Harvey Oswald and David Ferrie were murdered, Dr. Mary Sherman's brutal death in 1964 has been ruled "an unsolved murder" by New Orleans police, and CIA/Nazi-fascist, Jesuit Temporal Coadjutor Dr. Alton Ochsner died of natural causes in 1981.

<http://www.spartacus.schoolnet.co.uk/JFKbakerJ.htm>





**Jesuit Temporal Coadjutor Dr. Robert C. Gallo, 1990s** <sup>#742</sup>

**Dr. Alton Ochsner was a Papal Knight, CIA asset, an obedient co-conspirator in the JFK assassination and thus was a recipient of one of the Order's highest awards, "Integritas Vitae," given by Loyola University of New Orleans in 1978. Even so Italian Roman Catholic Jesuit Temporal Coadjutor Dr. Robert Gallo is a Papal Knight, CIA asset, an obedient co-conspirator in the murder of millions of AIDS victims and thus a recipient of the Order's "Sword of Ignatius Loyola" awarded by Saint Louis University in 1988. Behind Gallo above is the infamous National Institutes of Health (NIH) in Bethesda, Maryland, where his power was supreme. Alleging that AIDS was caused by the HIV retrovirus apart from a depressed immune system, Gallo, in fact, was the creator of the AIDS virus in 1974 and hailed as its discoverer in 1984. After President Bill Clinton pardoned the Order's foremost molecular biologist for "scientific misconduct" in 1998, this Medical Grand Inquisitor continued his work "for the greater glory of God."**

*AIDS*, Peter Duesberg and John Yiamouyiannis, (Delaware, Ohio: Health Action Press, 1995) p. 16.

<http://www.wealth4freedom.com/truth/12/germs.htm>



### **New York City:**

#### **The Papal Caesar's Political Capital of the World**

**Ruled by the American Empire's Archbishop of New York, he  
Controlling New York's Council on Foreign Relations, it  
Erecting Dictators Around the World Loyal to the Pope of Rome, he  
Maintaining or Removing World Leaders with his CIA or his KGB/SVR**



**Mary Robinson, President of Ireland**  
**Professed Jesuit Joseph A. O'Hare, CFR President and**  
**President of Fordham University, 1994** <sup>#743</sup>



**Treasonous, Jesuit-controlled, CFR Advisors, 1999:** <sup>#744</sup>

**Masonic Cyrus R. Vance, former Secretary of State**  
**P2 Masonic/Knight of Malta Henry A. Kissinger, former Secretary of State**  
**P2 Masonic/Knight of Malta David Rockefeller, CFR President and**  
**the Black Pope's American International Banker who Replaced J. P. Morgan.**  
*Annual Report: Council on Foreign Relations*, (New York: The Harold Pratt House, 1994, p. 60; 1999, p. 54).

## **Chapter 50**

### **The Jesuits — Beyond 2007**

*Rome's American Empire: Economic Communism & Political Fascism*  
*Creating International Anti-Jewish Fury*  
*Creating International Anti-American Fury*  
*Waging the Pope's 21st Century Crusade Against Islam*  
*Depression, Anarchy, Race War, Right-Wing Fascist Martial Law,*  
*Two-Front Foreign War and Sino-Soviet-Moslem-Latino Invasion*  
*Destruction of the Empire's "heretic" Protestants, Baptists and Jews*  
*as well as "liberal" Catholics, Buddhists and Moslems Pursuant to:*  
*The Jesuit Conspiracy: The Secret Plan of the Order,*  
*The Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion,*  
*The Jesuit Oath and The Council of Trent*  
*"The Jew Room"*

"The Jesuits are the pioneers of Antichrist . . . If the members of the Society continue as they have begun, God grant that the time may not come when kings will wish to resist them, but will not have the means of doing so." <sup>{1}</sup> [Emphasis added]

**Melchior Cano, 1560**  
**Provincial Dominican Priest**  
**Personal Letter Written Two Days**  
**Before his Death**

"Also I swear from my heart, that . . . I will bear faith and true allegiance to His Majesty, his heirs and successors, and him and them I will defend to the uttermost of my power against all conspiracies and attempts whatsoever which shall be made against him or their persons. . . . and will do my best to endeavour to disclose and make known . . . all treasons and traitorous conspiracies, which I shall know of to be against him or any of them. *And I do further swear that I do from my heart abhor, detest, and abjure as impious and heretical this damnable doctrine and position — that princes, which may be excommunicated or deprived by the Pope, may be deposed or murdered by their subjects or any other whatsoever.* And I do believe and in my conscience am resolved that neither **the Pope** nor any other person whatsoever hath power to absolve me of this oath or any part thereof. . . . And these things I do plainly and sincerely acknowledge and swear, according to these express words by me spoken, and according to the plain and common sense and understanding of the same words; without any

equivocation or mental evasion or secret reservation whatsoever. And I do make this recognition and acknowledgement heartily, willingly, and truly, upon the true faith of a Christian. — So help me God.” {2}

[Emphasis added]

**Citizen’s Oath of Allegiance, 1606**  
**English Parliament in Response to**  
**The Gunpowder Plot of 1605**

**“You are in my custody as a magistrate, accused of abetting the foul, bloody and heathenish plot for the establishment of Popery, the murder of the king, and the general massacre of all true Protestants** [*as now plotted against all true Protestants, Baptists, racial and religious Jews, as well as all anti-communists and anti-fascists in the American Empire*].” {3}

[Emphasis added]

**“Bridgenorth the Calvinist”**  
**Freemason Sir Walter Scott, 1820**  
**Scottish Presbyterian Author**  
*Peveril of the Peak*

**“Ignatius Loyola . . . this degraded, ferocious Human Pig, one of the most perfect scoundrels . . . is the poison fountain from which all these rivers of bitterness that now submerge the world have flown. Where you meet a man believing in the salutary nature of falsehoods, or the divine authority of things doubtful, all fancying that to serve the Good Cause** [*in making the White Pope the Universal Monarch of the World*] he must call the Devil to his aid, there is a follower of Un-saint Ignatius. Not till the last of these men has vanished from the earth will our account with Ignatius be quite settled, and his black militia have got their ‘mittimus’ to chaos again.” {4}

[Emphasis added]

**Thomas Carlyle, 1880**  
**English Protestant Historian**  
**Defender of Oliver Cromwell**

**“The Jesuits laugh at us; and during their hilarity, the rattlesnake is coiled at our feet, climbing to strike us in the heart!”** {5}

[Emphasis added]

**Edwin A. Sherman, 1883**  
**American 33<sup>rd</sup> Degree Freemason**  
**Friend of our hero, Protestant Ex-Priest**  
**and Freemason, Charles Chiniquy**  
*The Engineer Corps of Hell*

“**The Jesuit Order**, therefore, stands before us as the embodiment of a system **which aims at temporal political domination through temporal political means**, embellished by religion, which assigns to the head of the Catholic religion—the **Roman Pope**—the role of a **temporal overlord**, and under shelter of **the Pope-King**, and using him as an instrument, **desires itself to attain the dominion over the whole world** [*when the Order’s Jesuit Pontiff becomes the absolute Universal Monarch of the World after his ‘deadly wound was healed’ (Revelation 13:3)*].” <sup>{6}</sup>  
[Emphasis added]

**Count Paul von Hoensbroech, 1911**  
**German Noble and Ex-Jesuit**  
*Fourteen Years a Jesuit*

“Whether you like it or not we are fast ripening for Roman Catholic Slavery. Much of the past relative to this has been removed from our History Books and the present generation, for a definite reason, **know very little how Rome controlled Western Europe for over 1000 years** and why our [*White, Northern European, Protestant and Baptist*] forefathers sought religious and political freedom by fleeing from Europe.

For some time there has been a pretense of **Communist** opposition to the **Catholics**, the press stressing this so as to keep the people in the dark, but the fact remains that they are working together for the overthrow of [*Biblical and historically anti-Jesuit*] Protestantism, [*free enterprise, anti-cartel corporate*] Capitalism, [*AV1611 Reformation Bible-based and anti-Papal Roman Catholic*] Christianity and [*Calvinistic*] free Government [*limited by a Bible-based, written Constitution*].” <sup>{7}</sup> [Emphasis added]

**Chester A. Murray, 1983**  
**Baptist Bible-Believer**  
*The Authorized King James Bible*  
*Defended*

“It can easily be seen that the identity of Jesuit political thought with the objectives of Nazi-Fascism makes it imperative to conceal it from the American public [*presently being accomplished by the ~~Black Pope’s~~ CFR-ruled, Fox News Network*]. Were it otherwise, **the Catholic Church would suffer complete loss of its prestige in the United States**—in the eyes of Catholics and non-Catholics alike.” <sup>{8}</sup> [Emphasis added]

**Leo H. Lehmann, 1944**  
**Irish American Ex-Priest**  
*Behind the Dictators*

**“PROTESTANTS! FREEMAN! AWAKE!”**

**ETERNAL VILIGANCE IS THE PRICE OF LIBERTY**

The American people, struggling with an open foe to their liberties, must not forget the insidious enemy secretly undermining them. On the 8<sup>th</sup> of December, 1864, Pope Pius IX issued his encyclical [*Quanta Cura, with its Syllabus of Errors*]. **Popery is the most gigantic system for the exercise and consolidation of power which the world has ever seen** [evidenced by the Pope's Fourteenth Amendment to the United States Constitution]. It [*the Roman Catholic Institution*] enforces its decrees, **both temporal and spiritual**, under the doom of damnation to those who disobey. In the encyclical every dogma of despotism is avowed by the apostolic see itself.

The right to inflict 'temporal penalties for the violation of sacred laws' is claimed. And what is that? History answers: **The Inquisition!** The *auto da fe*! Liberty of the press, liberty of conscience and of worship are called 'delirium,' and denounced as the 'liberty of perdition!' . . .

All there is of freedom in Germany, in Switzerland, in England, and in the United States is the fruit of the Reformation, and exists in spite of popery. **Protestantism and freedom stand or fall together.** Catholicism and despotism 'are one and inseparable [evidenced by the dictatorships of such notorious Roman Catholics as Adolf Hitler, Benito Mussolini, Francisco Franco, Juan Peron, Henri Pétain, Antonio Salazar and Fidel Castro as well as crypto-Catholics Josef Stalin and George H. W. Bush].'

This church cries out perpetually against secret societies, yet it does not hesitate to make itself a gigantic mass of secret organizations. **Their priests, bishops, and cardinals are an oath-bound secret society.** They carry on their secret work entirely on the maxim that the end justifies the means. **The Romish order of Jesuits is another secret organization, and their numbers in America no man outside of themselves knows. In the past they have been driven out of Italy, France, Portugal, Belgium, Germany, Austria, Venice, Brazil, and other countries, on account of their continually plotting against the government, and it must be remembered that these undesirable tools of Rome are in great numbers coming to this country [America] every year. The [bloody] oath which they take has been given in a previous chapter."** <sup>{2}</sup> [Emphasis added]

Hugh Montgomery, 1894  
American Protestant Preacher  
*Plain Talk About the  
Romanism of Today*

“This issue casts much needed light on the Domestic Axis of Evil, which is composed of the ‘reverends’ **AL SHARPTON**, **JESSE JACKSON** and **LOUIS FARRAKHAN** [*all of them being Black, high-level Freemasons*]. These apostles of hate are the spearhead of an insidious left-wing assault on America: . . . **LOUIS FARRAKHAN** is going around the country advocating a race war, . . . At the D.C. [Black] reparations hate-fest, the best selling T-shirts said, ‘You Owe Us’ and ‘Kill Whitey.’ Among the fanatically anti-American groups walking in [Communist] lock-step with FARRAKHAN’s anti-American Jihad at that rally were the [Masonic, Jesuit-controlled] **Revolutionary Communist Party** . . . FARRAKHAN’s followers are angry, fanatical and growing. Thanks largely to massive illegal immigration from Arab countries and FARRAKHAN’s aggressive recruitment of ‘people of color’ from prisons and ghettos, Islam is now the fastest growing religion in the United States [*mostly in the Catholic North and West, but not as much in the historic Protestant and Baptist South*]. . . .

**AL SHARPTON**’s . . . presidential campaign has transformed him into a public force of respectability for [*hateful*] black racism. . . . SHARPTON has injected himself into racially-divisive controversies in cities all over the U.S., although he is best known for the **TANWANA BRAWLEY** rape hoax, in which he polarized the country over a nonexistent white rape gang. . . . SHARPTON’s past racial transgressions were absolute taboo among the Democratic candidates for president when they held their many debates . . .

[CFR] **JESSE JACKSON** spearheads the left’s program to pry millions of dollars in racial reparations from corporate America. . . . From [CFR] Merrill Lynch to [CFR] General Electric, **JESSE JACKSON**’s ‘Rainbow Coalition’ [*supported by the Archbishop of New York*] reaps millions in corporate funding each year [*as the Black Pope’s CFR-controlled corporate elite willingly finance this heavily armed fifth column of anti-White, murder-inciting, hateful Black racists who are directing their attack against all “blond-haired, blue-eyed, White devils,” primarily the “White Anglo Saxon Protestants”*]. . . . JACKSON’s corporate support comes in spite of [*in fact, because of*] his cozy [Masonic] ties to terrorist enemies of the U.S. On a recent trip through the Middle East’s Gaza Strip, for example, JACKSON met with the founder of **Hamas**, a militant Islamic group [*as Sharpton has met with Islamic Freemason Yasser Arafat; as Farrakhan has met with Islamic Freemason Saddam Hussein as well as Cuba’s Jesuit-controlled Roman Catholic Freemason, Fidel Castro*].” <sup>{10}</sup>  
[Emphasis added]

Lee Bellinger, 2004  
American Journalist and Editor  
*The American Sentinel*

“**The Group’s** plan is to covertly foster and finance a **civil war on race lines** through their agents in **Black** and **Hispanic** ghettos in major cities. Once they are successful in gun control legislation **the Group** will ARM the minority insurgents with attack weapons [*at this moment via gun shows selling arms to alien invaders and domestic, convicted felons*] to be used against essentially weapon-less minority and non-minority [**White**] individuals. The local police departments will be out-gunned. The military will be called in, but will be unable to control the situation due to an artificial ‘breakdown in the chain of command.’ In the midst of societal chaos, after the [*race*] war begins, **the Group** will conduct systematic assassinations of key American civilian and military leaders who have not supported **the Group’s** policies or its key agents [*i.e., the Bush Crime Family*]. That list is referred to by my main informant and by the woman I first interviewed in 1983-84 as ‘all the king’s men.’ The civil [*race*] war fostered covertly by **the Group** will frighten ‘middle America [*the White Middle Class composed of Roman Catholics, apostate Protestants and Baptists*] into adoption of **the Group’s** government [*New Republican Right-wing, Jesuit fascism*]. . . . the Civil [**White/Black/Hispanic race**] War will be used by **the Group** as the excuse for genocide against the Black and Hispanic races [*betrayed into the Empire’s concentration camp system by their own Freemasonic leaders of the Black Nation of Islam and the Spanish Mexican-Latino MS-13 gangs secretly backed by Washington via the New York Archbishop’s Council on Foreign Relations*]. . . .

Canada has opened her doors wide to New World Order forces, including **GERMAN, RUSSIAN AND CHINESE**. As **Grant Jeffery** admitted to me personally one month ago, ‘we have MORE GERMAN MILITARY FORCES IN CANADA NOW THAN WE DO CANADIAN MILITARY FORCES!’ . . . The traitorous NWO elements within our own government are fully aware of the motives of these GERMAN NWO FORCES both in **Canada** and **America** and welcome their presence into the Western Hemisphere as part of the solution to subduing patriotic Americans who simply refuse to surrender national sovereignty to a foreign power.

**Russian and Chinese forces are also very active in Canada.** They are ‘re-building and strengthening railroad tracks for the anticipated heavy use of railway transportation of incoming military personal from the West Coast’ (both **Russian** and **Chinese** forces) as well as transporting military vehicles and armaments and food supplies. New tracks are also being laid between border states and [*Western, once White Protestant*] Canada. Those people who are arrested as resisters or dissidents will also be transported in pecially prepared prisoner boxcars to the death camps already established near the border, such as the one near Cut Bank, Montana. . . .

Incredibly, we now have information that **THE RUSSIANS HAVE FINALLY SUCCEEDED IN BRIDGING THE GAP BETWEEN SIBERIA AND ALASKA THROUGH A VAST UNDERGROUND TUNNEL!** The Bering Sea between **Alaska** and **Asia** [*Russia*] is UNDER one hundred miles wide at its narrowest point, so this would not be an inconceivable undertaking. **Although documented in more than one newspaper report in Western Canada**, THE AMERICAN NEWS MEDIA HAS REMAINED SILENT ON THIS FEAT. RUSSIAN CIVILIANS (???) ARE KNOWN TO BE COMING THROUGH THIS TUNNEL, ONE HUNDRED PER MONTH, PLUS HEAVY MILITARY ARTILLERY. . . . The extent of the American Government's (the corporate-fascist military-industrial 'government' as opposed to the Constitutional or electorate 'government') betrayal of her citizens can be further evidenced in the fact that these **Chinese** and **Russian forces** are RECEIVING PAYMENT FOR THEIR PRE-INVASION ACTIVITIES THROUGH THE INTERNATIONAL MONETARY FUND . . . ISSUED ON AMERICAN GOVERNMENT CHECKS.

In anticipation of the coming invasion from **Russia** and **China** (and **German—U.N. forces**, etc.), Canada has even gone so far as to disband its Western Coast Guard Division, thus they are open to **amphibious invasion of America from the West**. This was openly evidenced recently through the presentation of a documentary report over the BBC television in London which detailed amphibious assault forces practicing war maneuvers and strategy in the Formosa Straits. When BBC newsmen were permitted to interview these soldiers in training, they repeatedly asked them the following question. 'What are you preparing to use this training for?' The shocking, consistent reply was '**FOR THE COMING INVASION OF AMERICA!**' When it became clear that a gaff in security was created by airing this broadcast over television in England, its scheduled re-broadcast for the next day in London was hastily cancelled. . . .

If we are to believe all of the above, then there is in fact a **Machiavellian national/globalist socialist conspiracy** being jointly carried out by Corporate American and Cultic European '**Commu-Nazis**'—for want of a more descriptive term [*the Jesuits, in ordering their Hegelian dialectic, having authored and controlled—via Freemasonry—both Communism and Nazi Fascism, as these "extremes meet" in Rome*]. If the '**Bavarian Empire**' cults are attempting to implement a totalitarian national-socialist and/or global-socialist takeover in America as they did in Germany through **Adolf Hitler** and in Russia through **Vladimir Lenin**, then they must be preparing everything in advance. Having learned the mistakes of the last fascist '**Holocaust**' and communist '**Purge**,' they would be determined NOT to allow the **FINAL HOLOCAUST OR PURGE** to fail. . . .



They have already declared ‘war’ on American Patriots in no uncertain terms, even to the point of carrying out a coup d’etat on the Executive Branch of government in 1963 with the murder of **President John F. Kennedy**—who in essence gave an executive decree to ‘dismember’ this illegal, secret, and unconstitutional national-socialist/global-socialist government (exemplified by JFK’s order to ‘dismember’ the CIA), an order which has yet to be carried out in the U.S.” <sup>{11}</sup> [Emphasis added]

**“Branton,” 2000**  
**American Conspiracy Researcher**  
***The Omega Files: Secret Nazi***  
***UFO Bases Revealed!***

“Unlike the monarchs who rule Saudi Arabia and the Gulf States, **Islamist revolutionaries** [*being the “Sword of the Church”*] **believe in destroying the West** [*in accordance with the Order’s Counter-Reformation Council of Trent*], not necessarily trading with the West; they would have no compunction about devastating Western economies even at the cost of hundreds of billions of dollars in lost revenue [*to destroy the Jews*]. . . .

The deaths of more than three thousand people in the Pentagon, the World Trade Center, and Pennsylvania notwithstanding, the terrorists did not manage to inflict much long term damage through their September 11 attacks. . . . Our nightmare—**made more nightmarish because it is so plausible**—is that the next strike would consist of the **simultaneous detonation of multiple nuclear weapons** in many major cities in the United States such as **New York, Washington, Detroit, Seattle, Los Angeles, Chicago, Atlanta, Houston, New Orleans, and Miami.**

[*Dear truth-seeker, if I was the Jesuit General seeking to both incite and unite the peoples of the American Empire to “total war” against Islam, I would detonate several small nuclear devices in **Washington**, destroying national monuments such as the Statue of Liberty, the Washington Monument and the Jefferson and Lincoln Memorials. Detonating pre-placed nuclear weapons, installed by my united US and Soviet intelligence communities, would result in surgical blasts destroying capital buildings rendering representative government impossible, thereby enthroning a fascist military dictator. My half-Jewish, Hitlerite dictator would blame Iran or North Korea for the “nuclear attack,” while my nearby Georgetown Jesuits would remain his secret masters. In keeping with my usual agenda of annihilating racial Jewish communities, I would carefully nuke the cities hosting the largest outlying Jewish communities; **Los Angeles, northern Miami and Long Island, New York City.** The time for the detonations would be between July 1 and October 1, the sun’s orbit being in the right harmonic position with my Militia’s readied nuclear bombs.*]

The bombs would not have to be huge ‘city-busters.’ Weapons with even the relatively small yield of twenty kilotons and exploded on the ground . . . would produce catastrophic results in the target cities. . . . there would be grave damage to the country’s ability to govern itself, . . . If the bomb meant for **Washington** was set off in front of the **Library of Congress**, it would destroy **the Capitol** and the **Supreme Court**, pulverize many government offices, . . . and kill thousands of people vital to the proper functioning of government . . . At once, the country’s capital would be heavily damaged and largely abandoned by the government [*killing, in the words of JFK assassin—SMOM J. Peter Grace, Jr., “535 clowns”*].” <sup>{12}</sup>  
[Emphasis added]

**McInerney and Vallely, 2004**  
**Retired USAF & Army Generals**  
*Endgame*

“Indeed, in 1992 **Russia** [*built by the United States since the Bolshevik Revolution*] agreed to build a nuclear reactor for **Iran** at Bushehr for a cost of between \$800 million and \$1 billion. The Russians finished the Bushehr nuclear reactor in October 2004. . . . In 2004 and 2005, a series of top-level meetings were held by government leaders and energy ministers among **Russia, China, India, and Iran**. A framework of economic cooperation agreements was signed. Its purpose was for **Russia and Iran** to provide oil to **India and China**. [*Islamic*] **Pakistan** [*whose ISI has been built by the Pope’s American CIA*] was willing to see oil pipelines built across Pakistani territory to transport Iranian oil to India and China [*to fuel China’s huge navy for its future invasion of the “heretic and liberal” North American peoples*]. . . . A **Tehran-Moscow-Beijing axis** looked like it might be forming to protect Iran from US or Israeli preemptive military actions. . . .

Even if we characterize our war against Iran as a war of self-defense for ourselves and Israel, worldwide public opinion will most likely be against the United States [*creating more anti-American fury*]. A preemptive attack on Iran, especially following our war against the [*CIA-created and funded*] **Taliban** in Afghanistan and our preemptive attack against [*CIA-backed and armed*] **Saddam Hussein**, would bear heavy political consequences for the United States, not only in the [*Pope’s*] **Islamic world**, but also among many traditional allies as well [*also*]. In the extreme, an attack against Iran could backfire, causing an anti-America rise of Islamic unity across the globe—starting in Iran and cascading outward.” <sup>{13}</sup> [Emphasis added]

**Evans and Corsi, 2006**  
**American Roman Catholic Authors**  
*Showdown With Nuclear Iran*

“The *Year of the Rat* is about bribery, corruption, and foreign penetration of the American government at the highest levels—to an extent totally unprecedented. . . . the problem is worse than we could have imagined back in 1998, the corruption far deeper. . . . **COSCO delivers weapons for Chinese arms smugglers, . . . Is COSCO a threat to national security if given full control over one of the best harbors in the country?** That question is pertinent because COSCO could very well gain full control of the **Long Beach, California** port—thanks in large part to intervention from the White House itself. The [*Jesuit-controlled, CFR-manned Clinton*] administration has yet to give a satisfactory answer to this question.” <sup>{14}</sup>  
[Emphasis added]

*[Dear truth-seeker, COSCO is now subtly controlling the North American West Coast ports of Vancouver, Seattle, Portland, Oakland, Long Beach and Los Angeles. China’s Naval encirclement policy of the US extends to its control of the Panama Canal; to its dominance of the huge shipping port in the Bahamas; to its intelligence presence in Castro’s Cuba; to its Gulf Coast and East Coast ports; and to its commercial and strategic agreements with the Islamic nations of Mauritania and Senegal. China fully intends to use West African ports to transport millions of incited Moslems to Cuba for their final invasion of “the Great Satan” at the consummation of the Company’s Crusade against Islam, conquering North America’s historic White Protestant Reformation Western nations—Canada and the United States. Most revealing in this papal plot is that Knight of Malta Alexander M. Haig, Jr., whose brother, Francis, is a Jesuit priest, is a Senior Honorary Advisor to COSCO!]*

**Edward Timperlake, 2000**  
**Marine Corps Fighter Pilot**  
*Year of the Rat*

“The Soviet Union will also establish strong points in the Mediterranean, **in the Arab world**, and in the Indian Ocean. . . . They will expand their base on Cuba as a base for the ultimate war with the United States that may later come. . . . the Russian policy toward the United States will probably be one of delay [*during the so-called “end of the Cold War”*], while at the same time they consolidate their footholds. . . . Finally the Russians will make provision for the inclusion of **Red China** [*as a military ally*] in a Communist [*fascist*] world empire . . . [*and*] will then make their final dispositions for the ultimate clash with the United States of America.” <sup>{15}</sup>  
[Emphasis added]

**Reinhard Gehlen, 1972**  
**Nazi General; German BND Director**  
*The Service: The Memoirs of*  
*General Reinhard Gehlen*

**The Fourteenth Amendment** so altered the **Constitution** to the point that it created “the new republican constitution” spoken of in *The Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion*. The Jesuit Order, behind the new constitution, created the American Empire. In 1868, on the ruins of **George Washington’s** Calvinistic Republic, the Jesuits’ new “Holy Roman Empire of the West” was set up with its massive central government in Washington. Its national purpose would be to restore the **Temporal Power** of the Jesuits’ “*infallible*” Pope over every nation. Therefore, the Empire was made the financial and military colossus of the world using **J. P. Morgan**, their Federal Reserve Bank and the Great Depression. In subduing the nations, credit created out of nothing would be used to build tremendous war machines for the “extirpation of heretics and liberals.” This same Jesuit credit, called “foreign aid,” would be used to establish and finance the reign of dictators loyal to Rome over every nation, *including* the Labor Zionist, anti-Torah, pro-Talmudic government of Israel.

The economic policy of the Empire would be the destruction of small, independent, free enterprise businessmen and the consolidation of capital into the hands of Rome’s corporate monopolies (corporate fascism), while the people would be submitted to the ten pillars of *The Communist Manifesto* in exchange for *The Ten Commandments*. A central bank, from which comes all credit, along with a fiat, bogus currency, would replace state banks having distributed federally minted gold and silver coins. A progressive *income tax* on wages would invade the privacy of the people while replacing the individual *apportioned tax*. The wicked Social Security numbering system would keep track of all “taxpayers.” In fact, it would be the Vatican’s world government number by which **the Society of Jesus**, through its **NSA/FBI**, would track every citizen of the Empire. These two pillars alone would be enough to destroy the prosperous White Celtic-Anglo-Saxon Protestant Middle Class, while creating the feudal system of **the Dark Ages** composed only of the noble, super-rich, pro-Catholic Whites and the common, super-poor of all races and religions. *The Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion* say it clearly in Protocol number twenty:

“The concentration of industry in the hands of [*cartel*] capitalists out of the hands of small masters has drained away all the juices of the peoples and with them also the states [*i.e., national sovereignties*] . . .” {16}

Dear truth-seeker, do you see how the radical mass-emancipation of the Negro slaves after the War Between the States *was never intended* to benefit them but rather was calculated to destroy the private wealth of small, White “heretic” masters in the South? Historically speaking, Blacks *generally* only produce wealth when *trained* and/or *overseen* by Whites. Do you see how the **Fourteenth Amendment** enslaved both Whites and Blacks to the new master in Washington—**the Society of Jesus**? Is not the Archbishop of New York the real “massa” of **Bill Clinton**, **George W. Bush**, **Albert Gore** and **Jesse Jackson** (who is apparently to be replaced with another mulatto Black agitator, **Al Sharpton**), they being nothing more than his “altar boys”?

With the economic system of Communism in place, the political system of the Empire would be an absolutist military dictatorship of the president as “Commander-in-Chief,” for the purpose of “national security.” Protocol number ten spoke of this:

“We shall invest the president with the right of declaring a state of war [*i.e.*, *President Truman’s Emergency War Powers Act of December, 1950*]. We shall justify this last right on the ground that the president as chief of the whole army of the country must have it at his disposal in case of need for the defense of the new republican constitution . . .” <sup>{17}</sup>

That is **Pope Pius IX’s fascism**, pure and simple. The absolute Commander-in-Chief *is one* with **the Company’s** corporate monopolies run by the Knights of Malta. Remembering the words of the Jesuits as quoted by **Pierre van Paassen**,

“**Fascism** is the regime that corresponds most closely to the concepts of the Church of Rome.” <sup>{18}</sup> [Emphasis added]

It was **fascism** that terribly *persecuted the Protestants* of **Franco’s** Spain and **Mussolini’s** Italy. Additionally, it was **fascism** that deported Jews to Hitler’s death camps in Poland. In fact both **Hitler** and **Stalin**, the Grand Inquisitors, were Roman Catholic **fascists**. Nazism and Communism were simply smokescreens describing *socialist* economic systems. Both dictators were loyal to Rome’s Jesuits who put them in power, as they both murdered millions of Protestants, Orthodox and Jewish “heretics and liberals,” including many “liberal” Catholic priests and people. Dear truth-seeker, this is the coming scenario for the Protestants and Jews of the American Empire including historically Protestant Canada and French Roman Catholic Quebec. (If German Nazis invaded and occupied Roman Catholic Poland, American Nazis may well occupy Roman Catholic Quebec!) The President, since the **Emergency War Powers Act of 1950**, has been a **fascist military dictator** loyal to his Jesuit masters at Georgetown University. And with the passage of **King George Bush II’s** “Patriot Act,” fascism will further increase. The Jesuits will continue to advance their international “**Negro/Muslim Agitation**” (hatefully directed against the historically White Protestant nations of America, Canada, Northern Europe and South Africa) and incite international **anti-Semitism**, or more correctly, **anti-Jewish fury**. Much was ignited in the American Empire with the Israeli attack on the American spy ship “USS Liberty” in 1967, along with the conviction of **the Black Pope’s** Israeli spy, **Jonathan Pollard**. The Order’s united **International Intelligence Community**, including the **Mossad**, created both incidents. Anti-Jewish fury among both Whites and Blacks must be used to drive surviving American Jews back to Israel for the purpose of attempting to *kill them all there!* The means by which the Sons of Loyola will accomplish this plot is their **National Security Agency**—the NSA. We read:

“Its nickname is the ‘Jew Room’. Inside the National Security Agency is an intelligence center from which all American Jews are banned, regardless of their proven loyalty or devotion to country, just as the U.S. Navy banned

Jews from electronic surveillance ships, such as the *USS Liberty* . . . it is, and has been, the heart of the secret war against the Jews [orchestrated by Rome during its world wars of the 20<sup>th</sup> Century]." <sup>{19}</sup> [Emphasis added]

Remembering the words of **Loyola** in his *Secret Instructions of the Jesuits*,

“. . . our members will work themselves into the favor of persons in the highest part of government and consequently be admitted into their most secret councils [*the American National Security Council*],” <sup>{20}</sup>

is it not obvious the Jesuit Order rules “**The Jew Room**”? For in the words of ex-Irish American Jesuit **E. Boyd Barrett**:

“**In the Order hatred of the Jews is traditional** . . . it is forbidden to admit any one of Jewish descent into the Order [*from 1593 to the repeal of the statute in 1946*]. Japanese, Chinese, Indians and Negroes may be admitted into the Society of Jesus, but never, under any circumstances, a Jew [*except Albert and Auguste Valenstein, who were permitted to enter the Order in the early 1900s for the purpose of working with the Jesuit General’s early Masonic Jewish Labor Zionists including Theodor Herzl and later, Jerzy Kluger, boyhood friend of Pope John Paul II*]!” <sup>{21}</sup>

For **Ignatius** set the example:

“He [*Loyola, the heartless beast*] also obtained great honour from all classes for his zeal for the conversion of the Jews. His method was not original. He obtained a decree from the **Pope Paul III**, then reigning, that the Jews should not be allowed the services of a physician, no matter how serious might be their danger, unless they first accepted the ministrations of a priest . . .” <sup>{22}</sup> [Emphasis added]

Further, the Sons of Loyola, in seeking the destruction of the Sons of Israel during their international Diaspora, *always blame the Jews in general (instead of the Pope’s high-level, Masonic, Sabbatian Frankist, Roman “Court Jews” in particular)* for the wicked deeds the Order inflicts upon the nations, while they simultaneously accuse the Hebrew race of employing the very same **Counter-Reformation** tactics **the Company** utilizes. Ex-Jesuit **E. Boyd Barrett** adds the necessary details in driving this truth home to the heart of the reader in his 1935 masterpiece, *Rome Stoops To Conquer*. In chapter XII titled, “*The Jesuits and the Jews*,” we read:

“Owing to an early experience of a painful kind, which was all but disastrous to the Order, and which was due to a group of **Spanish Jesuits of Jewish descent**, who threatened to dismember the Order, the Jesuits as a body have conceived and fostered an intense animosity against the Jews. Never since the days of “the great storm,” as the Cardinal Toletus revolt was called, has anyone of Jewish blood or descent been admitted into the

Order [*until openly, in 1946*]. **Never since that day has the Order ceased to pursue vindictively the Jews.** The spirit of the Order can be gleaned from the extraordinary prayer of the greatest of Jesuit saints, **Francis Xavier**: “**Put me some place where there are no Jews or Moslems,**” cried Francis. [*Not only does the Order hate the Jews but it also hates the Moslem Arabs—the physical descendants of Ishmael. This fact throws further light on the Pope’s present CFR-directed, American and British-led Crusade against the Moslems of the Middle East and Central Asia.*] The present writer, who spent twenty years in the Jesuit Order, can recall no single occasion on which a word of praise for Jewish achievement or a word of sympathy for Jewish suffering was uttered by a Jesuit. . . . The Jesuits, in the days when they controlled every Catholic court in Europe, and when as an Order they were swollen with pride, were challenged by a like pride and a like intellectual intolerance by the Jew. **They could not break or bend the Jew.** They could convert, or seemingly convert, every type of human from Japanese to profligate Parisian, but they could make no headway in leading Israel into the fold of Mother Church. [*Notice that the Devil’s Jesuit Order uses the terms “Jew” and “Israel” interchangeably as does the Word of God!*] They ceased to look upon the Jew as “a lost sheep,” and identified him with an incarnate devil [*as did the Order’s SS-led, Roman Catholic Nazi Third Reich*], the sworn enemy of the Catholic. They hated the Jews because the Jews did not bow in homage before them.

**This tradition of hate and ill-will** has lasted through three centuries. In great part the Catholic ill-will against the Jew in Catholic European countries is due to Jesuit education. **Every movement against the Church, every development of Freemasonry, and Socialism** [*both movements having been secretly nurtured by occult agents of the Jesuit General*], every doctrine of heretical philosophy that has weaned intellectual Catholics from the true Faith **has been ascribed to Jewish machinations.** This tradition is still latent in Jesuit teaching, even in this country [**the Black Pope’s “Holy Roman” Fourteenth Amendment, Corporate-Fascist America**]. . . . So long as Jesuitism flourishes in this country there will prevail among Catholics distrust and animosity against the Jews. And were it not that Jesuit influence among Catholics in America is more limited than it is among Catholics of European countries, the distrust and animosity would be infinitely more serious and disturbing. . . .

In substantiating these statements I will confine myself to two recent writings of two prominent Jesuits, **Father Francis Xavier Murphy** and **Father Laurence K. Patterson.** Both writings were censored and passed by Jesuit superiors, and being such, bear the watermark of the authority of the Order. . . . **Here then is the Jesuit teaching about the Jew. . . .**

**Father Murphy** . . . adds: ‘What **the Jew** was in Holy Writ we may justly expect to find him down the ages’ . . . namely, ‘fierce and sensual beyond **the Aryan.**’ [*Notice this is the same anti-Jew, pro-White pagan, Aryan agitation with which the Company had imbibed and brainwashed Europe, beginning in the 1880s, which agitation later served as the holy pretext for the mass-extirmination of Eurasian Jewry by the Pope’s Nazi SS.*] . . .

Many Jews, students of law and medicine, attend the Jesuit Colleges of this country, and enjoy friendly relations with individual Jesuits. These young Jews have no means of knowing of the existence of **the three-century-old Jesuit animosity against their race and religion.** They may find it hard to credit its existence. But it is there and will be there until the end. **The mind of the Jesuit Order never changes. The heart of the Jesuit Order will never open or soften into brotherly feeling for the Jew.** . . .

**The Jesuits accuse the Jews** of being ‘meddlers’ and ‘troublemakers.’ The Jesuits were suppressed by **Pope Clement XIV** because they had meddled in every conceivable business from trade to politics, and their suppression [*and extinction*] was necessary ‘to restore tranquility to the Church.’ Clement said: ‘It was almost and indeed absolutely impossible for the Church to enjoy a true and solid peace while this Order existed,’ and referred (in his brief [**Papal Bull**] ‘**Dominus ac Redemptor**’) to ‘grave dissensions and quarrels rashly provoked by its members not without the risk of loss of souls and to the great scandal of the nations, against the bishops, the religious Orders, and about places consecrated to piety and also with communities of every kind in Europe, Asia and America.’

**The Jesuits accuse the Jews** of lowering the moral tone of nations [*as did the Pope’s Nazis accuse the Jews*]. Clement XIV complained that Jesuits employed ‘the use and interpretation of maxims which the Holy See deemed to be scandalous and evidently harmful to morality.’

**The Jesuits accuse the Jews** of ‘an uncanny power of acquiring an undue amount of wealth [*which accumulation is due to the LORD’s omnipresent preservation of his elect racial Hebrew people, He being ‘a little sanctuary’ (Ezekiel 11:16) to his covenant nation during the present time in which He said He would ‘sift the House of Israel among the nations’ (Amos 9:9).*]. Clement XIV condemned the Jesuits as ‘everywhere reproached with too much avidity and eagerness for earthly goods,’ which greed ‘exasperated many rulers of nations against it.’ The saintly Mexican bishop, the **Venerable Palafox** [*who later fled Mexico for his life and found safety in Rome*], had to complain to a previous Pope, **Innocent X**, about ‘the extraordinary skill with which the Jesuits make use of and increase



their **superabundant wealth**. They maintain public warehouses, cattlefairs, butcher-stalls and shops. **They lend out their money to usury and thus cause the greatest loss and injury to others** [*as does the Order's Federal Reserve Bank having financed every war for the last one hundred years, shackling the American taxpayer with perpetual debt*].'

**The Jesuits attack the Jews** for being clannish, aloof and for not amalgamating. Throughout their history the Jesuits have been notorious for their exclusiveness and for high-hatting other Orders and 'mere secular' priests. In fine, as against the various accusations that Jesuits make in an attempt to defame the Jews, we find the Pope writing: *'There is scarcely any kind of grave accusation that has not been brought against the Society [Society of Jesus]. . . . Numberless complaints backed by the authority of Kings and Rulers have been urged against these religious [the Jesuits] at the tribunals of [Popes] Paul IV, Pius V, and Sixtus V.'* . . . On the whole it comes badly from the Jesuits to attempt to promulgate anti-Semitism on the basis of charges that have been not only officially made, but believed and acted upon by the Supreme and Infallible Pontiff of the Roman Catholic Church when made against themselves. People in glass houses are foolish to throw stones.

Even though the Jesuits foresee that the Jew will stand opposed to the excessive aggrandizement of the Church in this country [like the Jews who were deliberately murdered on the Order's Deathship Titanic] they should try to understand that the Jew may be proving himself a sober, wise and courageous American citizen in so doing." <sup>{23}</sup> [Emphasis added]

The Jesuits will also continue to foster international anti-Americanism depicting the Empire as "**the Great Satan**" to the Arab world and as the "**NATO Nazi mass-bombing bully**" to the rest of the world. The Pope's crusades into Iraq and Yugoslavia have increased the nations' hatred for Americans, they not knowing that the Jesuit-CFR-controlled American government is also the brazen enemy of the us American people. Meanwhile, the Jesuits have furthered their quest to reduce the world to the universal rule of their "*infallible*" **Papal Caesar** from **Jerusalem**.

In **Fourteenth Amendment America** the Jesuit Order rules supremely, having no serious or significant adversaries. Ten Jesuit Provincials oversee the Empire through its **King**, the Archbishop of New York—**Edward Cardinal Egan**, he ruling from his palatial **St. Patrick's Cathedral**, while overseen by the Jesuits of **Fordham University**. The Cardinal exercises the Pope's **Temporal Power** over the Empire through his Knights of Malta, Knights of Columbus, Shriner Freemasonry, Opus Dei, the Club of Rome and the Mafia Commission, along with a host of other subordinate secret societies, they controlling the Archbishop's **Council on Foreign Relations**.

The Empire has two political parties controlled by the **Council on Foreign Relations**. The first is the **Democratic Party**, which is in fact “*the Communist Party*.” The second is the **Republican Party**, which is in fact “*the Fascist Party*.” (Forget the words “liberal” and “conservative” as they mean nothing!) Neither party wishes to “conserve” *the intent* of the Constitution; that would result in a truly “liberal” government! Neither party will return to *hard money*, abolish the *national bank* or erect a *real protective tariff*—the three essentials for national prosperity proven by **President Andrew Jackson**. As in Europe, the Fascist nations resisting “**godless Jew Communism**” all had Roman Catholic dictators subject to **Concordats** with the Pope. This is Rome’s present course for the doomed American Empire!

For fifteen years the former Archbishop of New York City, **John Cardinal O’Connor**, in using the Jesuit-inspired abortion agitation, built “the New Right” with his Knights and Dames of Malta. Of this fascist, right-wing movement seeking full control of the Republican Party, the leaders have been **Paul Weyrich**, **Lewis E. Lehrman**, **Phyllis Schlafly**, **Jerry Falwell**, **Pat Robertson**, **Rush Limbaugh** (who was married in 1994 by the Black Roman Catholic Papal Knight and Supreme Court Justice, **Clarence Thomas**), **Newt Gingrich** and the Black Roman Catholic and former U.S. Ambassador to the U.N., **Allen Keyes**. Backed by Kennedy assassins, Knights **Cartha DeLoach**, **Frank Shakespeare** and **William F. Buckley, Jr.**, their ultimate candidate for the presidency is another brother Knight of Malta, the Jesuit-trained **Pat Buchanan**. As Knight **Franz von Papen** used the Center Party to bring **Hitler** to power and as Knight **Joseph P. Kennedy** used the Democratic Party to bring **FDR** to power, so will the Knights, including **Richard Mellon Scaife**, use the **New Right Republican Party** to bring a Jesuit-controlled, Jew-hating, fascist dictator to power “*for the greater glory of God*”—the god who sits in “*St. Peter’s Chair*”!

When the time is right **the Black Pope** will give the order and the post **Protestant Reformation** American culture as we know it today *will be no more!* His **Masonic Shriners**, **Knights of Malta** and **Knights of Columbus** on Wall Street will cause an economic collapse resulting in the anarchy of an inner-city race war led by the **Black Nation of Islam**, the **Black Bloods** and **Crypts**. The **Constitution** will be suspended and fascist martial law will be declared by presidential executive order. America’s Commander-in-Chief will truly be a fascist dictator backed by the economic might of the Knights of Malta. In fulfilling *The Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion*, the **Jesuit Oath** and the **Council of Trent**, he, like previous fascist dictators, will make a treaty with Rome called a “**Concordat**.” The guns will be confiscated and the persecution of “heretics” will begin *in dead earnest!* Alaska will be the **American Siberia** run by Jesuit Inquisitors. Located in the southwest corner, there is a one-million acre “restricted area” complex to be used for brainwashing as well as bizarre and torturous experiments as part of **the Company’s** “relentless war” on all “heretics and liberals”—the Empire’s Protestant, Baptists, Jews and anti-fascist, anti-socialist-communist, pro-Constitution, patriotic, truly “liberal” conservatives.

This will ultimately give way to a two-front war—intended to be lost due to treason and betrayal by our commanders—and a foreign invasion. The invaders will be merciless Russian, Chinese, Moslem and Latin mercenaries, all controlled by the Jesuit General. The movie *Red Dawn* is an attempt to illustrate the planned invasion. America’s paganized, demoralized, feminized and mongrelized White sons of noble sires with ear rings and tattoos all over their bodies—presently the largest consumers of pornography, illicit drugs and Black “rap music”—will be the internationally hated target. America’s White Protestants and Baptists will be mass-murdered, raped and plundered, for we have departed from **the Bible** of the great English Reformation—**The Authorized King James Version of 1611**. We apostate and degenerate White American believers, refusing to **abide in Christ** have become “*good for nothing*” and will be gathered by evil men and cast into the fire of persecution “*to be burned*.”

*“If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch,  
and is withered; and men gather them,  
and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.”*

**Jesus the Messiah**  
– *John 15:6*

Our hatred of **Calvinism**—which includes the righteous use of the “**Sword of Just Defense**”—has doomed us to Papal political rule. Our love for the Jesuits’ unbiblical, free-will, false gospel, rightly described by the Order as the “**sovereign drug of Arminianism**,” has resulted in no godly resistance to Rome’s fascist tyranny: we will pay with brutal and torturous deaths. “Heretic” Jews and “liberal” Roman Catholics will meet the same fate as they did during the Order’s Spanish Civil War in the 1930s.

Meanwhile, the “**Great Whore**” in Rome—the **Vatican’s Papal Caesar** and **Senatorial Hierarchy** overseen by the **Black Pope** and his “**Fiery Jesuits**”—will experience orgasmic delight as she once again becomes “*drunken with the blood of the saints*” (*Revelation 17:6*) pursuant to the inquisitional **Jesuit Oath** and heretical **Council of Trent**. **Bible-believing** truth-seeker and **brother-in-Christ**, is this what you want for your beloved country, church and family? All this is coming because we did not timely resolve the assassination of **President Kennedy**. The infant that killed him has now become a Frankenstein monster and we, the American people, are like the “*children of Israel*” in the days of **Isaiah the Prophet**:

*“But this is a people robbed and spoiled;  
they are all of them snared in holes, and they are hid in prison houses:  
they are for a prey, and none delivereth; for a spoil and none saith, Restore.  
. . . for they would not walk in his ways,  
neither were they obedient unto his law.”*

– *Isaiah 42:22-24*



**Masonic Protestant Skull and Bones President George W. Bush**  
**Holding Hands with Masonic Islamic Saudi Crown Prince**  
**Abdullah bin Abdul Aziz, France, 2003** <sup>#745</sup>

Coadjutors Bush and the Crown Prince are at the Hotel Royal in Evian, enjoying fond memories of 9/11 and their cooperation in fighting the “War on Terror.”

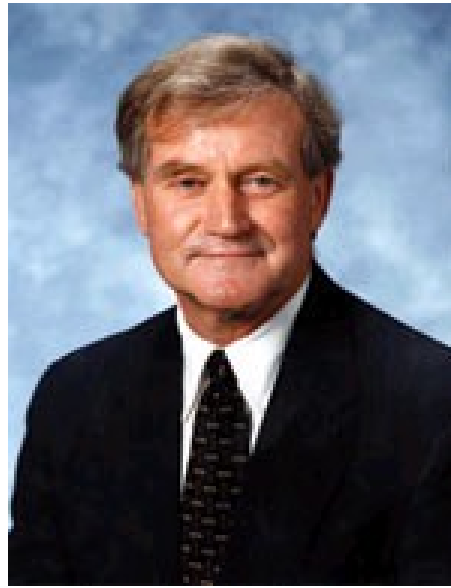
*Understanding the Times – Volume One: How Satan Turned America Against God*, William P. Grady, (Knoxville, Tennessee: Grady Publications, Inc., 2005).



**President Bush with Prince Bandar, Crawford, Texas, 2002 #746**

Here we see the utter familiarity and comradery between two brother Masons serving the ~~Black Pope~~. Prince Bandar bin Sultan bin Abdul Aziz, the Order's Saudi ambassador to America, was intricately involved in the 911 mass-murder of Americans while serving as the liaison between the Bush White House and King Fahd. Saudi Arabia provided 15 of the 19 alleged "hijackers," the plot serving as a diversion away from the real masters behind the demolition of the World Trade Center. ~~The Company's~~ CIA asset and Saudi royal prince behind Al Qaeda was Osama bin Laden, whose family had been in business with the Bush Crime family for over 20 years. Thus we understand that the Jesuits, using Cardinal Egan's Knight of Malta DCI George J. Tenet, imploded the WTC and then, using S&B President Bush, blamed the "Moslem terrorists" for the CIA's remote controlled aircraft slamming into the WTC and Pentagon. As in the Pope's Second Thirty Years' War and Cold War, both "sides" are now being coordinated by Rome. After building Saudi Arabia and arming Egypt, Libya, Iran, Iraq, and Turkey during the last 70 years, the Islamic world is now poised to wage its "jihad" against the people of "the Great Satan." Russia and China, America's impotent Cold War enemies, were also armed by the CFR ruling Washington, and are now formal allies with Islamic countries. After invading the US, Russia will later attack Israel aided by those Moslem nations (*Ez. 38:8*). America has armed the very nations that will attack Israel in "*the last days*."

*Understanding the Times – Volume One: How Satan Turned America Against God*, William P. Grady, (Knoxville, Tennessee: Grady Publications, Inc., 2005).



**Knight of Malta John C. Gannon (1944 – Present), 2000 <sup>#747</sup>**

This Irish-American Roman Catholic is one of the Empire's five most powerful intelligence masters. Receiving a B.A. in Psychology from the Order's College of the Holy Cross in 1966, Gannon joined the Jesuit Volunteer Corps to teach in Jamaica, finishing in 1967. Receiving a doctorate in History from Washington University (adjacent to the Order's St. Louis University) in 1976, he joined the CIA enjoying a 24-year career (1977-2001) subject to DCIs SMOM William J. Casey and SMOM George J. Tenet. Becoming Deputy Director for Intelligence (1995-97), this Temporal Coadjutor supervised all CIA analysts and oversaw preparation of the "President's Daily Brief." As Chairman for the National Intelligence Council, Gannon coordinated analysis of 11 intelligence agencies making him a prominent architect in the "911 Demolitions" and subsequent inauguration of Cardinal Egan's "War on Terror." Ominously, Gannon became one of the masterminds establishing the ~~Black Pope's~~ American Gestapo, the 180,000-member Department of Homeland Security (2002) creating, in Gannon's words, "the architecture for domestic intelligence."\* Absorbing 22 federal agencies, including FEMA, the Coast Guard and Secret Service, the DHS will be the Empire's Holy Office of the Inquisition. A CFR member having received the highest awards from the CIA, NSA, DIA, Secret Service, State Department and the President's National Security Medal as well as Holy Cross College's Ignatius Award (1996) and Sanctae Crucis Award (2002), he is a director at Jesuit Woodstock Theological Center, Georgetown University, serving also as an adjunct professor teaching in the National Security Studies Program. A dear friend of University President CFR/SMOM John DeGioia, Dr. Gannon is the exact parallel of Dr. Richard Korherr, Himmler's foremost SS/SD analyst. The Jesuit now works with huge corporations within the military industrial complex.

Photo forwarded to the Author by an Internet Researcher.

\*Statement of John C. Gannon, U.S. Senate Committee on the Judiciary, "FBI Oversight," 2 May 2006.





#748



#749

**Former KGB/SVR Director, Yevgeny M. Primakov (1929 – Present), 2000**

**Former SSD/Stasi Director, Jewish Marcus Wolf (1923 – 2006), 2000**

**Both of these Communist Inquisitors have worked for American Intelligence.**



#750



#751

**Sec.; Dept. of Homeland Security, Jewish SMOM Michael Chertoff, 2006**

**Professor of Law; Georgetown University, Viet D. Dinh, 2006**

President Bush appointed Jewish Federal Judge Chertoff to lead the Department of Homeland Security after Roman Catholic Tom Ridge's departure, the Order continuing its policy of using Masonic "Court Jews" to direct its Soviet-styled intelligence agencies. Chertoff would enforce the wicked Patriot Act, co-written with Georgetown University Law professor, Viet D. Dinh. The act had been written before 911 and was passed unread by an intimidated U.S. Congress.

[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Yevgeny\\_Primakov](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Yevgeny_Primakov); [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Markus\\_Wolf](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Markus_Wolf)  
[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Michael\\_Chertoff](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Michael_Chertoff); [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Viet\\_Dinh](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Viet_Dinh)



**Peter-Hans Kolvenbach, 1995** <sup>#752</sup>

**Twenty-Ninth Superior General of the Society of Jesus, 1983 – Present,  
with his Criminal, Seven-Member, Cosmopolitan General Council**

**“A consultative council is imposed on him by the general congregation [which, composed of professed Jesuits of the Fourth Vow, elected the General] of six persons [and a token Black Jesuit now being the seventh], whom he may neither select, nor remove,—namely, four [now five, but according to “The Pope’s Commandos” (The Saturday Evening Post, January 17, 1959) there were nine] assistants, each representing a nation [now, a group of nations called an “Assistancy”], an admonisher or advisor (resembling the [likes] of a military commander) to warn him of any faults or mistakes, and his confessor [to absolve him of his many sins]. One of these must be in constant attendance on him . . . he may yet be suspended [for heresy] or deposed [like Pedro Arrupe in 1981] by its authority.”**

**Dear truth-seeker, Satan’s greatest and most powerful servants are always the most intellectual, Bible-rejecting members of the White Gentile Race. These are the men who have robbed, spoiled and made us Americans for a prey, presently betraying us into the hands of our future Sino-Soviet-Moslem-Latino invaders. Against these devils, dear seeker, will you be valiant for the truth in the earth?**

**Jesuits: A Multibiography**, Jean Lacouture, (Collegeville, Minnesota: The Liturgical Press, 1995).

**Occult Theocracy**, Lady Queenborough, (South Pasadena, California: Emissary Publications, 1980; originally published in 1933) p. 310.





**The Black Pope, Peter-Hans Kolvenbach, 2000 #753**

Visiting the Jesuit Center in Wernersville, Pennsylvania, very few people could even dream of the vast and ubiquitous POWER this singular and unassuming man possesses. This Dutch Luciferian Satanist, the High Priest and Military Commanding General of the most powerful, wealthy, disciplined, educated and fanatical army in the history of man, rules the world with the aid of his five assistants, one advisor and one confessor. Once pronounced, there are no appeals from his decrees. His soldiers, including the Knights of Malta, Shriner and P2 Freemasonry, Opus Dei, the Club of Rome, the Illuminati, the Knights of Columbus and the Mafia, these groups commanding a host of lesser international subordinates, rule the American, European, Moslem, Russian and Chinese Empires. His great POWER, ruling over the leaders of the nations on both sides of his 21<sup>st</sup> Century Crusade, has been given to him on behalf of Rome's coming Eighth King, Jerusalem's future risen Papal Caesar, by "*the prince and power of the air*," formerly called "*Lucifer*" who is "*the god of this world*," known as "*the Devil*" or "*the Dragon*" and addressed as "*Satan*" by the risen Son of God,

**Yeshua the Messiah, the Lord Jesus Christ.**

*A House of Bread: The Jesuits Celebrate 70 Years in Wernersville, Pennsylvania*, Kathy M. Scogna, (Wernersville, Pennsylvania: Kathy M. Scogna, 2000) p. 8.

## **Conclusion**

*A Call to Individual and Ecclesiastical Repentance*

*Godly Resistance to Tyranny*

*The Bible-Believing, Anti-Papal Church and the Sword of the Spirit*

*Constitutional Limited Government and the Sword of Just Defense*

*Expulsion of the Jesuit Order; Closing of Illuminati-Masonic Lodges*

*The Prayer of Faith and a WASP Calvinist Call to Arms*

*Expatriation or Secession: Creating a New White, Reformation Bible-Based,*

*English-Speaking, Anti-Jesuit/Masonic Nation Within North America:*

*Freedom of Conscience, Speech, Press, Science, Private Business;*

*Racial Jews Given Residence, Jew/White Gentile Marriage Banned*

“Father Rector, let not the damp of astonishment seize upon your ardent and zealous soul, in apprehending the sodaine and unexpected calling of a Parliament [*by England’s Jesuit-controlled King Charles I*]. We have now many strings to our bow. **We have planted that sovereign drugge Arminianisme** [*the teaching that all unsaved men have an absolute free to believe on **Christ** rather than **God the Father** giving “the faith” to his elect “to believe” on Christ*] which we hope will purge the Protestants from their heresie. . . . I am at this time, transported with joy, to see how happily all instruments and means, as well as lessor, co-operate unto our purposes. But, to return unto the maine fabricke:— Our foundation is Arminianisme. **The Arminians and projectors, as it appears in the premises, affect mutation.** This we second and enforce by probable arguments.” <sup>{1}</sup>  
[Emphasis added]

**An English Jesuit, 1628**

**A letter in the possession of Archbishop**

**William Laud to be sent to**

**the Jesuit General in Brussels**

***The Works of Augustus Toplady***

“. . . I am, and have been, inclined to limit the use of carnal arms to the case of necessary self-defense, whether such regards our own person or the protection of our country against invasion; or of our rights of property, and the freedom of our laws and of our conscience, against usurping power.” <sup>{2}</sup>  
[Emphasis added]

**“Bridgenorth the Calvinist”**

**Freemason Sir Walter Scott, 1820**

**Scottish Presbyterian Author**

***Peeveril of the Peak***

“Princes and persons of distinction everywhere must, by all means be so managed that we may have their ear, and that will easily secure their hearts: by which way of proceeding, **all persons will become our creatures, and no one will dare to give the Society the least disquiet or opposition** [*as it is among the religious leaders, politicians, and professionals in the Pope’s “Holy Roman” Fourteenth Amendment America of today*] . . . **Finally, the Society must endeavor to effect this at least, that having gotten the favor and authority of princes** [*every American President from Grover Cleveland (1885) to George W. Bush (2007)*], **those who do not love them at least fear them** [*for which reason NOT ONE American statesman or politician has dared to contact the author of Vatican Assassins: ‘Wounded In The House Of My Friends’*].” <sup>{3}</sup> [Emphasis added]

**Ignatius Loyola, 1540**  
**Founder, 1<sup>st</sup> Jesuit General, 1540-1556**  
*Secret Instructions of the Jesuits*

“**Protestantism**, a giant in its infancy, standing in a menacing attitude, **with the Bible in one hand and the sword in the other**, bid defiance to the impugnors of the **Sacred Volume**.” <sup>{4}</sup> [Emphasis added]

**G. B. Nicolini of Rome, 1889**  
**Protestant Italian Patriot**  
**Exiled to England**  
*History of the Jesuits*

“**Ignatius Loyola came forward and must have said in substance to the Pope: . . . ‘but we, the Jesuits, will capture the colleges and universities. We will gain control of instruction in law, medicine, science, education, and so weed out from all books of instruction anything injurious to Roman Catholicism. We will mold the thoughts and ideas of youth. We will enroll ourselves as Protestant preachers and college professors in the different Protestant faiths. Sooner or later, we will undermine the authority of the Greek New Testament of Erasmus and also those Old Testament productions which have dared to raise their heads against the Old Testament of the Vulgate and against tradition. And thus will we undermine the Protestant Reformation** [*which has now been accomplished due to the abandonment of the 1611 Bible*].’ ” <sup>{5}</sup>  
 [Emphasis added]

**Benjamin G. Wilkinson, 1930**  
**American Protestant Theologian**  
*Our Authorized Bible Vindicated*

“In 1862, a Jesuit priest, the **Rev. F. X. Weninger**, made what he chose to designate ‘an appeal to candid Americans,’ on the subject of ‘*Protestantism and Infidelity*,’ which is the offensive title to his book. He represented himself as having been engaged for thirteen years ‘as a Catholic missionary throughout the United States,’ and, consequently, as having had extraordinary opportunities of observing the character and habits of our Protestant population, as well as having become familiar with the working of our institutions. These facts were stated, of course, to give weight and authority to his opinions; for while he professed to be addressing Protestants, but few of whom would see his book, he was, **with true Jesuit cunning**, really addressing the members of his own church, with the design of convincing them that Protestantism is already a failure, so as to stimulate them to renewed activity in their exertions to repress and exterminate it.

He scarcely enters upon his subject before announcing that ‘*Protestantism is ending in the desolation of heathenism*,’ that is, that we, in this country, are fast becoming paganized, as the result of our total want of religion or of any religious convictions. Then, in contrast to this alarming condition into which we have been plunged by our infidelity, he points us to **Roman Catholicism** as furnishing the only means of making us acquainted, personally, with Christ [*as there is no salvation outside his Church*]. He says: ‘The **real presence** of Jesus Christ [*the magical Latin words of the priest converting a cookie into the real body of Rome’s Jesus Christ*] makes a heaven of every Catholic Church on the whole earth,’ for there he can be conversed with ‘face to face,’ every day and every hour. He blasphemously insists that ‘in holy communion Jesus enters our interior, really and substantially, body and soul;’ and that **Protestantism**, having robbed us of all this consolation, has left us ‘**no better off than infidels and Jews**.’ . . .

As if he were an oracle whose opinions were not to be questioned, he says, ‘**Protestantism leads to despair, because it denies free-will**.’ That it is ‘a religion of immorality [when in fact Roman Catholic nations have always been more immoral than Protestant nations].’ That it is ‘a religion of disorder and despotism [when in fact Roman Catholic governments, when unaffected by Protestant maxims, always produce despots subservient to the Jesuits].’ That it is ‘a religion of blasphemy [when the doctrines of Rome, as compared with the doctrines of the Reformation Bible, are complete blasphemies, such as the “infallibility of the Pope”].’ That it ‘came from licentious, apostate priests and monks, and from despotic, licentious sovereigns [when in fact Rome’s licentious priests and despotic sovereigns ruled by cruel Popes produced the world’s political and spiritual midnight]. That it ‘is dead [when in fact Romanism is dead to the extent that its priests extort money from governments for the support of their dead Church].’

### Conclusion

*That it cherishes ‘a reckless disposition to calumniate [when in fact the Jesuit priests are the greatest false accusers and vindictive calumniators who ever drew a breath].’ That ‘modern civilization does not spring from Protestantism [which is, in fact, a bold-faced lie, the Modern Era having begun with Protestant martial victories ending Rome’s First Thirty Years’ War (1618-1648)].’ And that infidelity is the ‘last logical consequence of Protestantism [which is tacitly absurd, as infidel Roman Catholic France, having massacred her Protestant Calvinist Huguenots, produced the French Revolution culminating in a military dictator (Napoleon I) and subsequent absolute monarch (King Louis XVIII) in contradistinction to the ~~1611~~ Bible-reading, Protestant English Colonies producing the Calvinist American Revolution and a limited Constitutional government].’*

All the counts of this formidable indictment are so drawn as to display the skill and ingenuity of a criminal prosecutor; of one who has had experience in all the formalities of arraignment. . . . He made his real object, however, more apparent as he proceeded; and, in the midst of an enumeration of ‘Protestant prejudices,’ which he felt it his duty to overcome, he expressed his pent-up feelings in these words:

**‘One of the most glorious enterprises for the Catholic Church to engage in at this day is the conversion of the United States to the Catholic faith [Jesuit Arminianism leading to covert, Jesuit political rule].’**

Now, if the consummation of this object were sought for in the field of fair discussion . . . But no such **liberal idea** as this finds any place in the mind of this author, **or of any other Jesuit**, or of any of those who submit to their dictation. From such men liberalism finds no quarter. They exhibit nothing higher or nobler than that supercilious air of imagined superiority, which roots out every generous faculty of the mind, and leaves its possessor an object of mingled pity and contempt. Thus impressed, and fearing that he would fail in rallying the militia of the Church to the support of the papacy if he did not speak plainly in defense of **the temporal sovereignty of the pope over the whole world**, this infatuated Jesuit thus declares:

‘In the ceremonies for the installation of a new pope, he is addressed in these words: “Noveris te urbis et orbis constitutum esse rectorum. **Remember that thou art placed on the throne of Peter as the RULER of Rome and the world.**” ’ ’ ’ <sup>{6}</sup> [Emphasis added]

**Judge Richard W. Thompson, 1876**  
**Protestant 33<sup>rd</sup> Degree Freemason**  
**Ex-Secretary, American Navy, 1877-1881**  
***The Papacy and the Civil Power***

“There is a conspiracy against Christendom. . . . But who are Satan’s agents in this conspiracy? **The “agents” are the Jesuits.** Even though the Jesuits exude vast influence and control in the areas of theology, education, recorded history and current media [*through the Order’s CFR*], I am still perplexed that virtually no literature exists exposing the Jesuit’s influence on mainline Protestantism. . . . In this work, the author uncovers forgotten history regarding the cooperative salvation theology of the Jesuits. . . . From **Cain to Charles [G.] Finney**, this book proves that modern Protestantism has abandoned the Doctrines of Grace and embraced the [Satanic] doctrines of cooperative salvation [*Arminianism, i.e., “Asking Jesus into your heart” upon “making a decision for Christ,” thus being led to pray “the sinner’s prayer” after which all participants are pronounced “saved,” having the “forgiveness of sins,”—this ritual producing the same exact effect as if the preacher was a priest in a Roman confessional*].” <sup>{2}</sup> [Emphasis added]

**Michael Bunker, 2002**  
**American Reformed Pastor**  
*Swarms of Locusts:*  
*The Jesuit Attack on the Faith*

*“Upon what meat doth this our Caesar feed,  
 That he is grown so great? . . .  
 Till then, my noble friend, chew upon this:  
 Brutus had rather be a villager  
 Than to repute himself a son of Rome  
 Under these hard conditions as this time  
 Is like to lay upon us.”* <sup>{8}</sup>

**Edward de Vere, 1590**  
**17<sup>th</sup> Earl of Oxford**  
 Alias “William Shakespeare”  
*Julius Caesar, Act I, Scene II*

*“And he said unto them, When I sent you without purse, and scrip,  
 and shoes, lacked ye any thing? And they said, Nothing.  
 Then said he unto them,  
 But now, he that hath a purse, let him take it,  
 and likewise his scrip: and he that hath no sword,  
let him sell his garment, and buy one.”*

**Jesus the Messiah**  
 – *Luke 22:35, 36*

## Conclusion

With the dilemma that we **Bible-believing** Protestant and Baptist Americans find ourselves in, what shall we do? With **the Society of Jesus** having poisoned our bloodstreams with their “vaccinations and immunizations;” mutilated us with their unnecessary surgeries; drugged us with their “medications;” and now ready to “slit our throats from ear to ear” using a fascist dictator ultimately bringing upon us invading foreign armies, to whom shall we turn? The **Word of God** tells us:

*“If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves,  
and pray, and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways;  
then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin,  
and will heal their land.”*

– II Chronicles 7:14

*“If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins,  
and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.”*

– I John 1:9

Historically, the **Lord’s** elect people, Israel, as well as true **Bible-believing** Churches, have indeed repented in the past. A classic example was the Presbyterian Church of Scotland. *The Solemn League and Covenant with an Acknowledgment of Sins, and Engagement to Duties by all Ranks* was agreed upon by Parliament in 1649. Remembering that one of our heroes, **Oliver Cromwell**, was about to behead the Jesuits’ duplicitous and covenant-breaking **King Charles I** of England, and that the **Protestant Holocausts** in Germany and the Netherlands had formally ended only months before the setting forth of this astounding declaration, we read:

“We Noblemen, Barons, Knights, Gentlemen, Citizens, Burgesses, Ministers of the Gospel, and Commons of all sorts, in the kingdoms of **Scotland, England and Ireland**, by the providence of **GOD**, living under one King, and being of one reformed religion, having before our eyes the glory of **GOD**, and the advancement of the kingdom of our Lord and Savior **JESUS CHRIST**, the honour and happiness of the King’s Majesty and his posterity, and the true publick liberty, safety, and peace of the kingdoms, wherein every one’s private condition is included: **And calling to mind the treacherous and bloody plots, conspiracies, attempts, and practices of the enemies of GOD, against the true religion and professors thereof in all places**, especially in these three kingdoms, ever since the reformation of religion; and how much their **rage, power, and presumption** are of late, and at this time, increased and exercised, whereof the deplorable state of the church and kingdom of **Ireland**, the distressed estate of the church and kingdom of **England**, and the dangerous estate of the church and kingdom of **Scotland**, are present and public testimonies; we have now at last, (after

other means of supplication, remonstrance, protestation, and sufferings), **for the preservation of ourselves and our religion from utter ruin and destruction**, according to the commendable practice of these kingdoms in former times, and the example of **GOD’S** people in other nations, after mature deliberation, resolved and determined to enter into a mutual and solemn **League and Covenant**, wherein we all subscribe, and each one of us for himself, with our hands lifted up to the **Most High GOD**, do swear,

**I. That we shall sincerely, really, and constantly, through the grace of GOD, endeavor, in our several places and callings, the preservation of the reformed religion in the Church of Scotland, in doctrine, worship, discipline, and government, against our common enemies . . .** Albeit we be the Lord’s people, engaged to him in a solemn way; yet to this day we have not made it our study, that judicatories and armies should consist of, and places of power and trust be filled with, **men of a blameless and Christian conversation, and of known integrity, and approved fidelity, affection and zeal, unto the cause of God**; but not only those who have been neutral and indifferent, but disaffected and malignant, and others who have been profane and scandalous, have been intrusted: by which it hath come to pass, **that judicatories have been the seats of injustice and iniquity; and many in our armies, by their miscarriages, have become our plague, unto the great prejudice of the cause of God, the great scandal of the gospel, and the great increase of the looseness and profanity throughout all the land. It were impossible to reckon up all the abominations that are in the land; but the blaspheming of the name of God, swearing by the creatures, profanation of the Lord’s day, uncleanness, drunkenness, excess and rioting, vanity of apparel, lying and deceit, railing and cursing, arbitrary and uncontrolled oppression, and grinding of the faces of the poor by landlords, and others in place and power, are become ordinary and common sins; and besides all these things, there be many other transgressions, whereof the lands wherein we live are guilty.** All which we desire to acknowledge and to be humbled for, that the world may bear witness with us, **that righteousness belongeth unto God, and shame and confusion of face unto us, as appears this day . . .**

And, because these kingdoms are guilty of many sins and provocations against **GOD**, and his **SON, JESUS CHRIST**, as is too manifest by our present distresses and dangers, the fruits thereof; we profess and declare, before **GOD** and the world, our unfeigned desire to be humbled for our own sins, and for the sins of these kingdoms; especially, **that we have not as we ought valued the inestimate benefit of the gospel; that we have not laboured for the purity and power thereof; and that we have not**

### Conclusion



endeavored to receive CHRIST in our hearts, nor to walk worthy of him in our lives; which are the causes of other sins, and transgressions so much abounding amongst us: and our true and unfeigned purpose, desire, and endeavour for ourselves, and all others under our power and charge, both in publick and in private, in all duties we owe to GOD and man, to amend our lives, and each one to go before another in the example of a real reformation; that the Lord may turn away his wrath and heavy indignation, and establish these churches and kingdoms in truth and peace. And this Covenant we make in the presence of ALMIGHTY GOD, the Searcher of all hearts with a true intention to perform the same, as we shall answer at that great day, when the secrets of all hearts shall be disclosed; most humbly beseeching the Lord to strengthen us by his HOLY SPIRIT for this end, and to bless our desires and proceedings with such success, as may be deliverance and safety to his people, and encouragement to other Christian churches, groaning under, or in danger of, the yoke of antichristian tyranny [*of that Roman Antichrist and man of sin*], to join in the same or like association and covenant, to the glory of GOD, the enlargement of the kingdom of JESUS CHRIST, and the peace and tranquility of Christian kingdoms and commonwealths.” <sup>123</sup> [Emphasis added]

Dear truth-seeker and elect **brother in Christ**, are not these words for us today?

We as **God’s** people living within **the Pope’s “Holy Roman” Fourteenth Amendment American Empire**, having received the **Lord Jesus Christ** as our personal Savior according to His blessed gospel set forth in His infallible **Holy Scriptures—The Authorized King James Version of 1611**, must repent of our personal and national sins. Then, we must forsake them. Some of those sins are:

1. **Permitting** the army of **the Black Pope, the Company of the Society of Jesus**, to exist, mightily prosper and absolutely control the government of the United States, through its Council on Foreign Relations (CFR), within our borders;
2. **Believing** the Jesuit/CFR-controlled American Press, which has continually lied and deceived us on every topic throughout the 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> Centuries;
3. **Permitting** the Jesuits’ Federal Reserve Banking System and United Nations to exist within our borders, as these two bodies have successfully destroyed popular liberty (Biblical “liberalism”) and the national sovereignty of every nation in the world pursuant to the purposes of the Jesuits’ “Holy Alliance;”
4. **Waiving** our Fourth and Fifth Amendment rights (secured by the “declaratory and restrictive clauses” of the Bill of Rights at the insistence of the Baptists of Virginia and *so dearly paid for with torrents of blood* by our Protestant forefathers)

through “filing” our written “confessions” every April fifteenth, paying the heavy and progressive Communist income tax on our “**wages**”—agreed upon monies received in exchange for our sacred labor, our physical and intellectual property, as opposed to “**income**” as defined by the Supreme Court—thereby financing a multitude of sins;

5. **Permitting** the drafting, vaccinating and sending of our sons abroad to fight the Pope’s foreign wars (such as the war in Vietnam and the recent wars in Serbia, Iraq and Afghanistan), resulting in the further destruction of American “liberals” and foreign “heretics and infidels” so condemned by the Jesuits’ **Council of Trent**;

6. **Permitting** the Jesuits, in control of the government of the American Empire, to use our military and financial might to enthrone Communist and Fascist dictators around the world whose first allegiance is to Rome, thereby restoring the **Temporal Power** of the Jesuits’ “*infallible*” Pope, returning the world to **the Dark Ages**;

7. **Consenting** to the Jesuits’ Supreme Court decisions in removing the **Protestant Bible and prayer** from the foremost public bulwark of American liberty so hated by the Society of Jesus—the Common Public School System;

8. **Consenting** to the immigration of millions of Roman Catholics and pagan persons of color whose loyalty to the Pope or their own race, religion and nationality is greater than their loyalty to our **WASP Protestant Constitution** and republican form of government, thereby creating a multitude of agitations justifying more centralization of power in Washington, D.C., and through racial amalgamation, the Africanization of the American White Celtic-Anglo-Saxon Race (being historically *the greatest enemy of the Jesuit Order*), especially its **Bible-believing** Protestants and Baptists, as intended by **the Company of Jesus** pursuant to its **Jesuit Oath**;

9. **Consenting** to the unbiblical decisions of Order’s Supreme Court forcing racial integration upon us, resulting in the destruction of both the White and Black races through amalgamation, as the exchange of viruses, bacteria and parasites, unique to each race, creates powerful combinations in the offspring producing a non-resistant, weak, intellectually failing and sterile population within five generations;

10. **Consenting** to the Order’s Supreme Court decision of legalized abortion, resulting in the mass-murder of unborn babies, polluting the land with innocent blood, ultimately collapsing the Ponzi Scheme called “**the Social Security System**” justifying euthanasia—the mass-murder of the elderly—by the Order’s coming fascist dictator, “*provoking the Lord against us, to consume us, until there be no remnant nor escaping in the land*” by means of a massive, **Sino-Soviet-Moslem**-led military invasion composed of a coalition of nations intent on the death of the population, thus cleansing the land with the blood of unrepentant and unforgiven American murderers, kidnappers, adulterers, sodomites, sorcerers, pornographers and thieves who, without restraint and in blatant defiance of God’s law and public morality, persist in the same;

### **Conclusion**

11. **Succumbing** to race hatred as a result of Jesuit-controlled, Masonic agitators such as the White Knights of the **Ku Klux Klan** and the **Black Nation of Islam**, justifying the imposition of martial law when the inner-city race wars begin;

12. **Sheepishly giving up** our real wealth, gold and silver coins in exchange for “indulgences” (the Jesuits’ worthless paper money called “Federal Reserve Notes”) and thereby becoming a nation of overworked, unprincipled, money-hungry thieves;

13. **Consenting** to the cattle brand of the Jesuits’ “**Social Security Number**” as a means of identification to be used by their **International Intelligence Community**, begun by Hitler’s SS at Dachau, it being the forerunner of

*“ . . . the mark, . . . of the beast, or the number of his name.”*

*– Revelation 13:17*

14. **Obeying** the evil 1968 Gun Law of Nazi origin and thereby, upon purchasing new firearms, blindly registering our guns—**our Swords of Just Defense**—enabling the coming, Jesuit-controlled, White, fascist, military dictator to ultimately take them from us, making our annihilation sure, pursuant to the **Council of Trent**;

15. **Committing** a multitude of personal sins, both public and private, ensuring that our annihilation will be a righteous act of retribution, for our militaristic desolation of the nations, in the eyes of both **the risen Son of God** and mortal man.

Realizing the *theology* of a people determines the *form of government* to which they submit (either by consent or by force) to their governors; that *substance* determines *form*; that *theory* decrees *practice*; that *heresy* begets *tyranny*; the list of our national sins is not yet complete. Since our righteous and *tolerant* Biblical foundations (in opposition to oppressive Canon Law) laid by **American Calvinists of the Lord’s Grand and Glorious Protestant Reformation** have been destroyed, we must name the greatest sin of all. It is *the fear of man* having produced a *nation of cowards*, in both low and high places, as a result of *cowardice and compromise* in the pulpit—something **Luther, Calvin and Knox** never knew! Where is the fearless **Bible preacher** of today? These “*ministers*” are all, for the most part, wimpy, “incorporated church” businessmen dominated by their matriarchal and feminist wives, while aspiring to build a following of false, world-loving, easy-believers, *who know nothing of self sacrifice*, in exchange for their high calling of:

*“Preach the word; be instant in season, out of season;  
reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine.”*

*– II Timothy 4:2*

*“Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men, be strong.”*

*– I Corinthians 16:13*

Joshua was commanded, which principle applies today:

*“Be strong and of a good courage . . . Only be thou strong and very courageous . . . to do according to all the law . . . that thou mayest prosper whithersoever thou goest . . . for then thou shalt make thy way prosperous, and then thou shalt have good success. Have not I commanded thee? Be strong and of a good courage; be not afraid, neither be thou dismayed; for the LORD thy God is with thee whithersoever thou goest.”*

– Joshua 1:6-9

With strength from **God**, empowered by his **Spirit** we are to resist the **Devil**. The **Devil** manifests his works through many devices. One of them is political tyranny which always flows from religious tyranny. Human government was established by **God** when He instituted capital punishment for murderers.

*“Whoso sheddeth man’s blood, by man shall his blood be shed . . .”*

– Genesis 9:6

Its purpose was to punish evil and reward good,

*“For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the power? do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same: For he is the minister of God to thee for good. But if thou do that which is evil, be afraid; for he beareth not the sword in vain: for he is the minister of God, a revenger to execute wrath upon him that doeth evil.*

– Romans 13:3, 4

Government was necessary for the growth of any civilization as even today. But when a government becomes a bloodthirsty tyranny, evincing a design to reduce us under absolute despotism, it is our right, it is our Protestant and Baptist-Calvinist duty, to throw off such government and to provide new guards for our future security. And how do we do this? We first submit to the **Word of God**, which is the **Sword of the Spirit**, by *meditating* upon it and *learning* how to use it in *resisting* the **Devil**, *not loving* his world system, and *daily dying* to the urges of our own sinful, fleshly nature. Whenever **Christ** was tempted by **Satan** or taunted by the evil **Pharisees**, whose Judaism was originally based in **Jehovah’s Torah** but corrupted by the traditions of men as recorded in the wicked **Babylonian Talmud**, he always resisted with the **Sword of the Spirit** coupled with his wit. He was not afraid. He was *courageous* and

## Conclusion

he *attacked*, not fearing what men could do to Him. With the strength of **Samson** and the zeal of **Nehemiah**, He cleansed the **Second Temple** intending it to be **Jerusalem's House of Prayer** for all Gentile Nations. Our attitudes and actions must be the same. We wake up every morning with the joy of **the Lord**, and a spiritual song in our hearts. We put on the whole **armor of God**, pray and, with courage given by the **Holy Spirit**, do battle with our enemies, **the World, the Flesh and the Devil**.

Those enemies manifest themselves through people, many of whom are the **servants of Satan**. I am referring to the Jesuits, Knights of Malta, 33<sup>rd</sup> Degree Freemasonry, the Illuminati, Opus Dei, the Club of Rome (founded in 1968 to be used for the Pope's unification of Europe, and guided by its current Masonic Islamic President, **Prince El Hassan bin Talal**, the uncle of the Arab king of Jordan), the Mafia and the Knights of Columbus. These groups control all banking, media, politics and organized religion within American Empire. Like **the risen Son of God**, *we do not hate* these men; we hate their doctrines and *we hate* their deeds.

***"But this thou hast, that thou hatest the deeds of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate.***

***So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate."***

*– Revelation 2:6, 15*

We pray for their conversion to **Jesus the Christ** of the **Reformation Bible** (if they may be in fact one of **the LORD's elect**), He, imparting saving faith, enabling them to believe the blessed **gospel of Christ**, and to resist their past worshipful master—**Satan**—whom they must abandon. But when these unconverted men become bolder to resist the preaching of the pure gospel, desiring to destroy us "heretics and liberals," we must, **through the arm of duly organized government**, take up "**the Sword of Just Defense**" as we Calvinists have called it. We must go to *physical war* as a matter of domestic policy against the armies controlled by Rome's Jesuits, even as our forefathers have so bravely done in the past. Indeed, there is:

***". . . a time of war . . ."***

*– Ecclesiastes 3:8*

We fight valiantly for the truth in the earth; we win the day or retreat to attack again. **We never surrender**, as our foes have **no mercy** evidenced by the FBI massacre in Waco, Texas. Engaging the enemy, we die to the last man even as Holland's Wild Beggars of the sea. We fight and die well, as our Calvinist forefathers fought and died on a thousand fields of battle, outnumbered and outgunned, remembering we, by the grace of God, brought Europe out of **the Pope's Dark Ages**

into **the Modern Era**. We alone gave birth to political liberty, so limiting the powers of rulers, our **Father** having answered our earnest **petitions**. Whether we live or die we serve **the risen Son of God** in resisting the sin of Anti-Christian tyranny presently being shoved down our throats by that **Roman Antichrist**—the Jesuits’ “*infallible*” **Papal Caesar**! In one hand is **the Sword of the Spirit** and in the other is **the Sword of Just Defense** wielded under the authority of our newly-formed government. With these weapons coupled with **personal purity**, **honest prayers** and loyal, self-sacrificing leadership, the **man of God** is invincible! *Gentlemen, the time is not ripe but rotten!*

When the Protestants and Baptist-Calvinists of the past resisted the armies of Jesuit-controlled tyrants, they obtained liberty and the following good report:

“Whatever was the cause, the **Calvinists** were the only **fighting Protestants**. It was they whose faith gave them courage to stand up for the **Reformation**. In England, Scotland, France, Holland, they, and they only, did the work, and but for them the Reformation would have been crushed. This is why I admire them, and feel there was something in their creed that made them what they were . . . If it had not been for the Calvinists, Huguenots, Puritans, and whatever you like to call them, the Pope and Philip would have won, and we should either be Papists or Socialists.” <sup>{10}</sup>  
[Emphasis added]

These men exist today. In America we are called “**American Freemen**.” In England they are called Calvinist “**Revolutionary Knights**.” Of these Englishmen and their high ideals, we read from the pen of the dauntless Calvinist, **N. H. Merton**:

### **“A CALL TO ARMS, AN END TO SACRIFICE”**

“**The strategy of the revolutionary knight** is not one of mass-struggle against the evil forces of **the Crown, the Vatican, the Hanseatic League, the Trilateral Commission or the City of London**. Having lost any sense of national, and thus also racial, identity in a stew of mongrelisation, the masses are incapable of rising from their knees. Instead of wasting his time attempting to enlist the weak in a spiritual fight, the revolutionary knight knows he must arm an elite force with the weapons of education and knowledge [*as does the Devil’s Society of Jesus*].

The exploiters encourage the ignorant masses to think that they live in a democratic country where everyone not only has a right to make decisions about how society is run, but actually does so [*universal suffrage*]. Thus, while the **Empire of the City** [*and Washington, D.C.*] plunges the nation into poverty, the ignorant masses are left believing that it is their own fault when they go hungry [*thanks to Popish/British Free Trade policies such as NAFTA and GATT*] or their children don’t have shoes on their feet [*with the loss of our manufacturers thanks to Chinese slave-made goods*]. . . .

### **Conclusion**

The common man's mind has been poisoned by **democracy, pornography, nihilism and lies about equality**. As a result of this disorientating propaganda, the ordinary man imagines himself to be master of his own existence [*Jesuit-promoted, "free-will" Arminianism*]. In stark contrast, the revolutionary knight is urged by interior necessity to appeal to a standard beyond himself [**the Word of God, the King James English Reformation Bible of 1611**], and freely accepts the guiding hand of God [*Calvinist predestination*]. The masses place no demands upon themselves and are delighted with their shallow incomprehension of the world. The common man is happy to swirl in a cesspool of filth.

**It is the revolutionary knight** who lives in a condition of servitude. **Life has no meaning to the revolutionary knight unless it is passed in service to God**. Therefore, he does not look upon the necessity of serving as an oppression. This is life lived in discipline—the noble life.

**The revolutionary knight** rejects the materialistic philosophies of both the 'left' and the 'right.' . . . **the revolutionary knight** must promote spiritual values as a defense against the calculated destruction being planned by the forces of Satanic nihilism. . . . **Only the revolutionary knight** is in a position to act effectively against the Satanic molestation of our young and the persecution of the elderly at the hands of the Papist and Norman.

**The revolutionary knight** recognizes that certain values are Eternal, and that refusal to adhere to Objective Truth and God's Law has resulted in chaos. **The revolutionary knight believes in ORDER**, and knows that to protect his flock against moral decline, firm hierarchical structures must be established within his regional community. The absurd ideological dogmas of communism, fascism and liberalism [democracy] must be rejected. Collectivist compromise has resulted in utter confusion and it is imperative that the doctrine of equality is replaced with a hierarchical paternalism that is completely free of the class and race hatreds that have polluted impressionable young minds. Unlike the **Bolshevik** or the **Nazi**, **the revolutionary knight is not a bigot** who wishes to annihilate his inferiors. Instead, he devotes himself, as a sacred duty, to guiding and protecting those of every class and creed who accept their place within God's Order.

There are [*Jesuit*] **sophists** who claim that Protestantism is destructive of hierarchy and that by revolting against Popery it led directly to nihilistic hedonism. This is plainly absurd because Protestantism is the **bedrock of genuine [national] sovereignty and Order**. There was nothing generically new or peculiar in the Reformation [*other than placing the Word of God—the Bible of the Reformation—in the hands of and in the*

*languages of the peoples of Europe*]. It was a return to *[Biblical]* Truth and Reality, in opposition to *[Popish]* Falsehood and Semblance, just as all forms of Improvement and genuine Teaching are and always have been.

**The revolutionary knight** believes with his whole judgment, with all the illumination and discernment that is in him. Those who've fallen under the spell of *Popery* or the '*Church of England [COE]*,' need only to profess to believe in Christ, and this is how they've abandoned the rock of Faith, because private judgment is crucial to the Truth of the Gospels. . . . Only in a nation of sincere men who believe in the redeeming power of Christ with their hearts AND their minds [*Elizabethan England*] is hierarchy possible, and there, in the long run, it is as good as certain.

**The revolutionary knight** is under no illusions about the tasks ahead, as he sets before his eyes **the accomplished fact of national salvation** [*of birthing a new Reformation-Bible-based, White Anglo-Saxon Protestant and Baptist nation of Freeman within North America*]. He rejects the charade of ballot-box sloganeering. He belongs to a spiritual elite that refuses to dirty its hands with Westminster treachery [*Washington, D.C., treachery*] and [*Roman Catholic*] Norman debauchery [*Irish Roman Catholic American and Italian Roman Catholic American debauchery*].

**The revolutionary knight** will not 'bend' his principles to gain mass support; he knows that populism is a total betrayal of his elitist ideals. **One fine day, the mongrel hordes foisted upon England [and America] by the [Pope's Roman Catholic] Norman oligarchy [and the Archbishop of New York City's Council on Foreign Relations via forced White/Black amalgamation and illegal Roman Catholic Mexican/Latino invasion] will be shipped to other ports of the world in a phased, humane and financially assisted fashion** [*which same policy of repatriation back to Africa Presidents Thomas Jefferson, James Monroe and Abraham Lincoln sought to implement towards freed Negro slaves but were prevented by the invisible political power of the Jesuit Order working through the Radical Red/Black Republicans*]. **The anti-racial masses do not belong in this country; it is the home of the Saxon alone. We shall restore Winchester as the capital of England. The handful of Normans not facing criminal proceedings, followed by swift execution, will be repatriated to the Channel Islands.**

**As an English nationalist [and as an American nationalist], the revolutionary knight** fights for the nation against the **Empire of the City** [*the City of London, secretly controlled by the Pope's Sovereign State of Vatican City*]. He knows it is not an accident that the **Union Jack** contains

### Conclusion



a [*Popish Knights Templar*] double cross. The revolutionary knight accepts only the **Saint George flag** as his standard containing, as it does, the simple cross of Christ. **He wants a revolution in the true meaning of the word, a return to the natural system that God created for us and our families, a home-coming.**

**The revolutionary knight** opposes the plutocracy and the present system of Masonic mind control based on human sacrifice. He will seize the reigns of power [*as power is never given, only taken*] and raise the English nation from its present state of decline to new heights of [*Protestant*] Christian glory. The hour approaches and we must ready ourselves for the fight. **No Popery!** No wooden shoes! Smash the Norman oligarchy [*including London's Chatham House and New York's Council on Foreign Relations*]!

**'Upon this rock I will build my church and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.'** ” <sup>{11}</sup> [Emphasis added]

If the Protestant and Baptist pastors of the Pope's **Fourteenth Amendment** “**Holy Roman**” **American Empire** do not repent and begin to vehemently resist our Jesuit, Anti-Christian tyranny centered at **St. Patrick's Cathedral** in New York City, they will most assuredly experience shame, remorse and murder at the hands of **Vatican Assassins**. **Dietrich Bonhoeffer**, a **Bible-rejecting** Lutheran pastor, was hanged naked, suspended with piano wire in 1945 by the Jesuits' SS. Prior to this shameful and dishonorable death at the hands of the **Devil's** henchmen he confessed:

**“I am guilty of cowardly silence at a time when I ought to have spoken. I am guilty of hypocrisy and untruthfulness in the face of force. I have been lacking in compassion and I have denied the poorest of my brethren . . .** We, the church, must confess that we have not proclaimed often or clearly enough our message of the one God who has revealed Himself for all times in Jesus Christ and who will tolerate no other gods beside Himself. She must confess her **timidity**, her **evasiveness**, her **dangerous concessions**. She has often been untrue to her office of guardianship and to her office of comfort. She was silent when she should have cried out because the blood of the innocent was crying aloud to heaven. She has failed to speak the right word in the right way at the right time. She has not resisted to the uttermost the **apostasy of faith**, and she has brought upon herself the guilt of the godlessness of the masses. . . .

The church must confess that she has witnessed the lawless application of brutal force, the physical and spiritual suffering of countless innocent people, oppression, hatred, and murder, and that she has not raised her voice on behalf of the victims and has not found ways to hasten to their aid. She is guilty of the deaths of the weakest and most defenseless

brothers of Jesus Christ . . . The church must confess that she has desired **security, peace and quiet, possessions and honor**, to which she has no right. . . . She has not borne witness to the truth of God. . . . **By her own silence she has rendered herself guilty because of her unwillingness to suffer for what she knows to be right.**" <sup>{12}</sup> [Emphasis added]

With the gathering of **God's** people led by loyal pastors we must petition the Congress to redress the grievance of the Jesuit assassination of **President Kennedy**. We must demand that **the Society of Jesus** be expelled from the American Empire, while **earnestly praying** for individual Jesuits that they would leave **the Company** and tell their story. Laws must be passed that no one may hold public office who has given an oath of allegiance to a foreign Monarch—*especially the Pope!* This would include the Knights of Malta and the Knights of Columbus. Laws must be passed that no member of a secret society can hold public office. This would include all Freemasons, as their doctrines are secret, their lodges have no windows (just like the Kingdom Halls of the Masonically-controlled Jehovah's Witnesses who deny the **deity of Jesus Christ**) and their highest leaders are loyal to the Jesuit General.

Dear truth-seeker, these things will never happen unless Americans, both nobles and commoners, experience a true **Great Awakening** as we did in the 1730s and the 1830s. To live for the mere pleasure of business success or personal accomplishment will never satisfy the desires of our self-serving, carnal hearts. May we all diligently seek **God** through His risen Son, **the Lord Jesus Christ**, while He may be found that we may live for Him, which is our reasonable service. Only in serving Him do we find meaning and purpose in the words "freedom" and "liberty."

In the meantime, we must do as **Jehoshaphat**, the King of Judah, when he faced the invasion of a great multitude from beyond the sea. In open and humble **prayer** on the Temple steps before all the people, he cried:

*"O our God, wilt thou not judge them? for we have no might  
against this great company that cometh against us;  
[the Pope's great military **Company of Jesus**]  
neither know we what to do: but our eyes are upon thee."*

– II Chronicles 20:12

Responding to his **prayer of faith** the **Lord** replied,

*"Hearken ye, all Judah, and ye inhabitants of Jerusalem, and thou  
king Jehoshaphat, Thus saith the **LORD** unto you,  
Be not afraid nor dismayed by reason of this great multitude;  
for the battle is not yours, but God's."*

– II Chronicles 20:15

## Conclusion

Dear **Bible-believing** truth-seeker and **brother in Christ**, if the risen **Son of God** sank the Spanish Armada when Philip II sought to invade Protestant England in 1588; if the risen **Son of God** gave Gustavus Adolphus victory after victory during the Thirty Years' War ending in 1648; if the risen **Son of God** gave Oliver Cromwell and his Baptist-Calvinist army the victory at Dunbar in the face of annihilation by the Presbyterian Scots (duped by the promises of King Charles I overseen by the Jesuits "who keep no faith with heretics") in 1650; if the risen **Son of God** melted the river of ice and drowned the French army of Louis XIV when he sought to invade the Protestant Dutch Republic in 1672; if the risen **Son of God** gave the righteous and daring General George Patton (America's greatest General who, while occupying Berlin, publicly rebuked his soldiers in formation and at attention, calling them "pigs" for fornicating with the conquered German women according to a personal friend of the author who was there, Sgt. Harry Boyer) the victory at the Battle of the Bulge in 1945; He can save us from our enemies in the year of our **LORD** 2007. May you receive the same encouraging reply from **God** your **Father** as you ask in **Jesus'** name to be led by His **Holy Spirit** while resisting the **Devil's** Jesuit tyranny in Washington, D.C., and the coming foreign invasion of our great land, remembering:

*"The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much."*

– James 5:16

The righteous man **Martin Luther**, so hated by **Ignatius Loyola**, declared:

**"If you meddle with popedom [the temporal power of the earthly kingdom of the Pope], you will have the whole world against you."** <sup>{13}</sup>  
[Emphasis added]

Therefore he **prayed**:

**"I know You are our Father and our God; and therefore, I am sure You will bring to naught the persecutors of Your children. For if You fail to do this, Your own cause, being connected with ours, would be endangered. It is entirely Your own concern. We, by Your providence, have been compelled to take a part. You, therefore, will be our defense."** <sup>{14}</sup> [Emphasis added]

My elect brethren and serious seekers of the one true **God**, may we do the same. I bid you farewell until we meet in the air when we receive our glorified bodies, in the presence of the risen and righteous **Holy Son of God** in Whom alone is the **love of God** and to Whom alone has been given all **Spiritual Power** and **Temporal Power—all authority and jurisdiction**—in Heaven and in Earth,

**Yeshua the Messiah, the Lord Jesus Christ.**

Upon His return, He will chain and imprison the **Devil**, and cast the White, resurrected, **Gentile Papal Caesar—the beastly Antichrist**—alive into the **Lake of Fire**, along with the **Jewish False Prophet**. Having executed the risen Pope’s murderous Gentile dictators, along with the leading Jewish Labor Zionist and Talmudic Orthodox traitors having conspired with the **Antichrist** to mercilessly destroy His beloved Hebrew/Jewish People of Israel, **Jesus the Messiah** shall sit upon the royal “*throne of David*” and rule the **Fifth World Monarchy**, as spoken of by **Daniel the Prophet**, on top of Mount Zion from the **Fourth Temple in Jerusalem**, for “*one thousand years*” (*Revelation 20:4*) during the “*regeneration*” of the earth (*Matthew 19:28*), and “*for ever*” (*Luke 1:33*) in “*the new earth*” (*II Peter 3:13*).

*“... for now shall he be great unto the ends of the earth.”*

– *Micah 5:4*

With His surviving *elect remnant, the repentant sheep of the House of Israel—His national and racial brethren, called “Hebrews” by God and “Jews” by men, all with circumcised hearts as foretold by Ezekiel the Prophet*—gathered around Him,

*“... they shall look upon me whom they have pierced...”*

and shall ask:

*“What are these wounds in thine hands?”*

Their **Savior** and **Messiah**, the **Lord of Hosts**, shall reply in forgiving, eternal love,

*“Those with which I was wounded in the house of my friends.”*

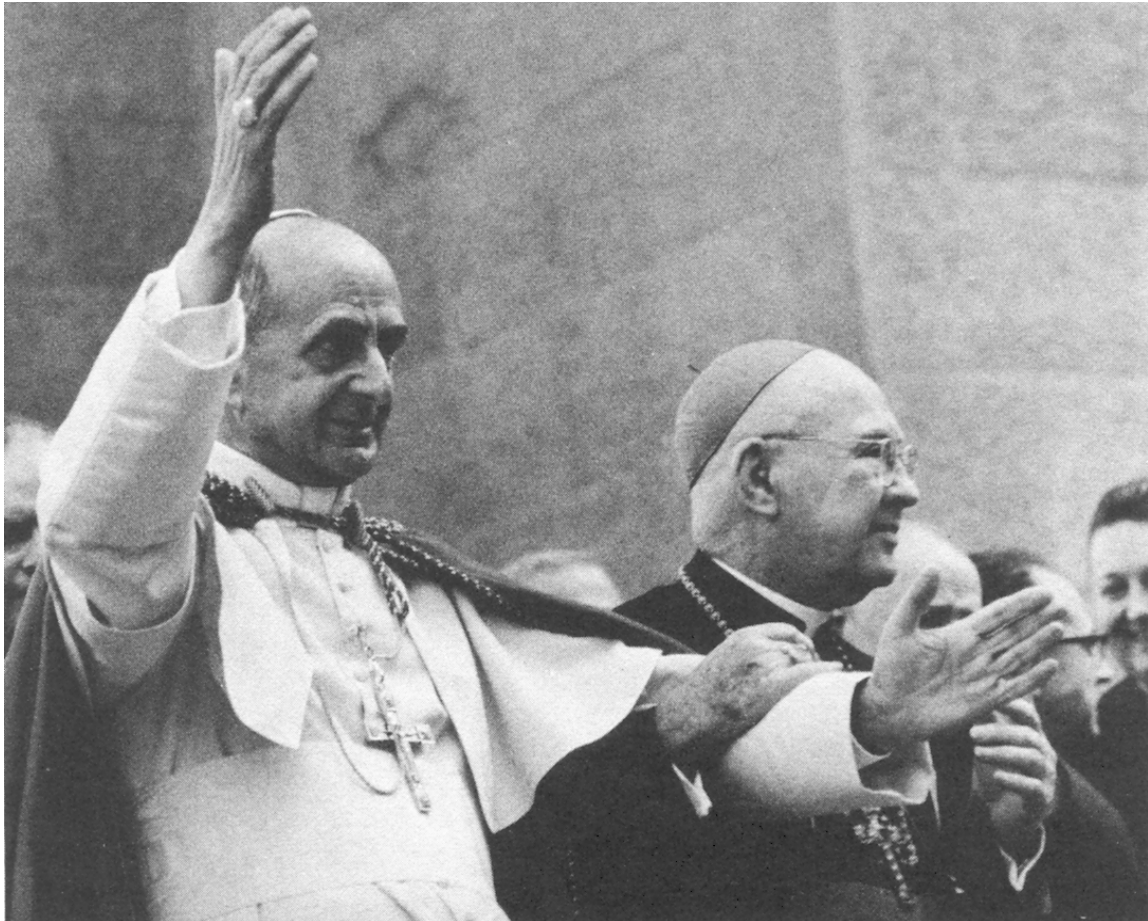
– *Zechariah 12:10; 13:6*

In conclusion, my elect brethren, may we **Bible-believing** Americans, upon the repentance and confession of any Vatican Assassin, **forgive him**. For our **President John F. Kennedy**, like **Jesus the Anointed One**, was also **wounded in the house of his friends**, many of whom, in blindly following orders, knew not what they did.

And finally, when our government, *in doing its duty of punishing evil*, will have expelled that foreign army of the **Papal Roman Caesar** presently ruling the world—that **Militia of the Black Pope** within America’s borders controlling the **Masonic/Islamic International Terrorist Network** overseen by its **International Intelligence Community** with all of the world’s **Military Industrial Complexes** dedicated to the restoration of the **Papal Roman Caesar’s Temporal Power** around the world—that murderous, that treasonous, that diabolical **serpent of Satan** called **The Society of Jesus** *ready to strike us in the heart with a huge foreign invasion*, our Nation’s gruesome, midnight **Tragedy** shall become our glorious, noonday **Triumph!**

### Conclusion

### Vatican Assassins



**Pope Paul VI and Francis Cardinal Spellman, 1965** <sup>#754</sup>

After the Jesuit General's Second Thirty Years' War that raged from 1914 through 1945 killing nearly 100,000,000 people, Cardinal Montini, both a high-level Freemason and Knight of Malta later to be chosen as Pope Paul VI, oversaw the successful workings of Pope Pius XII's Vatican Ratlines. In saving the Black Pope's SS while "the Order of the Death's Head" was escaping Allied justice in Europe, he was aided by his most obedient servant, another high-level Freemason and Knight of Malta, Francis Cardinal Spellman, the most powerful, Jesuit-trained, "Roman Senator" and "Prince of the Church" in American history. Here, after having coordinated the Kennedy Assassination for his god and master, Cardinal Spellman gleefully clutches the arm of his "King of kings and Lord of lords, Father of Princes and Kings, Governor of the World, Sovereign of the State of Vatican City," the living forerunner of the Devil's Antichrist. Since the Pope's assassination of President Kennedy in 1963 and his cultic visit to Rome's "Holy Roman" Fourteenth Amendment American Empire in 1965, America has continued in its moral, commercial and political decline.

*Fourteen Hours: A Picture Story of the Pope's Historic First Visit to America*, Introduction by Francis Cardinal Spellman, (New York: Dell Publishing Co., 1965).

### Vatican Assassins



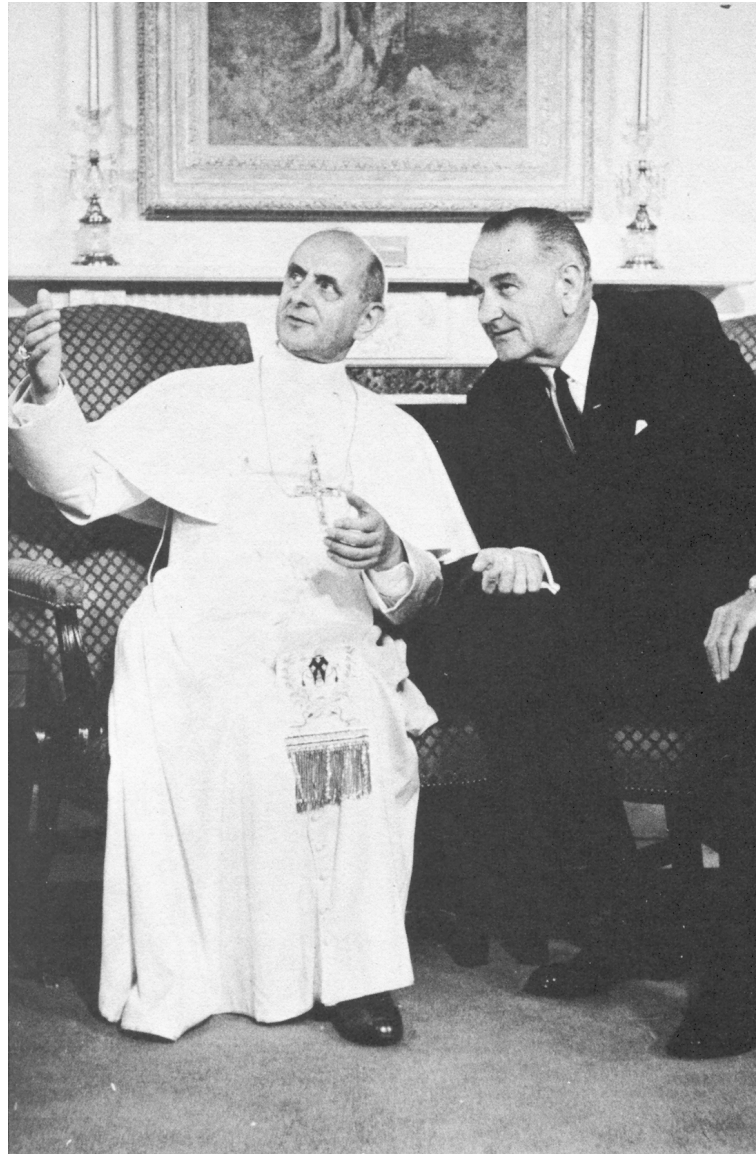
#### Pope Paul VI; Francis Cardinal Spellman; Jacqueline Kennedy; 1965 <sup>#755</sup>

At the Pope's historic first speech to his pro-communist United Nations (intended to cause the rise of international fascism), it having been wickedly financed and erected on American soil thanks to the ~~Black Pope's~~ Masonic, CFR-controlled Roosevelt/Rockefeller Dynasty, the most important Kennedy assassins were in attendance. During the subsequent reception for the Pope, the first person the Pontiff greeted was none other than the broken Jackie Kennedy. Standing behind her is the jubilant "Cardinal War," his Eminence Francis Spellman, the power behind the CIA, FBI, NSA, Secret Service, Military Intelligence, Dallas Police Department and the murderous Sicilian/Italian Mafia. Imagine the brazen heartlessness of these men who, after killing the President as a matter of business, could then publicly converse with his widow, while having no apparent pangs of remorse! This is a chilling portrayal of the Pope's Canon Law, enforced by the Company through men having been brainwashed by the Sons of Loyola.

*Fourteen Hours: A Picture Story of the Pope's Historic First Visit to America*, Introduction by Francis Cardinal Spellman, (New York: Dell Publishing Co., 1965).

### Conclusion

### Vatican Assassins



#### Masons Pope Paul VI and President Lyndon Baines Johnson, 1965 #756

Jesuit-trained, political altar boy Lyndon Johnson at New York City's Waldorf-Astoria Hotel is in the presence of his Master, Paul VI. Here sit both the architect and builder of "Spelly's War" in Vietnam. Upon the elimination of President Kennedy, the CIA flooded every American city with illegal drugs via its counterpart, the P2 Masonic Sicilian American Mafia. Wall Street's Vatican Bankers, including the Order's Federal Reserve Bank, made trillions in gold while the Pope's Papal Knights further destroyed Protestant America. Marrying a Greek foreign billionaire, Aristotle Onassis, Jackie Kennedy ultimately left the country; and the ~~Black Pope's~~ assassins of John F. Kennedy still remain at large.

*Fourteen Hours: A Picture Story of the Pope's Historic First Visit to America*; Introduction by Francis Cardinal Spellman, (New York: Dell Publishing Co., 1965).



**John Fitzgerald Kennedy, 1917 – 1963** <sup>#757</sup>  
**Thirty-Fifth President of the United States of America**  
**1961 - 1963**

“The American Century,” the Black Pope has ruled,  
 Killing “usurpers” worldwide, those “liberals,” those “fools.”  
 For resisting Rome’s Caesar, and his bold Temporal Power,  
 I was shot down in Dallas, at half-past the hour.  
 Decades have passed, while my blood cries aloud,  
 “Justice! Oh, Justice!” to earth’s highest cloud.  
 Is there no champion, my cause to plead?  
 To punish my killers, is there no need?  
 The Temple’s moneychangers, I did chastise,  
 The Cold War and “CIA,” I likewise despised.  
 Just as the death of Messiah, who foreknew his ends,  
 My sole son has been “wounded, in the house of my friends.”

**Conclusion**





**John F. Kennedy, Jr., 1963** <sup>#758</sup>

*“Now the God of peace, that brought again from the dead  
our Lord Jesus, that great shepherd of the sheep,  
through the blood of the everlasting covenant,  
Make you perfect in every good work to do his will, working in you  
that which is well-pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ;  
to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.”*

*– Hebrews 13:20, 21*

**“A man does what he must—in spite of personal consequences, in spite of obstacles and dangers and pressures—and that is the basis of all human morality.”** <sup>{15}</sup>

**John F. Kennedy**

It is now January of 2007; over six years have elapsed since the release of the first edition of *Vatican Assassins: "Wounded In The House Of My Friends."* Five thousand copies have been put into circulation along with approximately twenty-five hundred copies of two editions of pre-book manuscripts first released in 1999. A total of seventy-five hundred copies of both the book and manuscripts are now in the public domain, having exposed the diabolical **Society of Jesus** in its bold assassination of **President John F. Kennedy**. The **Great Jesuit Cover-up** continues via the Secret Service, Federal Bureau of Investigation, Central Intelligence Agency, Office of Naval Intelligence, State and local Police Departments and its CFR-controlled national Press, including CBS's utterly deceitful CFR member and notorious accomplice in the Kennedy Assassination Cover-up, **Dan Rather**, as well as CNN's **Larry King** and Fox News' former leftist ACLU attorney, **Geraldo Rivera**.

Not surprisingly, there has been more of a foreign interest than a domestic one. A South Korean pastor has completed the translation of the first edition and there have been separate offers to translate the work into Spanish by two brilliant women, one Mexican, the other Cuban. The Koreans, like us Americans, are generally ignorant of the history of **the Company's deeds of blood** against their nation bordered by the largest, most murderous, Jesuit-directed, Communist dictatorship in the history of the world—*Red China*. Jesuit-trained **Francis Cardinal Spellman** has committed the most despicable of high crimes against the Koreans, he being the true impetus behind the United Nations' Korean War (1950-1953). At the time, the Order controlled 33<sup>rd</sup> Degree Freemason **President Harry Truman** (1945-1953), **President Dwight Eisenhower** (1953-1961) (who, according to (CFR) **General James A Van Fleet**, Commander of the U.S. Eighth Army in Korea, refused to allow US forces to win the war in the Spring of 1953), and **Chairman Mao** (1949-1976). At this moment North Korea, with the blessing of Red China is preparing to attack South Korea, man for man, the most Protestant, Bible-reading country in the world. If **the LORD** does not intervene, all Bible-believing Protestants, Baptists and anti-Communists (like the East German Lutherans of post-World War II) will either be killed or deported to hundreds of Chinese slave labor camps by the Chinese minions of **the Society of Jesus**.

The Roman Catholic Mexicans and Cubans are not so ignorant. They know the Order has assassinated several prominent and popular Mexican statesmen, including **Presidents Benito Juarez** (1872), **Francisco Madero** (1913) and **Alvaro Obregon** (1928). By its murder of Obregon, it turned President **Plutarco Calles** into a fascist, later exiled (1934-1941) by President **Lazaro Cardenas**. During Cardenas' term of office (1934-1940) the politically Menshevik, racially Jewish **Leon Trotsky**, who had built the Red Army *unwittingly* for the Pope's Soviet Crusade into Eastern Europe, was murdered in Mexico City (1940) by Franco's Jesuit-sent, Spanish Catholic, KGB assassin **Ramon Mercader**. Leon Trotsky had been the greatest rival of Masonic **Josef Stalin** as to who would rule **the Black Pope's** anti-Jewish Empire of the USSR, Coadjutor Stalin having formally re-admitted the Order into Russia in 1922).

### Conclusion

While under **the Company's** rule, Cuba has paid a terrible price via its Masonic, socialist-communist, absolutist dictator, **Fidel Castro**. Cleverly placed in power (1959) through the intrigue of **the Company's** murderous pro-Nazi American Central Intelligence Agency overseen by arch-traitor and covertly pro-Soviet-Communist **President Dwight Eisenhower**, he became Cuba's Grand Inquisitor for the Vatican. At the time, the CIA, dubbed "*the Company*," was headed by **Pope John XXIII's** high-level Freemason, **Allen W. Dulles**, whose nephew is today one of America's most powerful Jesuits residing at Fordham University in New York City, **Avery Cardinal Dulles**. The "Russian Federation" and Red China are now united and preparing to attack our West and South coasts, using Hawaii and Cuba as staging bases, thanks to high-level treason in Washington for the last seventy years.

For at least the last thirty years, the Order's **Opus Dei** has advocated a war with Islam—a Crusade to be preached and fought by historically White Protestant nations whose governments have been *secretly commandeered* by the Jesuits. These nations are **The United Kingdom** and **The United States of America**, they standing as the backbone of "Western Civilization" born out of **the LORD'S Grand and Glorious Protestant Reformation** so vehemently "accursed" and condemned by the Jesuit Order through its antichrist Council of Trent. If the Reformation is to be obliterated by the military **Company of Jesus**, then Western Civilization itself must be completely destroyed, as was **Bismarck's White Protestant Second German Reich** (1871-1919) during the Pope's **Second Thirty Years' War** (1914-1945). What better way to accomplish this fiendish dream of the Vatican than to foment another no-win war, this time against a massive and multi-racial, Islamic coalition of nations composed of fanatical, savage, irrational, relentless, and bloodthirsty, Allah-worshipping hordes whose leaders are wealthy, high-level, Islamic Freemasons controlled by the Jesuit General? Financed by **the Black Pope's** premier Saudi Arabian petroleum cartel (OPEC), International Drug Trade and the United Nation's "Oil for Food" scandal, these Islamic dictators, directing Rome's Al Qaeda-led, **Masonic Islamic International Terrorist Network**, will be in *secret collusion* with Freemasons President (CFR) **George W. Bush** and British Prime Minister (RIIA) **Tony Blair** via **the Black Pope's** unified **International Intelligence Community**.

It was for this reason **the Black Pope—Peter Hans Kolvenbach**—secretly in control of **Pope John Paul II** (he directing his "*Archbishop of the (political) capital of the world*"—New York's **Edward Cardinal Egan**—who in turn commanded the Central Intelligence Agency through his most powerful Knight of Malta, **Director George J. Tenet**) demolished the World Trade Center and part of the Pentagon on September 11, 2001. After consummating an intricate conspiracy spawned deep within Vatican walls involving the Jesuit General's **International Intelligence Community** (covertly in full command of the Order's **Masonic Islamic International Terrorist Network**, including CIA operatives **Saddam Hussein** and **Osama bin Laden**), the Order's **Skull and Bonesman**, President **George W. Bush**

(who ran against the calculated loser and Jewish Democrat, left-wing CFR member **Senator John Kerry**, who was, in fact, another “brother” **Skull and Bonesman** who attended the Jesuit Order’s **Boston College Law School**), declared a “*War on Terror*.” With no formal Congressional declaration of war in violation of the U.S. Constitution; with no enemy nation upon which war has been legally declared; and with no foreseeable end in sight; we now have lost over three thousand American soldiers with no “Weapons of Mass Destruction” to be found anywhere in the region. This war, now honestly being called “*a war against Islam*,” is to be waged, in the words of the Pope’s CFR member and Black National Security Adviser, **Condoleezza Rice**, *for a generation!* CFR member, fascist **Newt Gingrich** agrees. **Opus Dei**, in serving its master, the **Society of Jesus**, now has its World War III—presently in its infancy—between the apostate, **AV1611 King-James Bible**-rejecting Protestant West and the Islamic Middle East, later to be aided by the Order’s “Russian Federation” and Communist Red China. The ultimate unification of the Twenty-first Century’s Commu-Nazi/Islamic “Triple Entente” will consummate in its invasion of the Pope’s Fourteenth Amendment American Empire led by a coming American, pro-Roman Catholic, Fox News-backed, DHS-backed, *fascist military dictator*. The man who would perfectly fit the bill would be the Austrian Roman Catholic immigrant who became a Kennedy son-in-law, Mr. Olympia turned a Jesuit Theater “macho” movie star and now California State Governor, **Arnold Schwarzenegger**. If the destruction of the apostate, White Protestant, pro-Israeli Labor Zionist, socialist-communist, “**Holy Roman**” **Fourteenth Amendment American Empire** is to *sharply parallel* the destruction of the apostate White Protestant, pro-Jewish, anti-“**Red**” (Marxian socialist-communist), anti-“**Black**” (Jesuit ultramontane, socialist-fascist) **Second German Reich** that expelled the Order (via Prince Bismarck) from its borders in 1872, we can expect to see events *very similar* to the following:

1. **An American Reichstag Fire.** The Reichstag Fire of 1933 was later proven to be a conspiracy instigated by **Herman Goering**, at the time Hitler’s creator and head of the Gestapo, in order to justify a war against a designated scapegoat—*the Communists*. So it has been in America. The destruction of the World Trade Center on 11 September 2001 was also a criminal conspiracy instigated by Knight of Malta **George J. Tenet**, President **George W. Bush**’s CIA Director and National Security Council member, in order to justify a war against another selected scapegoat—“*the terrorists*” who are now “*the Moslems*.” **Opus Dei**, operating from its new multimillion-dollar headquarters in Manhattan, finally has her war and the Order’s **Fox News Network**, using Knight of Malta **Colonel Oliver North** and his “*War Stories*,” is pounding the Pope’s anti-Islamic war drum with all of his might.

2. **Centralization of Power in the Hands of a Native-born or Foreign-born Fascist Military Dictator.** In Germany this was accomplished with the enactment of a decree, “for the Protection of the People and the State.” This decree, in fact, suspended the Protestant-based **German Constitution** by eliminating all

### Conclusion

Constitutional protection of political, personal and property rights. Later, when Hitler became Chancellor in 1933, the German Constitution was suspended and a foreign-born, Austrian Roman Catholic became Germany's absolute dictator. Presently, the **American Constitution** is in *de facto* suspension with the passage of **Patriot Act I** (authored by Jesuit Temporal Coadjutors **Viet D. Dinh** and **Michael Chertoff**), along with the creation of the **Department of Homeland Security** (DHS, backed by Jesuit Temporal Coadjutor **John C. Gannon**)—in spite of vehement opposition from the murdered **Senator Paul Wellstone**—now manned by the **Jesuit Volunteer Corps** and OPENLY directed by a one of the Pope's "*Court Jews*" closely affiliated with Rome's Masonic B'nai B'rith, **Michael Chertoff**. The DHS has now absorbed the **Federal Emergency Management Agency** (FEMA), the **Secret Service** (the President's praetorian guard), and the **Coast Guard**, along with a host of other federal agencies, which agencies may ultimately include the **Justice Department** and its **Federal Bureau of Investigation** (FBI). With the formal suspension of the Constitution yet to come with the next "terrorist attack" (according to former CFR-controlled **General Tommy Franks**), the arriving Fuehrer and fascist "Commander-in-Chief" will enact a single decree, or executive order, centralizing all political and commercial power in the White House. For this Nazi-absolutist, corporate fascism to be realized in America, we believe a series of *five to ten* preset nuclear devices will be detonated at key strategic positions within the United States killing millions of "*heretic and liberal*" Americans! **The Black Pope's NSA/DIA/CIA** will be the secret culprit; the Order's CIA-created, CIA-backed and CIA-protected **Al Qaeda Terrorist Network** will willingly take the blame; and the Jesuits will use their fascist American military dictator, like their Austrian **Adolf Hitler**, to declare Jesuit-trained **Josef Goebbels'** "total war" against the Islamic nations of the Middle East and Central Asia. Meanwhile, as **the Company** used its **SS/Gestapo** in Nazi Germany commanded by Bavarian Roman Catholic **SS General Heinrich Mueller**, so will it use its **Department of "Romeland" Security** to eliminate "enemies of the State" via its Nazi "*Red and Blue lists.*" Mass-incarceration behind the barbed wire of six hundred existing concentration camps throughout America and Alaska will ensue.

**3. The Launching and Preaching of a Religious Crusade Against an Enemy Condemned by the Pope's Canon Law and the Order's Council of Trent.** In Nazi Germany this was accomplished in the East with "**Operation Barbarossa.**" Its religious impetus was the faked "**Lady of Fatima Vision**" of 1917, "the Virgin Mary" calling for the conversion of "Orthodox Russia" and submission to the Pope. Named after **Frederick Barbarossa** leading the **Pope's Third Crusade** against the "*infidel*" Moslem peoples in traversing through "*heretic*" Orthodox Constantinople, **Operation Barbarossa** was the largest military invasion in the history of warfare, involving *three million men* and over *thirty-three hundred tanks*. **OPENLY** sent to overthrow "Godless Jew Communism," the Crusade's **SECRET** and **TRUE** mission was to destroy the very lives and culture of the "heretic" Russian Orthodox peoples. Evidenced by the results, Hitler's anti-Soviet Crusade was not political, but religious!

In accordance with the Nazi-Soviet Non-Aggression Pact of 1939, Stalin covertly supplied Hitler's Wehrmacht with two hundred thousand (200,000) tons of grain and one hundred thousand (100,000) tons of petroleum products *every month* prior to *the very day before* the Reich's invasion of Russia in 1941. Barbarossa was the Nazi-Jesuit Crusade unleashed primarily against the anti-Communist, Orthodox civilization of **White Russia**, and again, it was justified under the pretext of fighting "Godless Jew Communism." This most horrendous of all the Pope's Crusades resulted in the destruction of *seventy thousand* Orthodox cities, the leveling of *six thousand* hospitals, the utter desolation of *six million* homes and the death of *twenty million* condemned Orthodox "heretics." So will it be with the Pope's present neo-fascist, Anglo-American Crusade directed against the "infidel" Moslem peoples, they too having been condemned by the **Pope's Canon Law** and Ignatius Loyola's wicked and bloody **Council of Trent**. With American nationalist rage at its peak due to heinous nuclear detonations at home, millions of Moslems will be murdered and every mosque encountered will be destroyed—with the secret help of Bin Laden and his CIA-led, Al Qaeda Terrorist Network! *The Temple of Solomon must be rebuilt!*

4. **The Initiating of an Ultimately Fatal, Two-Front War.** Hitler engaged Nazi Germany in a two-front war that at first proved to be victorious. This was due to *complicity* on the part of his so-called enemies who were *secretly* aiding the Jesuit Order as it led **Pope Pius XII's** Nazi war machine to kill the Orthodox, anti-Communist peoples of the Soviet Union and to mass-murder European and Russian Jews. (Yes, **Stalin** aided **Hitler** in the "extirpation" of the "heretic" Orthodox and Jewish Peoples of Poland and Russia; **Hitler** aided **Stalin** in the "extermination" of the "heretic" Lutherans and "liberal" anti-Communists of Prussia, East Germany and Poland!) The killing of the "Communist" Jews (who as a whole were in fact anti-Communist), being the Order's "**Final Solution**" to the Pope's "**Jewish Question**" agitation raging since 1880, was deemed necessary if Roman Catholic Europe was: to be returned to the dreadful and damnable **Dark Ages**; to be reunited as a Roman Catholic fascist block under the Pope at a future date; and if the Papacy's "Jewish State," its **Dark Age "Kingdom of Jerusalem"** in "Palestine," was to ever be realized. So, when FDR aided Japan's bombing of Pearl Harbor and the American Congress declared war on Japan **ONLY**, Hitler, in sealing the fate of the "accursed," apostate Lutheran Protestants of Germany, *unnecessarily declared war on the isolationist and Protestant United States!* (Japan never declared war against the Order's haven of Inquisitional NKVD tyranny, **the Soviet Union** (which could have been easily defeated via a two-front war spearheaded by Nazi Japanese and Nazi Germans), while engaged in its conflict with America until *four days* before the end of the war in the Pacific!) This brilliant Nazi-Jesuit diplomacy, remaining incomprehensible to the secular historian having ignored the bloody history of the **Society of Jesus**, rendered Hitler's two-front war *a most assured defeat!* But that calculated defeat would only arrive after his armies had fulfilled the **SECRETLY** intended, **Counter-Reformation**

### Conclusion

functions of “heretic and liberal” destruction. The same will be true for America. Her two-front war will accomplish an “*extirpation*” of Arab and Chinese Moslems numbering in the tens of millions. These peoples will be brutalized by the incited and fascist Anglo-American Crusaders, even as Roman Catholic **Hitler’s Wehrmacht** and Roman Catholic **Himmler’s Waffen-SS**, also incited by the horrid atrocities of the Bolsheviks, brutalized the Russian Orthodox peoples, while destroying their churches as ordered by Hitler’s SS/NKVD Secretary, **Jesuit Coadjutor Martin Bormann**. This Jesuit/CIA-led American torture and murder of the Moslem peoples (betrayed by their own Masonic leaders loyal to Rome) while destroying their mosques, will further feed the rage of the Empire’s future Sino-Soviet-Moslem-Latino invaders.

**5. The Great Betrayal by the Joint Chiefs of Staff and the Crushing Defeat of the American Military.** Hitler, via his General Staff, refused to allow his army to attack and conquer Moscow prior to the onset of winter, knowing that his Protestant Prussian soldiers were not supplied with winter clothing. His victorious **Wehrmacht**—*eighteen kilometers from Moscow*—was commanded to turn south, “snatching defeat from the jaws of victory.” Hitler later cut off arms and supplies, and forbade **Field Marshall Paulus** to retreat, ensuring the Soviet encirclement and unbelievable defeat of his Sixth Army at Stalingrad. Coupled with deliberately misleading intelligence from **Nazi General Reinhard Gehlen** (later inducted into American Military Intelligence for a job well done), Hitler’s traitorous policy resulted in the crumbling of the Eastern Front and a desperate retreat back to Germany. The same will be true for our American Armed Forces in the Far East, Middle East and Central Asia. After our military accomplishes its purposed destruction of a large part of Islamic “infidels” and mosques, our coming CFR-controlled American military dictator, with his CFR-controlled Joint Chiefs of Staff, will betray and thus sacrifice our fighting men (as did the Joint Chiefs in both **Korea** and **Vietnam**), leaving their broken lives to the sure mercies of the beheading, Masonic scimitars of Islam and the bayonets of the Red Chinese. Thanks to the treason of President Clinton and Vice President Gore in giving the Red Chinese America’s nuclear secrets, our navy in the Pacific will be sunk. There will be no well-ordered retreat back to American soil.

**6. A Two-Front Attack, Military Defeat, Foreign Partition and Occupation of North America.** In consummating World War III after the destruction of the American navy—*thanks to American high technology and wartime infrastructure given to our attackers over the last sixty years by every presidential administration*—, the end of the Pope’s “**Holy Roman**” **Fourteenth Amendment American Empire** will be assured. Just as the White, apostate Protestant people of Germany were destroyed, we White, apostate Protestant and Baptist people of North America are to be destroyed in like manner. We, like the German Protestants, *have rejected* the final authority of **the risen Son of God** Who gave us this land. *Having attributed* the many blessings of the **LORD’s Reformation** to our own “free-will” ingenuity, wicked leaders have been set up to be our betrayers. Therefore, as has been

covertly plotted for the last century, we will be attacked on our **West Coast** by the Red Chinese Navy and in the **Gulf Coast** and **Southeast** from the prearranged staging bases of Communist Cuba and the Bahamas. A combination of Soviet, Chinese and Arab Moslems with Mexican and Central American Latinos will systematically annihilate the apostate Protestant South full of Masonic Southern Baptist Churches that, because of the fear the Pope's Masonic Papal Knights running Washington, D.C., remained silent in the face of bureaucratic, IRS, BATF, FBI, Papal tyranny. The recantation and shameful execution of Protestant **Dietrich Bonhoeffer** will be the same fate of millions of Protestant and Baptist pastors and people. With our military defeated on foreign soil, confiscation of privately owned firearms, victorious foreign invasion, mass-execution and gang-rape of millions of American women and children, our invaders will partition the continent. The Jesuit/Roman Catholic enclaves of **Quebec** and **New England** may well be occupied by a Papal European force under the guise of "protecting" those areas from the continuing "Sino-Soviet-Moslem-Latin threat." Washington, like Berlin, will be partitioned and tens of millions of "*heretics and liberals*" will have been "*liquidated*" or "*extirpated*" from the face of the nation. Those spared of death will be enslaved to the Chinese, the Soviets and the Moslems. Between the Pope's Jesuit-controlled **DHS** and his Sino-Soviet-Moslem invaders, at least *five million* of **the LORD's** beloved Hebrew/Jewish/Israelitic covenant people will have been exterminated while only a remnant will have escaped to Israel—for a time! We Americans are between "a rock and a hard spot." We face the hammer of **domestic fascism** on one hand and the sickle **foreign commu-fascism** on the other. Like the Russian Orthodox and German Lutherans, we stand to be utterly crushed.

In light of the history of **the Society of Jesus** as outlined in previous chapters, we White Anglo-Saxon Protestant and Baptist Calvinist Puritans believe the foregoing basic scenario to be a surety within the next twenty to thirty years. There will be, as the Great Scottish Reformer, **John Knox**, declared, "*no escaping in the land.*" Our doom has been meticulously planned and cautiously sealed as described by **M. F. Cusack** in her 1896 masterpiece, *The Black Pope*. Every avenue of resistance has been usurped by direct and indirect agents of the military **Company of Jesus**, leaving us White Protestant and Baptist Calvinist American patriots *without recourse*—including *the supposed* elective franchise—in righting the wrongs perpetrated by the Pope's CFR-controlled American government (*legislative, executive and judicial*) over the last eighty years. We have been deprived of our Calvinist federation of Sovereign Republican Nations established by our spiritual brother and Father of "*These United States of America*," Baptist-Calvinist **George Washington**. *To our great shame and disgrace*, since the Presidency of Masonic **Theodore "Rex" Roosevelt**, we have been used to both *finance and fight* the Pope's foreign wars against nations having resisted or expelled the Jesuit Order from their dominions. We have been deprived of *our gold and silver coin* and thereby forced to use worthless fiat money issued by **the Pope's Federal Reserve Bank**; our once creative, inventive

## Conclusion



and moral, high White Protestant culture, typified by the well-known “*Protestant work ethic*,” has been shattered, evidenced by our once prosperous major cities.

Further, we shall say on. Continual socialist-communist policies, embraced by excessively criminal, Roman Catholic immigrants and their Papal Knights controlling the **Jesuit Theater** in Hollywood and the corrupt political machines of both CFR-controlled **Republican** and **Democratic** parties, have robbed us of our land and of the fruit of our labor. Our Biblical-based Constitution and State Common Law has been nullified by Jesuit-directed, pro-Roman Civil Law decisions of **the Black Pope’s**, CFR-controlled, socialist-communist and Masonic American Supreme Court. We have been deliberately targeted by the Supreme Court; and thus unwillingly, at the point of federal bayonets, we have been amalgamated with a host of pagan religions — *especially Romanism, but also including Islam, Hinduism, Masonic Protestantism, Talmudic Judaism (to the exclusion of Biblical Judaism based solely upon the Torah) Humanism, and Communist atheism, all of them subordinated to the Black Pope.*

Further, we shall say on. We have been cruelly coerced into forced race-mixing, in both our schools and communities, with alien peoples of color, including a savage horde of federally financed, welfare dependent, social security insurance-collecting, generally violent, hatefully racist, anti-White Protestant, pro-communist, revolutionary **Majority Blacks** and **Majority Latinos** who, in the name of avenging supposed injustices of past White English-speaking land holders and/or slave owners, annually commit at least *one million assaults, robberies, rapes and murders against Whites, many times brandishing advanced firearms ironically created by White men—without regard to either the national or religious affiliation of their miserable English-speaking, White-faced victims.* Further, the Order is using the socialist-communist, world revolutionary, **Majority Savage Blacks** of South Africa and Zimbabwe, murdering White “*heretics and liberals*,” in the exact same manner. (To the contrary, the **Minority Civil Blacks** in America, most of whom are Bible-believers and therefore do not hate Whites in obedience to **the Word of God**, work for a living and therefore seek to also avoid the same type of vicious crimes perpetrated against them by the decadent, **Majority Savage Blacks**. These respectable **Minority Civil Blacks** move into White communities and are thankful they have escaped the violent, crime-ridden, Black, **socialist-communist ghettos** usually patrolled by *frustrated, victimized and vindictive*, White Roman Catholic local police officers.)

All this heartbreak and ultimate annihilation of White “*heretic and liberal*” America is met with the gleeful delight of those infamous agitators of States and peoples, **the Company of Jesus**. The Order fully intends to destroy our White Middle Class race and to undermine our **God-given**, Biblical Reformed faith bequeathed to us by our patient, suffering and godly White forefathers who escaped the Jesuit Order’s Inquisition having raged throughout Europe for nearly two hundred and fifty years. Our White predecessors were so used by the risen **Lord Jesus Christ** to bring the

world out of the Pope's inquisitional, dungeon-laden **Dark Ages** in translating His **Reformation Bible** into the language of the Common White Man—**English!**

Further, we shall say more. Our **AV1611 Bible**-based, Puritan-founded, Common Public Schools, so accursed by the Jesuits, have been forever ruined, destroying our glorious White Protestant history (including the history of the Papacy's nightmarish **Inquisition**, it serving as the backdrop for the **Reformation**) and morally corrupting our beloved children—if we dare send them to those *humanistic, Bible-denying dens of iniquity*—via supposed “sex education” and unending, race-mixing, purposely Black-Supremacist, gladiatorial, Greco Roman games. A socialist-communist “property tax,” used to finance these pagan dens of iniquity, is extorted from us under the pain of being deprived of our hard-earned houses and lands so that at the end of life, *we own absolutely nothing*. Many of us have fallen for the bait of easy credit, converting **the LORD's elect** into the slaves of Jesuit-controlled usurers, forever binding us to cunningly calculated, exorbitant credit card debt.

Further, we shall say more. Our White Protestant, Constitutionally protected right to own and bear arms—*especially hand guns and so-called “assault rifles”*—is constantly under attack by both federal and state legislatures, the Order fully intending to deprive us of weapons that would give us parity in resisting organized street gangs, a centralized, commu-fascist domestic tyranny or the repelling of that monstrous future attack of our incited Sino-Soviet-Moslem-Latino invaders. Both domestic and international commerce has been destroyed through the **Pope's Sicilian Mafia**-controlled, centralized and pro-communist, thieving “*Labor Unions*,” as well as Rome's “*British free trade*” treaties such as **GATT** and **NAFTA**. Thus, we have been deprived of the blessing of our highly productive domestic corporations; millions of American jobs have been given to foreign workers. The **Pope's Federal Reserve Bank**, to which every bank is tied within the United States via the currency circulated by those institutions, has driven *eighty percent of all US dollars* to foreign banking havens, further depleting our capital base so critically and absolutely necessary for economic development in accommodating an expanding population.

In short, **The Great Remonstrance**, authored by England's Calvinist Puritans, therewith setting the stage for **Oliver Cromwell's Puritan Revolution**, is the foremost example for us White Calvinist, North American, Puritan Bible-believers in resisting the Pope's Temporal Power! Cromwell's Baptist-Calvinist Independents were righteously pitted against the Jesuit Order's licentious, **Magna Charta**-trashing tyranny of **King Charles I**. We, **the risen Son of God's** New Testament Church in North America, must depart from infidelity and apostasy as we in faith sally forth to resist Rome's Temporal Power—now enforced through President Bush who has called the **United States Constitution** “a god\_\_\_\_\_ piece of paper.” Make no mistake, this fascist tyranny will continue to worsen and we will be driven to make the same statement as did **John Witherspoon**, “*The time is not ripe, but rotten.*”

## Conclusion

Our dilemma leaves us with but **Four Choices** for the White Anglo-Saxon Protestant and Baptist-Calvinist Puritan in answer to our coming Jesuit-contrived, domestic and foreign, inquisitional annihilation. **The First Choice** we can apply is Messiah's "Sermon on the Mount" in *turning the other cheek* (**Matthew 5-7**). This commanded non-resistance to Romish tyranny was intended only for the Hebrew nation of Israel in anticipation of **Jesus the Messiah's** soon re-establishment of the earthly Kingdom of David. Ordained by an unbreakable, unilateral covenant with **King David (I Chronicles 17:11-14)**, **God's promise** of an eternal, earthly Kingdom to be ruled by a specific **seed of David**, *Who would never sin and Who would never die while governing the nations in fulfillment of the Abrahamic Covenant*, was to only **the LORD's** beloved, *racial and repentant* nation of Israel. This non-resistance to governmental tyranny, Popish-Arminian Protestants and Baptists have willingly adopted. In being disarmed and imprisoned, Calvinists by the millions have also done the same, while committing our souls to a faithful Creator, the just suffering at the hands of the unjust Papists and their *free-will surrogates*, whoever they may be.

**The Second Choice** is *expatriation*; for us to move to another country, renounce our citizenship and, over a period of time, be admitted to the political community of our new nation. Meanwhile, we watch the unfolding drama of the death of our people and the ruination of the beloved country of our birth. We Calvinists have been forced to this extreme many, many times. **William I of Orange** fled for his life, leaving Holland to take up residence in Protestant Germany until his countrymen had had enough of mass-murder inflicted by the Sons of Loyola at the hand of the **Duke of Alva's "Blood Council."** As Dutch Reformed Calvinists, many of us forsook Holland and settled in the wilds of North America and South Africa. We founded new communities, such as **New Amsterdam**, later becoming New York City, and **Johannesburg**, the largest city of our Reformed **Boer Republic**. Being England's Calvinist Reformed and Baptist preachers, we were driven into exile under pain of death by "**Bloody Mary**;" we returned after her demise and accession of our beloved **Queen Elizabeth I**. Under the absolute tyranny of the Jesuit Order's **King Charles I**, thousands of us departed for Holland and America seeking religious and thus political freedom. Even our beloved **Oliver Cromwell** had planned to board one of eight ships lying in the Thames preparing to set sail for America. But the Remonstrance was passed by a mere eleven votes; Cromwell remained, and England's Reformation and Magna Charta were saved. As **Huguenots**, after suffering a terrible butchery, we were driven from our native France by the *hundreds of thousands*, taking refuge in the Protestant nations of Switzerland, the Netherlands, Great Britain and America. Our relentless persecution arose after **Jesuit Pere La Chaise** moved **King Louis XIV**, *against his will*, to abolish our freedom of worship in 1685 by revoking our beloved **King Henry IV's** most glorious **Edict of Nantes**. These stories are legion and could be enumerated for hours. The point is we must take action based upon choices laid before us by the written **Word of God—the Reformation Bible!**

What is most telling about our past flight from papal tyranny and resultant expatriation is that we settled in **Two Distinct Havens** of temporary rest. **The First Haven** consisted of established Protestant nations. They all had fought fratricidal civil wars in securing the Protestant liberty of freedom of conscience to worship the one true **God** according to their private interpretation of **the Holy Scriptures**—*freely printed in their native languages!!!* **The Second Haven** was composed of wild, uncivilized lands, uncorrupted by the persecuting presence of the Jesuits and the Pope's resident hierarchy. Such were North America, South Africa and Australia.

The great dilemma today, however, is that there are no White Protestant nations in which to find relative safety or a temporary rest. *Every* historically White Protestant government has been usurped by the Jesuits, via the Order's "*trusted third parties*," and every Protestant nation has been disarmed of their "*Swords of Just Defense*"—except America. Additionally, there are no more uncivilized lands, which we can purchase from the natives as we had done in the Colonies of North America. (Every acre of land within my sovereign nation-state of Pennsylvania was purchased from the once **Shemitic American Natives**.) Every continent and nation today is under the government of the Papacy through the intrigue of **the Society of Jesus** controlling **the Black Pope's** "Invisible Empire" of International, 33<sup>rd</sup> Degree Scottish Rite Freemasonry. **The Two Distinct Havens** to which we have fled in the past, in securing a temporary respite from the "*long arm of the Church*," are now gone!

**The Third Choice** is Biblical flight, to retreat deep within the mountainous regions of the nation, carrying arms for personal protection and provisions for a long and difficult survival in the wild (**Luke 22:35-36**). At this, the Church during the **Dark Ages** became a master, avoiding contact with Papal armies that would immediately "*catch and kill the little foxes*," so stated by **Pope Innocent III**. The **Albigenses**, while seeking to escape the Pope's Temporal Power, were hunted down and completely annihilated by the Vatican's Roman Catholic army of France.

**The Fourth Choice**, for which we Calvinists are so renowned as being resolute men, strong in the faith of the **Lord Christ Jesus (I Corinthians 16:13)**, is to submit to God and then formally withdraw our allegiance from any Popish, tyrannical, Jesuit-controlled government and take up the "*Sword of Just Defense*." Meanwhile, we abide in submission to a local, anti-Pope, Bible-believing Church (preaching in English **The Authorized King James Version of 1611**), and *giving allegiance* to a duly constituted, supreme governmental body defending our ancient rights as English freemen (**I Peter 2:13-14**). We then strive against the sin of Jesuit tyranny, "*resisting unto blood (Hebrews 12:4)*." We White Calvinists in America secured our sacred right to "*the Sword of Just Defense*" with the **Second Amendment**. For the **Bill of Rights** was written by a Baptist Calvinist, **James Madison**, at the behest of **Pastor John Leland**, Virginia's renowned Baptist-Calvinist preacher. We fought under our beloved Baptist-Calvinist **General George Washington**—*the greatest man of his*

## Conclusion

age—in resisting the Jesuit-incited English tyranny of **King George III**. For that absolute tyranny had incurred the unjust loss of life, liberty and property so indispensable to the preaching of the true gospel of **the Lord Jesus Christ**, including the living of a peaceable life in all godliness and true holiness.

Further, we drew the sword against the Order's **King Philip II** of Spain in fighting under our beloved **William I of Orange** for the liberty of the Reformed Protestant Dutch Republic; we won that war after a bloody struggle of eighty years. We fought under the brilliant and brave **Queen Elizabeth I** against the **Pope's Spanish Armada** in 1588, **the risen Son of God** finishing the fight on our behalf after we ran out of food and ammunition. We fought as **Huguenots** against the armies of France after the Jesuits sought to annihilate us all during **Saint Bartholomew's Massacre**. Again, as Huguenots, we fought under the French **King Henry IV** for our right to freedom of worship secured by the marvelous **Edict of Nantes**. We fought as Calvinist Lutherans under the faithful and humble Swedish "Snow King of the North," **Gustavus Adolphus the Great**, in saving Protestant Germany from the Order's **Emperor Ferdinand II** and his complete, Bavarian-led, Romish butchery of German Protestantism known as **The Thirty Years' War**. In England, we penned **The Great Remonstrance** and then fought under the banners of our beloved and courageous Protector, **Oliver Cromwell**, as he made war against the Order's **King Charles I** under the colors of the Puritan-dominated English Parliament. Aye, we fought as **Covenanters** for Scottish liberty against the tyrannical English **King Charles II** who made "Scotland to howl" for twenty-eight years for our secession—which included our refusal to pay his taxes and fight his wars! We fought in England's bloodless **Glorious Revolution of 1688**, driving the **Jesuit King James II** from the United Kingdom into the arms of his Jesuit Papal masters in France.

It was under the leadership of "bulletproof" **General George Washington**, that we drew our tested "*Swords of Just Defense*" against the savage, scalping, Native American Shemites who, under the influence of the Jesuits, sought to annihilate all White Protestant settlers during the **French-Indian War**. Oh yes, we fought under **Andrew Jackson** in the **Battle of New Orleans** as the Jesuits once again sought to reduce our Calvinist Republic to the sure mercies of **King George III** during the **War of 1812**. While subjects of Mexico in responding to the Popish attack upon our right to worship **God** according to the dictates of our consciences tempered by the anti-Pope, Protestant-wrought **King James AV1611 Bible**, we fought under our fearless **General Sam Houston**. Surnamed "**Black Raven**" by the Cherokee People who adopted him into their tribe, the courageous Houston burned the bridge at **San Jacinto**, eliminating any possibility of retreat when he led us to victory. We then succeeded in defeating the Jesuit tyranny of Mexico's Roman Catholic **General Santa Anna**, going on to win the liberty of the **Protestant Republic of Texas** in 1836. We fought fearlessly and desperately under our beloved **General Robert E. Lee**, unaware that he was a traitor. We fought under the good and godly Presbyterian,

**General Thomas “Stonewall” Jackson**, after our State of Virginia, in sovereign Convention, withdrew our allegiance from the Order’s Socialist-Communist, Radical Red, pro-Black/anti-White, Federalist/Republican-usurped government of the United States. We wrote a White Protestant Calvinist Confederate Constitution and, to the man, set out to repel the socialist, Federal Yankee/Commu-Nazi Armies of Northern Aggression. For the first two years our armies were blessed with providential victories, many times outnumbered three to one. But we were betrayed at Gettysburg by that Jesuit Coadjutor, **General James Longstreet**, who, later blaming General Lee for the defeat, became a Radical Republican. From then on the Jesuits in Washington, using their Roman Catholic **General Philip Sheridan** and pro-Jesuit **General Sherman**, whose son, **Thomas**, became a Jesuit, physically destroyed our White Protestant Southern Culture, and, with the coerced passage of **Jesuit Coadjutor James G. Blaine’s** Fourteenth Amendment, our Calvinist nation vanished.

Whether we won or lost, we fought first prayerfully and then valiantly, on a thousand fields of battle as godly warriors with manly firmness: *we were disciplined and fearless White Calvinist Freemen!* Without a twinge of conscience, our minds were fully persuaded to engage in righteous wars of resistance to unlawful Jesuit tyranny, fought in submission to the infallible, written Protestant Bible, **the Word of God**. Our hearts knew no fear as we galloped at full speed with our swords raised to heaven, unsheathed only in defense of our **God-given faith** and wielded in the face of savage Popish armies led by the priests of the damnable **Society of Jesus**. Our **God and Father**, our risen Savior—**the Lord Jesus Christ**, our dear families and local church brethren inspired us to spiritual warfare leading into the physical realm of first the Parliaments and Congresses, the courts, and finally the battlefields. There, we drew our “*Swords of Just Defense*.” We won the victories so essential in acquiring and maintaining our inalienable **God-given** rights, including blood-bought lands we had tilled with the sweat of our brows, the fruit of which to be used in dedication to honest, obedient mission work furthering the Gospel of the risen **Lord Jesus Christ**.

But now, after **the Devil’s** unparalleled Twentieth Century, during which he thoroughly restored the **White Pope’s Temporal Power** over every nation on earth using **the Black Pope’s** hammer of the “**Holy Roman**” **Fourteenth Amendment American Empire**, we are faced with a terrible dilemma. Anti-Pope Protestantism as described above is a dead horse, an empty shell, a suppressed history, a forgotten dream of faithful men beating down the **Spiritual** and **Political** tyranny of the Pope of Rome. These feats of faith were realized while we trusted the one true invisible **God** to keep His **Word** if we would but obey Him. All of the above has now changed. We no longer, *in simple faith against all odds*, collectively set out to *sincerely pray* before **the LORD** that He may do the impossible on our behalf. We never really put Him to the test of His **Word**, and so He remains silent, unmoved and *will not deliver us from our enemies*. We do not really believe the words He has inspired and exerted the

### Conclusion

effort to preserve. We don't believe He even has an infallible Book called **The Bible** any longer. Therefore, we have, in fact, become *spiritual cowards* refusing to contend with evil men in every arena of life on behalf of the truth of our great **God**, "***the God of heaven, which hath made the sea and dry land.***" We have become the degenerate sons of noble sires, ignorant of our fabulous history, while enslaved to the debt of mortgages and loans created out of thin air. We have a form of fundamental, historic, Bible-based godliness, but we deny the power thereof. We abhor powerful, fearless preaching, lest we fall on our faces, confess our sins of faithless unbelief and amend our ways that once again **the risen Son of God, the Lord Jesus Christ** may work His awesome exploits through us! Our assemblies are full of Popish perversions of the true **Word of God**. Thus, we don't even read **His Word** anymore, but have more time for the "programming" of **the Pope's Hollywood Jesuit Theater**, than showing ourselves approved of **God**, rightly dividing the **Word of Truth**. At this moment, the Church of North America is the Church of rank unbelief, cowering at the feet of oath-bound, evil men who call themselves "the government." **The LORD's** American Church, His blessed Body, is suffering under a host of Supreme Court-induced injustices and is totally unprepared for the bloody scenario about to be commenced in our lifetimes. Beset by our personal sins and no longer unspotted from the world, we are hoping for a pre-tribulational "rapture," or rather "*appearing*," of our risen Savior for His Church. We have *twisted* our **Blessed Hope (Titus 2:13-14)** into an excuse for allowing bold, bad men in the service of **Antichrist in Rome** to triumph over us. *And indeed they have!*

**Dear Elect Brethren**, it is now time for us to *acquit ourselves as men*. Away with indecision and the ungodly fear of our present Jesuit-fascist tyranny, *as time will allow it no longer*. In light of the unfolding sequence of events in the Middle East, *especially in Iraq*, we must boldly declare our complete outrage and revulsion over this **American-led, Papal Crusade** against the Moslems, remembering that Iraq expelled the usurping **Society of Jesus** from its borders in 1969!! In proceeding, we White Anglo-Saxon Bible-believing Protestants and Baptist Calvinist Puritans must repent, confessing our sins privately to our **Heavenly Father** and then confessing our faults corporately within our local assemblies. We then must return to the reading of His Word, **The Authorized King James Version of 1611**. We must individually enter into solemn Leagues and Covenants with each other as blood-bound members of our local churches. And then we must enter into solemn Leagues and Federations with other assemblies of like precious faith, to which our Scotch Presbyterian brethren pledged themselves over three centuries ago.

Finally, in Faith and in Solemn League and Covenant with each other, **WE MUST FORMALLY WITHDRAW OUR ALLEGIANCE FROM THIS BLOODY, JESUIT-RIDDEN, CENTRALIZED ANTI-WHITE, POPISH GOVERNMENT OF THE VATICAN'S "HOLY ROMAN" FOURTEENTH AMENDMENT AMERICAN EMPIRE**, wickedly and deceitfully created under our noses in 1868. We then must

pray and act, moving our individual State governments to *secede* from Rome's American Empire. When the first American State or Canadian Province secedes, we Puritan Calvinists will move into its jurisdiction, give our allegiance *without mental reservation* and then prepare for a long and protracted war with the United Nations, as we most assuredly will be attacked. Our oppressors intend to give us no quarter, and we intend not to receive it in the face of certain death, as our **Great God** will once again fight for us. But, if **the LORD** is not pleased to deliver us, be it known we shall not bow the knee or kiss the ring of that **Roman Antichrist**. For:

We, who are, **Christ's elect**; the powers of **the Pope**, reject!  
 At the end of this age, with naught to lose; **Loyola's Pontiff**, we refuse!  
**Masonic** leaders, insist we bow, to "**Mary's CFR-matrix**," here and now.  
**Bare Skull and Bonesmen** in Yale's dark crypt,  
 "The slippered toe of **the Pope**," they reverently kiss.  
 Two of these Knights play "Presidential ploys,"  
**George Bush** and **John Kerry**, Cardinal Egan's altar boys.  
 "Left" **Soros** and "Right" **Murdoch**, abide wedded at the hip,  
 Evidenced by, their notorious, CFR membership.  
 Along with **Maltese Knights** flanked by **Opus Dei**,  
 In the shadows they command **the Pope's CIA**.  
 Locking the **KGB** with the **FBI**, was **Opus Dei HanSSen**, our greatest spy.  
 Like these cowards, at **the Black Pope's** feet, shall we **our Savior**, thus we meet?  
*With Papal armies, we shall ever contend!*—Our Finest Hour, afore life's end!  
 That **Man of Sin** we did not own, though racked, raped and flayed to the bone.  
 One day in the air, we shall arise, to receive from **God's Son**, our lawful prize!  
 That future reward is dear unto us, more so than our fear, *of Jesuit blood lust*.  
 "**Quit you like men**" and "**be strong**," we're told,  
 It's **Christ** working in us; Yes, it's **He, Who** makes us, **BOLD!**

We are now prepared, as tyranny-resisting White Calvinists, to serve our **God and Father** of the **risen Lord Jesus Christ**. In obeying *I John 1:9*, our **Father** has cleansed our hearts and minds of all sin and disobedience. We have committed ourselves in separating from the Pope's American Empire by establishing our new White Protestant and Puritan Baptist-Calvinist nation within North America. The **risen Son of God**, the blessed **Lord Jesus Christ**, Israel's **Messiah**, will willingly come to our aid and defense, as He has done so many times in the past. The moment has arrived. We have no other choice but to establish a new White nation conceived in Biblical liberty. Our motive is pure, our formation is Biblical, our plan is historical and our outcome is in the hands of our **Almighty Heavenly Father**. May **the LORD** be with you, my elect brethren, as we do our patriotic duty until we, "*in the twinkling of an eye*," are gathered together at the feet of **the Son of Man!**

Brother Eric Jon Phelps, March, 2007

### Conclusion



“The unity of government, which constitutes you one [*White Protestant*] people, is also now dear to you. It is justly so; for it is a main pillar in the edifice of your real independence; the support of your tranquility at home; your peace abroad; of your safety; of your prosperity; of that very liberty which you so highly prize. . . . Hence, likewise, they [**the States**] will avoid the necessity of those **overgrown military establishments**, which under any form of government are inauspicious to liberty, and which are to be regarded as **particularly hostile to republican liberty**. . . .

However combinations or associations of the above description [*“a small, but artful and enterprising minority of the community”*] may now and then answer popular ends, they are likely, in the course of time and things, to become **potent engines** by which **cunning, ambitious, and unprincipled men will be enabled to subvert the power of the people, and to usurp for themselves the reigns of government; destroying afterwards the very engines which have lifted them to unjust dominion**. . . . One method of assault may be to effect in the forms of the constitution **alterations** which will impair the energy of the system, **and thus to undermine what cannot be directly overthrown** [*via the “ratified” 14<sup>th</sup>, 15<sup>th</sup>, 16<sup>th</sup> and 17<sup>th</sup> Amendments using Republican Administrations*]. . . .

The disorders and miseries which result [*from “the continual mischiefs of the spirit of party”*], gradually incline the minds of men to seek security and repose in the **absolute power of an individual**, and, sooner or later, **the chief** of some prevailing faction, more and more fortunate than his competitors, **turns this disposition to the purposes of his own elevation on the ruins of the public liberty**. . . .

But let there be **no change by usurpation**; for through this, in one instance, may be the instrument of good, **it is the customary weapon by which free governments are destroyed**. . . . Against the **insidious wiles of foreign influence** (I conjure you to believe me, fellow-citizens) the jealousy of a free people ought to be constantly awake, since history and experience prove that **foreign influence** is one of the most **baneful foes of republican government**. . . . Real patriots, who may resist the intrigues of the favorite, are liable to become suspected and odious; wile its tools and dupes usurp the applause and confidence of the people to surrender their interests. . . . I hold the maxim no less applicable to public than to private affairs, that **honesty is always the best policy**.” <sup>{16}</sup> [Emphasis added]

President George Washington, 1796  
*Farewell Address*

## **Appendix I**

### **Abbreviations**

**ABC** - American Broadcasting Company (US TV Network)

**ADA** - American Dental Association

**AIC** - American International Corporation

**AIDS** - Acquired Immune Deficiency Syndrome

**AIG** - American International Group (formerly AIC)

**AMA** - American Medical Association

**AP** - Associated Press

**CBS** - Columbia Broadcasting System (US TV Network)

**CDC** - Center for Disease Control (Centers for Disease Control & Prevention)

**CFR** - Council on Foreign Relations (Rules American Government)

**Cheka** - **Soviet Secret Police (1917-1922)**

**CIA** - Central Intelligence Agency (US Government)

**CNN** - Cable News Network

**COSCO** - China Ocean Shipping Company

**FBI** - Federal Bureau of Investigation (US Government)

**FDA** - Food & Drug Administration (US Government)

**FDR** - Franklin Delano Roosevelt

**FEMA** - Federal Emergency Management Agency (US Government)

**FSB** - **Russian Secret Police; formerly the KGB (1995-Present)**

**GATT** - General Agreement on Tariffs and Trade

**GPU** - **Soviet Secret Police (1922)**

**GRU** - Russian: SNG Military Intelligence

**HIV** - Human Immune Deficiency Virus

**IMM** - International Mercantile Marine

**IRA** - Irish Republican Army

**IRS** - Internal Revenue Service (Private Corporation employed by the US Government)

**ITT (IT&T)** - International Telephone & Telegraph Company

**JFK** - John Fitzgerald Kennedy

**KGB** - **Soviet Secret Police (1953-1991)**

**MGB** - **Soviet Secret Police (1946-1953)**

**MID** - Military Intelligence Division

**NAFTA** - North American Free Trade Agreement

**NATO** - North Atlantic Treaty Organization

**NBC** - National Broadcasting Company (US TV Network)

**NKGB** - **Soviet Secret Police (1943-1946)**

**NKVD** - **Soviet Secret Police (1934-1943)**

**NOI** - Nation of Islam (Black American Neo-Islamic cult)

**NSA** - National Security Agency (US Government)

**OGPU** - **Soviet Secret Police (1922-1934)**

**OHS** - Office of Homeland Security (US Government)

**ONI** - Office of Naval Intelligence (US Government)

**OSS** - Office of Strategic Services (US Government)

**RIIA** - Royal Institute of International Affairs (Rules British Government)

**SD** - Nazi Sicherheitsdienst (SS Security Service)

**SDS** - Students for a Democratic Society

**SIS** - Secret Intelligence Service (British MI6)

**SJ** - Society of Jesus

**SMOM** - Sovereign Military Order of Malta

**SS** - Nazi “Schutzstaffel” (Elite Police Guard Detachment)

**SVR** - **Russian Foreign Intelligence; former FCD of the KGB (1991-Present)**

**UN** - United Nations

**UPI** - United Press International

**USA** - United States of America

**USSR** - Union of Soviet Socialist Republics

## **Appendix II**

### **Scriptures**

#### **Beginning of Book and Quotes**

- *II Thessalonians 2:3-10*
- *Daniel 12:8-10*
- *Hebrews 1:1, 2*

#### **Web Page**

- *Proverbs 28:1*
- *Proverbs 29:25*
- *Psalms 27:1*
- *II Corinthians 4:4*
- *Revelation 17:1, 4, 18; 18:24*
- *Revelation 13:14*
- *II Thessalonians 2:3*
- *Revelation 13:4*
- *Revelation 11:2; 13:5*
- *Daniel 9:27*
- *Matthew 24:15*
- *Daniel 11:36*
- *II Thessalonians 2:4*
- *Daniel 7:25*
- *Daniel 8:25*
- *Genesis 49:10*
- *II Thessalonians 1:8*
- *Revelation 19:15*
- *Revelation 5:5*
- *Isaiah 42:13*
- *Psalms 110:6*
- *Zechariah 14:4*
- *Daniel 7:14*
- *Luke 1:32*
- *Zechariah 9:10*
- *Isaiah 9:7*
- *Micah 4:3, 8*
- *Isaiah 2:3*
- *Jeremiah 23:6*
- *Jeremiah 3:17*
- *Psalms 72:11*
- *Philippians 2:10, 11*
- *John 5:22, 23*
- *Luke 21:24*
- *Revelation 19:16*

#### **Personal Dedication**

- *Psalms 27:13*

#### **Reflections**

- *Zechariah 13:6*

#### **Introduction**

- *II Corinthians 3:17*
- *II Thessalonians 2:3-12*
- *I John 2:18*

- *Revelation 13:4-18*
- *Matthew 24:15*
- *Revelation 17:6*
- *John 3:7*
- *Romans 3:10, 12, 23; 6:23*
- *Acts 16:31, 4:12*
- *I Corinthians 15:3, 4*
- *Acts 17:30, 31*
- *John 1:12*
- *Hebrews 4:16*
- *James 4:7*
- *Hebrews 12:4*
- *John 14:13, 14*
- *Ephesians 5:11, 13, 17*

#### **Chapter 3**

- *John 19:19*

#### **Chapter 4**

- *Matthew 28:18-20*

#### **Chapter 10**

- *Hebrews 11:33, 34*

#### **Chapter 12**

- *I Samuel 17:29*
- *Nehemiah 6:11*

#### **Chapter 13**

- *Matthew 12:26*
- *Proverbs 29:2*
- *Jeremiah 30:7*
- *Revelation 11:2*
- *Matthew 24:15*
- *Revelation 13:3-10*
- *Daniel 7:20*

#### **Pause II**

- *Isaiah 60:10, 12*
- *Matthew 24:15*

#### **Chapter 16**

- *Daniel 9:26*

#### **Chapter 17**

- *Proverbs 14:34*

#### **Chapter 20**

- *II Thessalonians 2:3*
- *Revelation 13:11, 12*

#### **Chapter 22**

- *II Thessalonians 2:4*
- *Romans 1:16*

#### **Chapter 24**

– *Jeremiah 30:7*

– *Psalms 118:22*

### **Chapter 26**

– *Nehemiah 12:23-31*

– *Matthew 10:5*

### **Chapter 28**

– *Revelation 13:17*

### **Chapter 29**

– *II Thessalonians 2:4*

### **Chapter 34**

– *Romans 9:4*

– *Isaiah 9:7*

– *Luke 1:32, 33*

– *Matthew 19:28*

– *John 4:22*

### **Chapter 35**

– *Daniel 9:26*

– *Revelation 18:3, 23*

– *Genesis 12:3*

– *Zechariah 2:8*

– *Malachi 3:6*

### **Chapter 36**

– *Daniel 9:26*

– *Daniel 11:38*

### **Pause IV**

– *Galatians 6:7*

– *I John 2:28*

### **Chapter 37**

– *Hosea 3:4, 5; 6:1, 2*

– *Romans 10:1*

– *Romans 11:1, 12, 16, 25, 28, 30*

– *Romans 15:8, 9*

– *II Thessalonians 2:7*

### **Chapter 38**

– *Daniel 2:44, 45*

– *I Corinthians 15:51, 52*

– *I Thessalonians 4:16, 17*

– *II Thessalonians 2:3, 4*

– *II Thessalonians 2:7, 6*

– *Romans 11:26*

– *Daniel 8:24, 25*

### **Pause V**

– *Revelation 18:2*

– *Jeremiah 50:39-40*

– *Isaiah 13:19-20*

– *Zechariah 5:7-11*

– *Leviticus 19:36*

– *Amos 5:8*

– *Revelation 17:18*

– *Genesis 10:10*

– *Revelation 18:3, 11, 15, 23*

– *Daniel 9: 24-27*

– *Matthew 24:15, 16, 21*

– *II Thessalonians 2: 3, 4*

### **Chapter 44**

– *Daniel 8:23; 7:25; 11:36, 37*

– *II Thessalonians 2:4*

– *Matthew 24:15*

– *Revelation 11:1, 2*

– *Genesis 4:8-10*

– *Genesis 9:6*

### **Chapter 47**

– *Proverbs 28:13*

– *Hebrews 11:35*

– *II Corinthians 5:10*

– *Revelation 18:23*

### **Chapter 48**

– *Job 21:7, 13, 14, 31*

– *Luke 4:5-7*

– *Luke 21:20, 24*

– *Deuteronomy 28:25, 37*

– *Deuteronomy 28:43, 44, 64-67*

– *I Chronicles 19:13*

### **Chapter 49**

– *Isaiah 14:12, 16, 17*

– *Revelation 18:10, 23*

– *Revelation 18:4*

### **Chapter 50**

– *John 15:6*

– *Isaiah 42:22-24*

### **Conclusion**

– *Luke 22:35, 36*

– *II Chronicles 7:14*

– *I John 1:9*

– *Revelation 13:17*

– *II Timothy 4:2*

– *I Corinthians 16:13*

– *Joshua 1:6-9*

– *Genesis 9:6*

– *Romans 13:3, 4*

– *Revelation 2:6, 15*

– *Ecclesiastes 3:8*

– *II Chronicles 20:12*

– *II Chronicles 20:15*

– *James 5:16*

– *Micah 5:4*

– *Zechariah 12:10; 13:6*

## Appendix III

### Sources

#### Beginnings and Introduction

1. *The Jesuits Catechism, According to St. Ignatius Loyola*, A. H., (London: John Lawrence, 1685) pp. 43-47.
2. *Halley's Bible Handbook*, Henry H. Halley, (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Zondervan Publishing House, 1965; originally published in 1927) pp. 731, 780-781, 732.
3. *A Woman Rides the Beast*, Dave Hunt, (Eugene, Oregon: Harvest House Publishers, 1994) pp. 153, 85, 125, 85; citing *The Papacy and the Civil Power*, R. W. Thompson, (New York: 1876) pp. 368, 244, 248; citing *History of the Popes of Rome*, Cormenin, p. 243.
4. *The British Quarterly Review*, "Paparchy and Nationality", G. R. Badenoch, January 1, 1875, pp. 4, 5.
5. *The Devil In Robes: Or, The Sin of Priests*, J Scott Carr, (St. Louis: Continental Bible House, 1900) p. 332.
6. *The Secret History of the Oxford Movement*, Walter Walsh, (London: Swan Sonnenschein and Co., 1899) p. 259.
7. *Ibid*, p. 255.
8. *Ibid*, p. 256.
9. *Ibid*, p. 256.
10. *Rome's Responsibility for the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln*, Thomas M. Harris, (Carthage, North Carolina: MM Publishing, 2004; originally published in 1897) pp. 5, 6, 7.
11. *The Black Pope*, M. F. Cusack, (London: Marshall, Russell & Co., 1896) pp. 228, 204, 228.
12. *The British Quarterly Review*, "Paparchy and Nationality", pp. 15, 21, 22.
13. *The Crisis: Or, The Enemies of America Unmasked*, J. Wayne Laurens, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: G. D. Miller, 1855) p. 301.
14. *The Jesuit Conspiracy: The Secret Plan of the Order*, Abbate [*Abate*] Leone, (London: Chapman and Hall, 1848) pp. 60, 80, 81.
15. *Ibid*, pp. 213, 214, 215, 216; quoting *Instruzione a' principi intorno alla maniera colla quale si governano i Padri Gesuiti*, Thommaso Campanella (author of *City of the Sun*), (No city: Not intended for publication, 1655?) Bibliotheque Royale de Paris, No 636.
16. *History of the Jesuits: Their Origin, Progress, Doctrines, and Designs*, G. B. Nicolini of Rome, (London: Henry G. Bohn, 1889) pp. 45, 92, 93, 34.
17. *The Counter-Reformation in Europe*, Arthur R. Pennington, (London: Elliot Stock, 1899) pp. 57, 58.
18. *The History of the Jesuits*, Jim Arrabito, (Angwen, California: LLT Productions, 1988; quoting from *The Fiery Jesuits*; originally published in 1667) Video, 97 minutes.
19. *The Jesuit Conspiracy: The Secret Plan of the Order*, p. 134.
20. *A Glimpse of the Great Secret Society*, Multiple Contributors, (London: William Macintosh, 1872) pp. 95, 64, 65; citing *Report on the Constitutions of the Jesuits*, M. Louis Rene de Caraduc de la Chalotais, Procureur-General of King Louis XV to the Parliament of Bretagne; translated from the French, 1762.
21. *The Great Controversy*, Ellen G. White, (Deland, Florida: Laymen For Religious Liberty, 1990; originally published in 1888) pp. 234-236.
22. *The Jesuits: Their History and Crimes*, Multiple Contributors, (London: Protestant Truth Society, 1918) p. 5.
23. *The Doctrine of the Jesuits*, Paul Bert, Member of the French Chamber of Deputies, (Boston: B. F. Bradbury & Co., 1880) pp. 574, 575, 576, 577, 578, 579, 580.
24. *Religion Under the Barons of Baltimore*, C. Ernest Smith, (Baltimore: E. Allen Lycett, 1899) pp. 272, 273, 274, 298.
25. *Papal Rome As It Is, By A Roman*, L. Aloysium Giustiniani, (Baltimore: Publication Rooms, 1843) pp. 218, 219, 221, 222.

26. *The History of Protestantism*, James A. Wylie, (London: Cassell, Petter & Galpin, Ltd., 1878) Vol. II of III, Book Fifteenth, pp. 388, 389.
27. *Protestantism and Catholicity*, Jaime Balmes, (Baltimore, Maryland: John Murphy & Co., 1851) pp. 268, 269.
28. *Romanism Analyzed*, John McDonald, (Edinburgh: Scottish Reformation Society, 1894) p. 47.
29. *The Counter-Reformation in Europe*, pp. 64, 65, 66, 67.
30. *Papism in the XIX. Century, in the United States*, Robert J. Breckinridge, Baltimore: David Owen & Son, 1841) p. 206.
31. *The Jesuit Conspiracy: The Secret Plan of the Order*, p. 134.
32. *The Jesuits: Their Foundation and History*, B. N., (London: Burns & Oates, 1879) Vol. II of II, p. 88.
33. *Popery. An Enemy to Civil and Religious Liberty; and Dangerous to Our Republic*, William C. Brownlee, (New York: John S. Taylor, 1836) p. 204, 205.
34. *A Glimpse of the Great Secret Society*, pp. lxxi-lxxiv; citing *Introduction to the Secret Instructions of the Jesuits*, Charles Sauvestre, (Paris, 1863).
35. *The Mystery of Iniquity; Or, Romanism Not Christianity*, Jesse S. Gilbert, (Newark, New Jersey: Ward and Tichenor Publishers, 1872) pp. 228, 243, 244.
36. *Romanism: A Menace to the Nation*, Jeremiah J. Crowley, (Aurora, Missouri: The Menace Publishing Co., 1912) p. 573.
37. *The Great Silence Conspiracy; A Fully Documented Exposure of Romanmasonry (Catholic Action) and Fascism*, Andrew Sinclair, (London: No Publisher, 1965) p. 19.
38. *The Footprints of the Jesuits*, R. W. Thompson, (New York: Hunt and Eaton, 1894) pp. 4, 5, 28, 29, 30.
39. *The Pope—Chief of White Slavers, High Priest of Intrigue*, Jeremiah J. Crowley, (Aurora, Missouri: The Menace Publishing Co., 1913) pp. 119, 118.
40. *The Jesuits: What Are They? Who Are They? What Have They Done? What Are They Doing?*, F. A. C. Lillingston, (London: Robert Banks & Son, 1900?) pp. 31-32.
41. *Popery, Puseyism, and Jesuitism*, Luigi Desanctis, (London: D. Catt, 1905; translated by Maria Betts from the original Italian edition published as *Roma Papale* in 1865) pp. 128, 129, 134, 140, 141, 139.
42. *Modern Jesuitism*, E. H. Michelsen, (London: Publisher unlisted, 1863) pp. 168-170.
43. *The Jesuits In Great Britain: An Historical Inquiry Into Their Political Influence*, Walter Walsh, (London: George Routledge and Sons, 1903) pp. 327, 345, 346.
44. *The “Federal” Reserve Conspiracy & Rockefellers*, Emanuel Josephson, (New York: Chedney Press, 1968) p. 72, 5, 6, 72.
45. *The Time of Jacob’s Trouble: An Answer to the Question of a Little Jewish Girl: “What Makes Folks Hate Us So?”* Louis S. Bauman, (Long Beach, California: Louis S. Bauman, 1939) p. 96.
46. *The Jesuits: The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church*, Malachi Martin, (New York: Simon and Schuster, Inc., 1988) pp. 79, 80, 81, 82, 94.
47. *Jesuit Plots Against Britain from Queen Elizabeth to King George V. Compiled from Old State Papers and Recently Recovered Vatican Documents, 300 to 400 Years Old and Great War Disclosures*, Albert Close, (London: The Protestant Truth Society, 1936) p. 1.
48. *The Vatican Moscow Washington Alliance*, Avro Manhattan, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1986) pp. 353, 354.
49. *The Bureau and the Mole*, David A. Vise, (New York: Atlantic Monthly Press, 2002) no page.
50. *A Woman Rides the Beast*, Dave Hunt, (Eugene, Oregon: Harvest House Publishers, 1994) p. 87.
51. *The Cardinal Spellman Story*, Robert I. Gannon, S.J., (New York: Doubleday & Company, Inc., 1962) p. 174.
52. *The Papal Conspiracy Exposed*, Edward Beecher, (New York: M. W. Dodd, 1855) pp. 137, 246, 382.
53. *Four Horsemen: Alberto Part Five*, Jack Chick, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1985; quoting *Vatican Imperialism in the Twentieth Century*, Avro Manhattan, p. 76) p. 25.
54. *Romanism As a World Power*, Luther S. Kauffman, (Philadelphia: American Publishing Co., 1922) p. 30.
55. *Ibid*, p. 30.
56. *Ibid*, pp. 27, 28.

57. *Fifty Years In the Church of Rome*, Charles Chiniquy, (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Baker Book House, 1968; originally published in 1886) p. 487.
58. *The Black Pope*, p. 106.
59. *National Examiner*, "JFK Jr.," Tom Kuncl, (Palm Coast, Florida: August 31, 1999) pp. 1.
60. *History of the Jesuits*, G. B. Nicolini, (London: Henry G. Bohn, 1889) p. 269.
61. *The Suppressed Truth About the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln*, Burke McCarty, (Merrimac, Massachusetts: Destiny Publishers, 1973; originally published in 1924) p. 57.
62. *A Concordat Between the United States and the Vatican*, Alberto Rivera, (Upland, California: AIC International Christian Ministries, 1982) Cassette tape.
63. *The History of Romanism*, John Dowling, (New York: Edward Walker, 1845) p. 281. *The Papal Conspiracy Exposed*, p. 78.
64. *The Godfathers: Alberto Part Three*, Jack Chick, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1982) p. 32; *The British Quarterly Review*, "Paparchy and Nationality", G. R. Badenoch, (January 1, 1875); *The Church Historians of England: Reformation Period*, Josiah Platt, (London: R. Clay Printer, 1856) Vol. IV, Pt. 1, p. 159.
65. *Earth's Final Warning: "A New World Order Is Coming,"* Unknown Seventh Day Adventist Author, (Rice, Washington: Cornerstone Publishing, 2001) p. 2.
66. *Alien Rome*, Bertrand M. Tipple, (Washington, D.C.: The Protestant Guard, 1924) p. 82.
67. *Protest of the Pope in Parliament*, Ian Paisley, 1999, cassette tape given privately to the author.
68. *The Engineer Corps of Hell; Or Rome's Sappers and Miners*, Compiled and translated by Edwin A. Sherman, (San Francisco, California: Private subscription, 1883), p. 40.
69. *The Jesuits Catechism, According to St. Ignatius Loyola*, p. 4.
70. *Romanism: A Menace to the Nation*, p. 140.
71. *An Inquiry Into the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln*, Emmett McLoughlin, (New York: Lyle Stuart, 1963) p. 4.
72. *Protest of the Pope in Parliament*, cassette tape.
73. *A Glimpse of the Great Secret Society*, pp. 95, 96; citing the *Report on the Constitutions of the Jesuits*, M. Louis Rene De Caraduc De La Chalotais, Procureur-General of King Louis XV to Parliament, 22 December 1761.
74. *The Power and Secret of the Jesuits*, Rene Fulop-Miller, (Garden City, New York: Garden City Publishing Co., 1930) p. 392.
75. *Behind the Dictators*, Leo H. Lehmann, (New York: Agora Publishing Co., 1944) p. 29.
76. *John Cardinal O'Connor*, Nat Hentoff, (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1988) p. 79.
77. *Plausible Denial*, Mark Lane, (New York: Thunder's Mouth Press, 1991) p. 9.
78. *The Dollar and the Vatican*, Avro Manhattan, (Springfield, Missouri: Ozark Books, 1988) p. 159.
79. *JFK, Director's Cut*, Oliver Stone; Director, (Warner Bros., Inc., 1991) Video, 189 minutes, Vol. I of II.
80. *The New Inquisition*, Alberto Rivera, (Upland, California: AIC International Christian Ministries, 1985), Cassette Series, Vol. I of III.
81. [www.reformation.org](http://www.reformation.org), "Pax Americana Equals Pax Romana !!", Noel Kilkenny, May 4, 2000.
82. *The Papal Conspiracy Exposed*, (quoting J. H. Merle D'Aubigne's *History of the Great Reformation*) p. 369.
83. *Will: The Autobiography of G. Gordon Liddy*, G. Gordon Liddy, (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1980) pp. 23, 36.
84. *Caveat: Realism, Reagan, and Foreign Policy*, Alexander M. Haig, Jr., (New York: Macmillan Publishing Company, 1984), p. 40.
85. *Errors of the Roman Catholic Church and its Insidious Influence in the United States and Other Countries*, 15 Contributors, (Cincinnati, Ohio: J. H. Chambers & Co., 1894) p. 33.
86. <http://www.jfklibrary.org/Historical+Resources/Archives/Reference+Desk/Speeches/JFK/003POF03NewspaperPublishers04271961.htm>, "The President and the Press," Speech of President John F. Kennedy at the Waldorf-Astoria Hotel, April 27, 1961.



**Block I**

1. *Fifty Years In the Church of Rome*, Charles Chiniquy, (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Baker Book House, 1968; originally published in 1886) pp. 78, 79, 481; quoting “Saint” Thomas Aquinas, *Summa Theologica*, Vol. IV, pp. 90, 91 [*Summa Theologica*, “Saint” Thomas Aquinas, II-II, Q. 11, A. 3, 4].

**Chapter 1**

1. *Secret Instructions of the Jesuits*, W. C. Brownlee, (New York: American and Foreign Christian Union, 1857) p. 141.
2. *History of the Jesuits: Their Origin, Progress, Doctrines, and Designs*, G. B. Nicolini of Rome, (London: Henry G. Bohn, 1889) pp. iii, v.
3. *The Engineer Corps of Hell; Or Rome’s Sappers and Miners*, Compiled and translated by Edwin A. Sherman, (San Francisco, California: Private subscription, 1883) p. 19.
4. *The Jesuits: A Complete History of Their Open and Secret Proceedings From the Foundation of the Order to the Present Time*, Theodor Griesinger, (London: W.H. Allen & Co, 1903; originally published in 1873) p. 240.
5. *The Babington Plot*, J. E. C. Shepherd, (Toronto, Canada: Wittenburg Publications, 1987) pp. 9, 11; quoting W. C. Brownlee’s *Secret Instructions of the Jesuits*, p. 14.
6. *The Engineer Corps of Hell; Or Rome’s Sappers and Miners*, p. 39.
7. *The Black Pope*, M. F. Cusack, (London: Marshall, Russell & Co., 1896) pp. 13, 201.
8. *Ibid*, p. 80.
9. *History of the Jesuits: Their Origin, Progress, Doctrines, and Designs*, pp. 35, 36.
10. *Ibid*, pp. 29, 33.
11. *Hitler’s Pope: The Secret History of Pius XII*, John Cornwell, (New York: Penguin Press, 1999) p. 38.
12. *Popery, Puseyism and Jesuitism*, Luigi Desanctis, (London: D. Catt, 1905; translated by Maria Betts from the original Italian edition published as *Roma Papale* in 1865; first published in English, 1852) pp. 133, 134.
13. *Romanism: A Menace to the Nation*, Jeremiah J. Crowley, (Aurora, Missouri: The Menace Publishing Co., 1912) p. 196.
14. *The Engineer Corps of Hell; Or Rome’s Sappers and Miners*, p. 33.
15. *Rulers of Evil*, Frederick Tupper Saussy, (New York: Harper Collins Publishers, Inc., 2001) p. 6, 86, 93.
16. *The Black Pope*, p. 474.
17. *Ibid*, pp. 92-93.
18. *The History of Romanism*, John Dowling, (New York: Edward Walker, 1845) p. 605.
19. *The Engineer Corps of Hell; Or Rome’s Sappers and Miners*, pp. 118-124.
20. *The Devil In Robes: Or, The Sin of Priests*, J Scott Carr, (St. Louis: Continental Bible House, 1900) pp.19-23.
21. *Errors of the Roman Catholic Church and its Insidious Influence in the United States and Other Countries*, 15 Contributors, (Cincinnati, Ohio: J. H. Chambers & Co., 1894) p. 469.
22. *The Devil’s Masterpiece: The Mystery of Iniquity*, Albert Garner, (Lakeland, Florida: Blessed Hope Foundation, 1954) pp. 66-68.
23. *The Master’s Carpet; Or Masonry and Baal-Worship Identical*, Edmond Ronayne, (South Pasadena, California: Emissary Publications, 1988; originally published in 1879) pp. 107, 108.
24. *Double-Cross: Alberto Part Two*, Jack Chick, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1981) pp. 13, 14.
25. *The Engineer Corps of Hell; Or Rome’s Sappers and Miners*, p. 16.
26. *Secret Instructions of the Jesuits*, W. C. Brownlee, (New York: American and Foreign Christian Union, 1857).
27. *Papism in the XIX. Century, in the United States*, Robert J. Breckinridge, (Baltimore: David Owen & Son, 1841) pp. 310, 311.
28. *The Engineer Corps of Hell; Or Rome’s Sappers and Miners*, p. 15.
29. *History of the Jesuits: Their Origin, Progress, Doctrines, and Designs*, p. 67.
30. *The History of Romanism*, pp. 478, 479, 488.

31. *Ibid*, 492, 493.
32. *Ibid*, p. 536.
33. *Occult Theocracy*, Lady Queenborough, (South Pasadena, California: Emissary Publications, 1980; originally published in 1933) p. 311.
34. *History of the Jesuits*, Andrew Steinmetz, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: Lea and Blanchard, 1848) Vol. I of II, pp. 146, 147, 145, 146.
35. *The Black Pope*, pp. 118, 119.
36. *Ibid*, p. 120.
37. *History of the Jesuits*, Steinmetz, Vol. I of II, p. 145.
38. *The Count of Monte Cristo*, Alexandre Dumas, (New York: Random House, Inc., 1996; originally published in 1845) p. 566.
39. *The Crisis: Or, The Enemies of America Unmasked*, J. Wayne Laurens, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: G.D. Miller, 1855) pp. 25-27.
40. *A Glimpse of the Great Secret Society*, Multiple Contributors, (London: William Macintosh, 1872) pp. 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43, 48, 98; citing the *Report on the Constitutions of the Jesuits*, M. Louis Rene De Caraduc De La Chalotais, Procureur-General of King Louis XV to Parliament, 22 December 1761.
41. *The Counter-Reformation in Europe*, Arthur R. Pennington, (London: Elliot Stock, 1899) pp. 64, 127, 138, 139, 168.
42. *The Black Pope*, p. 43.
43. *The History of Protestantism*, James A. Wylie, (London: Cassell, Petter & Galpin, Ltd., 1878) Vol. II of III, Book Fifteenth, pp. 382, 383, 384, 386.
44. *History of the Jesuits*, Steinmetz, Vol. I of II, p. 292.
45. *The Black Pope*, p. 73.

## Chapter 2

1. *The Engineer Corps of Hell; Or Rome's Sappers and Miners*, Compiled and translated by Edwin A. Sherman, (San Francisco, California: Private subscription, 1883) p. 19.
2. *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, Charles Chiniquy, (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Baker Book House, 1968; originally published in 1886) p. 484.
3. *The Engineer Corps of Hell; Or Rome's Sappers and Miners*, p. 92.
4. *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, p. 489.
5. *The Footprints of the Jesuits*, R. W. Thompson, (New York: Hunt & Eaton, 1894) p. 113.
6. *The Encyclopedia Britannica*, New Werner Edition, New American Supplement, Ninth Edition, Day Otis Kellogg, (New York: The Werner Co., 1903) Vol. XXVII, p. 452.

## Chapter 3

1. *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, Charles Chiniquy, (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Baker Book House, 1968; originally published in 1886) pp. 481, 482.
2. *The Jesuits in History*, Hector Macpherson, (Springfield, Missouri: Ozark Book Publishers, 1997; originally published in Edinburgh, 1914) pp. 43, 44.
3. *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, p. 495.
4. *A Glimpse of the Great Secret Society*, Multiple Contributors, (London: William Macintosh, 1872) pp. 117, 118, 121, 122, 123; citing the *Decree of the Parliament of Bretagne*, L. C. Piquet, Speaker of the French Parliament; 23 December 1761.
5. *Double-Cross: Alberto Part Two*, Jack Chick, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1981) p. 7.
6. *The Library of Original Sources*, Oliver J. Thatcher, editor, (Milwaukee, Wisconsin: University research Extension Co., no date) Vol. V, pp. 190, 191, 192, 193, 194, 195.
7. *The Rise of the Dutch Republic*, John Lothrop Motley, (New York: Harper & Brothers Publishers, 1879) Vol. I of III, pp. 261, 262.
8. *Days of Our Years*, Pierre van Paassen, (New York: Hillman-Curl, Inc., 1939) p. 389.
9. *The Rise of the Dutch Republic*, Vol. II of III, p. 563.
10. *Ibid*, Vol. III of III, p. 609.

11. *The Engineer Corps of Hell; Or Rome's Sappers and Miners*, Compiled and translated by Edwin A. Sherman, (San Francisco, California: Private subscription, 1883) pp. 118-124.

#### Chapter 4

1. *The Complete Works of Shakespeare*, edited by Hardin Craig and David Bevington, (Glenview, Illinois: Scott, Foresman and Company, 1973) p. 950.
2. *The Engineer Corps of Hell; Or Rome's Sappers and Miners*, Compiled and translated by Edwin A. Sherman, (San Francisco, California: Private subscription, 1883) p. 84.
3. *Popery, Puseyism, and Jesuitism*, Luigi Desanctis, (London: D. Catt, 1905; translated by Maria Betts from the original Italian edition published as *Roma Papale* in 1865) p. 135.
4. *Our Authorized Bible Vindicated*, Benjamin G. Wilkinson, (Collingswood, New Jersey: The Bible for Today, Inc., 1984; originally published in 1930) pp. 62, 63.
5. *Commentaries on the Laws of England*, Sir William Blackstone, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: J. P. Lippincott Co., 1886) Book 4, pp. 1505, 1508.
6. *The Jesuits Catechism, According to St. Ignatius Loyola*, A.H., (London: John Lawrence, 1685) pp. 2, 42.
7. *Is Alberto for Real?*, Sidney Hunter, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1988) p. 13; quoting J. A. Wylie's *The History of Protestantism*, Vol. II of III, Book Fifteenth, Chap. III, p. 412.
8. *Memoirs of Elizabeth*, Agnes Strickland, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: Blanchard and Lea, 1853) p. 439.
9. *The Complete Works of Shakespeare*, p. 954.
10. *Jesuit Plots Against Britain from Queen Elizabeth to King George V. Compiled from Old State Papers and Recently Recovered Vatican Documents, 300 to 400 Years Old and Great War Disclosures*, Albert Close, (London: The Protestant Truth Society, 1936) p. 131.
11. *The Counter-Reformation in Europe*, Arthur R. Pennington, (London: Elliot Stock, 1899) pp. 217-219.
12. *The Complete Works of Shakespeare*, p. 515.
13. *The Babington Plot*, J. E. C. Shepherd, (Toronto, Canada: Wittenburg Publications, 1987) p. 20.
14. *Rome and the War: And Coming Events In Britain*, "Watchman," (London: McBride, Nast & Company, Ltd., 1916) pp. 49, 50.
15. *Rome and Germany: The Plot For the Downfall of Britain*, "Watchman," (London: Henry J. Drane, no date, 1916 or thereabout), pp. 26, 27, 28.
16. *History of the Jesuits*, Andrew Steinmetz, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: Lea and Blanchard, 1848) Vol. II of II, p. 182.
17. *The Renaissance Man of England*, Dorothy and Carlton Ogburn, (New York: Coward-McCann Inc., 1955) p. 22.
18. *This Star of England*, Dorothy and Carlton Ogburn, (New York: Coward-McCann Inc., 1952) p. 307.
19. *"Shakespeare" Identified*, J. Thomas Looney, (New York: Duell, Sloan and Pearce, 1920) p. 171.
20. *History of the Jesuits: Their Origin, Progress, Doctrines, and Designs*, G. B. Nicolini of Rome, (London: Henry G. Bohn, 1889) p. 169.

#### Chapter 5

1. *The Jesuits*, David Mitchell, (New York: Franklin Watts, 1981) p. 115.
2. *A Popular History of Priestcraft*, William Howitt, (London: Effingham Wilson, Royal Exchange, 1833) pp. 150, 160, 161.
3. *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, Charles Chiniquy, (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Baker Book House, 1968; originally published in 1886) p. 483.
4. *The Babington Plot*, J. E. C. Shepherd, (Toronto, Canada: Wittenburg Publications, 1987) p. 16.
5. *A History of the Gunpowder Plot: The Conspiracy and Its Agents*, Philip Sidney, (London: The Religious Tract Society, 1905) pp. 163, 164, 165, 183, 184.
6. *The Black Pope*, M. F. Cusack, (London: Marshall, Russell & Co., 1896) pp. 327, 328.
7. *The Jesuits: A Complete History of Their Open and Secret Proceedings From the Foundation of the Order to the Present Time*, Theodor Griesinger, (London: W. H. Allen & Co, 1903; originally published in 1873) p. 528.
8. *Ibid.*, p. 537.

## Chapter 6

1. *Institutes of the Christian Religion*, John Calvin, (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1979; originally published in 1536) Vol. I of II, p. 69.
2. *The Engineer Corps of Hell; Or Rome's Sappers and Miners*, Compiled and translated by Edwin A. Sherman, (San Francisco, California: Private subscription, 1883) p. 84.
3. *Ibid*, p. 86.
4. *A Popular History of Priestcraft*, William Howitt, (London: Effingham Wilson, Royal Exchange, 1833) pp. 161, 162-163.
5. *The Babington Plot*, J. E. C. Shepherd, (Toronto, Canada: Wittenburg Publications, 1987) p. 12.
6. *The Power and Secret of the Jesuits*, Rene Fulop-Miller, (Garden City, New York: Garden City Publishing Co., 1930) pp. 316, 317, 318.
7. *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, Charles Chiniquy, (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Baker Book House, 1968; originally published in 1886) p. 487.
8. *Washington In the Lap of Rome*, Justin D. Fulton, (Boston: W. Kellaway, 1888) p. 207.

## Chapter 7

1. *The Jesuits: A Complete History of Their Open and Secret Proceedings From the Foundation of the Order to the Present Time*, Theodor Griesinger, (London: W. H. Allen & Co., 1903; originally published in 1873) pp. 240, 241.
2. *The Power and Secret of the Jesuits*, Rene Fulop-Miller, (Garden City, New York: Garden City Publishing Co., 1930) p. 356.
3. *The Jesuit Enigma*, E. Boyd Barrett, (New York: Boni and Liveright, 1927) pp. 20-21.
4. *History of the Thirty Years' War*, Frederick Schiller, translated by A. J. W. Morrison, (New York: The Useful Knowledge Publishing Co., 1882) p. 9.
5. *History of the Jesuits: Their Origin, Progress, Doctrines, and Designs*, G. B. Nicolini of Rome, (London: Henry G. Bohn, 1889) pp. 278, 279.
6. *The Jesuits: A Complete History of Their Open and Secret Proceedings From the Foundation of the Order to the Present Time*, pp. 256, 257.
7. *Ridpath's Universal History*, John Clark Ridpath, (New York: Merrill & Baker, 1901) Vol. XIII, p. 318.
8. *The Footprints of the Jesuits*, R. W. Thompson, (New York: Hunt & Eaton, 1894) p. 128-129.
9. *The Power and Secret of the Jesuits*, p. 355.
10. *Ibid*, p. 355.
11. *The Jesuits: A Complete History of Their Open and Secret Proceedings From the Foundation of the Order to the Present Time*, p. 260.
12. *Ibid*, p. 260.
13. *Ridpath's Universal History*, Vol. XIII, p. 339.
14. *The Jesuits*, David Mitchell, (New York: Franklin Watts, 1981) p. 120.
15. *Ridpath's Universal History*, Vol. XIII, p. 343.
16. *The Footprints of the Jesuits*, p. 129.

## Pause I

1. *Ridpath's Universal History*, John Clark Ridpath, (New York: Merrill & Baker, 1901) Vol. XIII, p. 239.
2. *History of the Jesuits: Their Origin, Progress, Doctrines, and Designs*, G. B. Nicolini of Rome, (London: Henry G. Bohn, 1889) pp. 59-62.
3. *The Roman Catholic Hierarchy: The Deadliest Menace to American Liberties and Christian Civilization*, Thomas E. Watson, (Thomson, Georgia: The Jefferson Publishing Co., 1915) pp. 7, 15, 16, 254.

## Chapter 8

1. *The Pope—Chief of White Slavers, High Priest of Intrigue*, Jeremiah J. Crowley, (Aurora, Missouri: The Menace Publishing Co., 1913) pp. 117, 118, 268.
2. *The Suppressed Truth About the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln*, Burke McCarty, (Merrimac, Massachusetts: Destiny Publishers, 1973; originally published in 1924) p. 12.

3. *A Short History of the Inquisition*, Multiple contributors, (New York: The Truth Seeker Co., 1907) p. 319.
4. *The Power and Secret of the Jesuits*, Rene Fulop-Miller, (Garden City, New York: Garden City Publishing Co., 1930) p. 234.
5. *Ibid*, p. 233.
6. *A Short History of the Inquisition*, pp. 321, 322.
7. *Vietnam: Why Did We Go?*, Avro Manhattan, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1984) p. 153.
8. *Japan's Imperial Conspiracy: How Emperor Hirohito Led Japan Into War Against the West*, David Bergamini, (New York: William Morrow and Company, Inc., 1971) Vol. I of II, pp. 276, 278, 279.
9. *The Encyclopedia Britannica*, New Werner Edition, New American Supplement, Ninth Edition, Day Otis Kellogg, (New York: The Werner Co., 1903) Vol. XIII, p. 584.
10. *Japan's Imperial Conspiracy: How Emperor Hirohito Led Japan Into War Against the West*, Vol. I, pp. 321, 322, 323.

### Chapter 9

1. *Lex Rex: The Law and the Prince*, Samuel Rutherford, (Harrisonburg, Virginia: Sprinkle Publications, 1982; originally published in 1644) p. 36.
2. *The Jesuits in History*, Hector Macpherson, (Springfield, Missouri: Ozark Book Publishers, 1997; originally published in Edinburgh, 1914) p. 98.
3. *The Jesuits*, Ian R. K. Paisley, (Belfast: Puritan Printing Co., LTD., 1968) p. 1.
4. *The Devil In Robes: Or, The Sin of Priests*, J. Scott Carr, (St. Louis: Continental Bible House, 1900) pp. 258, 259, 260.
5. *Priests and People In Ireland*, Michael J. F. McCarthy, (Dublin: Hodges, Figgis & Co., 1902) pp. 274, 275, 359, 373, 374, 375.
6. *Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, Marie Gentert King, (Old Tappan, New Jersey: Fleming H. Revell Co., 1968) p. 333.
7. *Ibid*, p. 334.
8. *Ibid*, pp. 336, 337.
9. *The Life of Oliver Cromwell*, J. T. Headley, (New York: Baker and Scribner, 1848) pp. 265, 273, 274.
10. *The Jesuits in History*, pp. 80, 81.
11. Source withheld, Private letter to Eric Jon Phelps, April 12, 2002, quoting a portion of *The Great Starvation (1845-1852); An Irish Holocaust*, Seamus P. Metrus & Richard J. Rajner, (Stony Point, New York: American Ireland Education foundation, 1995) p. xviii.
12. *The Life of Oliver Cromwell*, pp. 278, 279.
13. *The Death of Oliver Cromwell*, H. F. McMains, (Lexington, Kentucky: The University Press of Kentucky, 2000) pp. 32, 33, 34.
14. *Ibid*, pp. 37, 42, 44, 45.
15. *A Glimpse of the Great Secret Society*, Multiple Contributors, (London: William Macintosh, 1872) p. 160.

### Chapter 10

1. *The Disciplines of Life*, V. Raymond Edman, (Eugene, Oregon: Harvest House Publishers, 1982) p. 55.
2. *The Worlds of Great Classics: Essays of British Essayists*, Julian Hawthorne, Literary Editor, (New York: The Colonial Press, 1900; reprinting "Milton" by Thomas Babington Macaulay, *Edinburgh Review*, August, 1825) Vol. II, pp. 228, 229, 230, 231, 232.
3. *The Protector: A Vindication*, Merle D'Aubigne, (Harrisonburg, Virginia: Sprinkle Publications, 1983; originally published in Geneva, 1847) pp. 28, 29, 41, 42, 43.
4. *The Library of Original Sources*, Oliver J. Thatcher, editor, (Milwaukee, Wisconsin: University Research Extension Co., no date) Vol. V, pp. 403, 404, 406, 407, 427.
5. *The Life of Oliver Cromwell*, Francois P. G. Guizot, (London: Richard Bentley and Son, 1887; first published in 1854) pp. 364, 365, 366, 412, 420, 421.
6. *The Death of Oliver Cromwell*, H. F. McMains, (Lexington, Kentucky: The University Press of Kentucky, 2000) pp. 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 138.

7. *The Suppressed Truth About the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln*, Burke McCarty, (Merrimac, Massachusetts: Destiny Publishers, 1973; originally published in 1924) pp. 44, 47.
8. *The Life of Oliver Cromwell*, J. T. Headley, (New York: Baker and Scribner, 1848) pp. 61, 62.
9. *The Encyclopedia Britannica*, New Werner Edition, New American Supplement, Ninth Edition, Day Otis Kellogg, (New York: The Werner Co., 1903) Vol. VI, p. 599.
10. *The Life of Oliver Cromwell*, p. 421.
11. *Ibid*, pp. 422, 423.
12. *The Encyclopedia Britannica*, Vol. VI, p. 604.
13. *The Death of Oliver Cromwell*, H. F. McMains, (Lexington, Kentucky: The University Press of Kentucky, 2000) p. 117.
14. *The Encyclopedia Britannica*, Vol. VI, p. 603, footnote 1.
15. *The Life of Oliver Cromwell*, pp. 393-397.
16. *A Popular History of Priestcraft*, William Howitt, (London: Effingham Wilson, Royal Exchange, 1833) pp. 166, 175.
17. *Memoirs of Elizabeth*, Agnes Strickland, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: Blanchard and Lea, 1853) p. 429.
18. *The Encyclopedia Britannica*, Vol. VI, p. 598.
19. *The Life of Oliver Cromwell*, p. 410.
20. *E. M. Bounds on Prayer*, E. M. Bounds, (New Kensington, Pennsylvania: Whitaker House, 1997; originally published in 1900) p. 19.
21. *The Life of Oliver Cromwell*, p. 384.
22. *The Encyclopedia Britannica*, Vol. VI, pp. 602, 603.

## Chapter 11

1. *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, Charles Chiniquy, (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Baker Book House, 1968; originally published in 1886) p. 480.
2. *A Glimpse of the Great Secret Society*, Multiple Contributors, (London: William Macintosh, 1872) pp. 226-230; a portion of which is also quoted in *The Black Pope*, M. F. Cusack, (London: Marshall, Russell & Co., 1896) p. 403.
3. *The Two Babylons*, Alexander Hislop, (Neptune, New Jersey: Loizeaux Brothers, 1959; originally published in 1858) p. 149; quoting MacGavin's *Protestant*, p. 841, Vol. 2.
4. *The Huguenots*, Samuel Smiles, (New York: Harper & Brothers Publishers, 1868) p. 153.
5. *The Huguenots*, pp. 148, 149, 152.
6. *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, p. 489.
7. *Ridpath's Universal History*, John Clark Ridpath, (New York: Merrill & Baker, 1901) Vol. XIV, p. 454.
8. *The Huguenots*, p. 170.

## Chapter 12

1. *Secret Instructions of the Jesuits*, W. C. Brownlee, (New York: American and Foreign Christian Union, 1857) p. 101.
2. *The Jesuits in History*, Hector Macpherson, (Springfield, Missouri: Ozark Book Publishers, 1997; originally published in Edinburgh, 1914) pp. 38, 39.
3. *The Engineer Corps of Hell; Or Rome's Sappers and Miners*, Compiled and translated by Edwin A. Sherman, (San Francisco, California: Private subscription, 1883) p. 37.
4. *History of the Jesuits: Their Origin, Progress, Doctrines, and Designs*, G. B. Nicolini of Rome, (London: Henry G. Bohn, 1889) p. 303.
5. *Fourteen Years a Jesuit*, Count Paul von Hoensbroech, translated by Alice Zimmern, (New York: Cassell and Company, LTD., 1911) Vol. I of II, p. 51.
6. *To Number Our Days*, Pierre van Paassen, (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1964) p. 325.
7. *Communist Jesuitism: Communist Party Dishonesty Exposed*, Arnold Peterson, (New York: New York Labor News Company, 1939) pp. 5, 6, 12, 13, 33, 34, 51, 74, 75, 76, 99, 101, 102.
8. *The Footprints of the Jesuits*, R. W. Thompson, (New York: Hunt & Eaton, 1894) p. 174.
9. *Ibid*, p. 175.

10. *Ibid*, pp. 174, 175.
11. *The Dollar and the Vatican*, Avro Manhattan, (Springfield, Missouri: Ozark Book Publishers, 1988) p. 26.
12. *The Footprints of the Jesuits*, pp. 175, 176.
13. *Ibid*, p. 176.
14. *The Jesuit Enigma*, E. Boyd Barrett, (New York: Boni and Liveright, 1927) p. 211.
15. *Ibid*, p. 210.
16. *The Footprints of the Jesuits*, pp. 185, 186.
17. **Source Withheld**, Private letter to Eric Jon Phelps, "The Control of the Nation of Islam through Black Freemasonry," March 20, 2001.
18. *Wealth For All*, R. E. McMaster, Jr., (Whitefish, Montana: A. N., Inc., 1982) p. 65.
19. *The Footprints of the Jesuits*, p. 181.

### Chapter 13

1. *The Protector: A Vindication*, J. H. Merle D'Aubigne, (Harrisonburg, Virginia: Sprinkle Publications, 1983; originally published in 1847) pp. 84, 85.
2. *To Number Our Days*, Pierre van Paassen, (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1964) p. 88.
3. *Encyclopedia of Freemasonry and Its Kindred Sciences*, Albert G. Mackey, (Philadelphia: McClure Publishing Co., 1917) pp. 134, 135.
4. *The Jesuits*, David Mitchell, (New York: Franklin Watts, 1981) p. 205.
5. *The Life of Horace Greeley*, James Parton, (New York: Mason Brothers, 1855) p. 68.
6. *The Master's Carpet; Or Masonry and Baal-Worship Identical*, Edmond Ronayne, (South Pasadena, California: Emissary Publications, 1988; originally published in 1879) pp. 142, 143.
7. *Secret Societies and Subversive Movements*, Nesta Webster, (South Pasadena, California: Emissary Publications, 1980; originally published in 1924) p. 139.
8. *Alien Rome*, Bertrand M. Tipple, (Washington, D.C.: The Protestant Guard, 1924) p. 91.
9. *The Two Babylons*, Alexander Hislop, (Neptune, New Jersey: Loizeaux Brothers, 1959; originally published in 1858) pp. 1, 2, 3, 20, 23, 34, 69, 43, 56.
10. *Freemasonry: An Interpretation*, Martin L. Wagner, (South Pasadena, California: Emissary Publications, 1980; originally published in 1912) pp. 103, 104, 107, 108.
11. *Occult Theocracy*, Lady Queenborough, (South Pasadena, California: Emissary Publications, 1980; originally published in 1933) p. 313; quoting *Secret Societies of All Ages and Countries*, Vol. II, p. 296.
12. *Encyclopedia of Freemasonry and Its Kindred Sciences*, pp. 136, 137.
13. *Alberto: Alberto Part One*, Jack Chick, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1979) pp. 27, 28.
14. *The Jesuits: 1534-1921; A History of the Society of Jesus from Its Foundation to the Present Time*, Thomas J. Campbell, S.J., (New York: The Encyclopedia Press, 1921) pp. 899, 900.
15. *Freemasonry: An Interpretation*, p. 144.
16. *Secret Societies and Their Power in the 20<sup>th</sup> Century*, Jan van Helsing, (Zurich, Switzerland: EWERTVERLAG S.L., 1995) pp. 166, 167, 169, 170, 175, 176, 177.
17. *The Kersten Memoirs: 1940-1945*, Felix Kersten; translated by Constantine Fitzgibbon and James Oliver, (London: Hutchinson & Company Ltd., 1956) pp. 23, 24, 27, 31.
18. *The History of the SS*, G. S. Graber, (New York: David McKay Company, Inc., 1978) p. 79.
19. *"Behold A Pale Horse"*, Milton William Cooper, (Sedona, Arizona: Light Technology Publishing, 1991) pp. 78, 79.
20. *The Deadly Deception*, James D. Shaw & Tom McKenney, (Lafayette, Louisiana: Hunting House Inc., 1988) pp. 101, 102, 103, 104.
21. *Freemasonry: An Interpretation*, pp. 394, 395, 222.
22. *The Ruin of Rome; Or, An Exposition Upon the Whole Revelation*, Arthur Dent, (Glasgow: Samuel Gardner, 1798) pp. 308, 170.
23. *Blood On the Altar*, Craig Heimbichner, (Coeur d'Alene, Idaho: Independent History & Research, 2005) pp. 67, 68, 69, 70, 74.
24. *Behind the Dictators*, Leo H. Lehmann, (New York: Agora Publishing Co., 1944) pp. 16, 17, 18.

25. [www.freemasonrywatch.org/2index.html](http://www.freemasonrywatch.org/2index.html)
26. [www.articbeacon.com/16-Jan-06.html](http://www.articbeacon.com/16-Jan-06.html), "Searching for the Illuminati Deep Within the Bowels of the Vatican," Part I, Greg Szymanski, 16 January 2006.
27. *Masonic Quiz Book "Ask Me Another, Brother,"* William O. Peterson, (Chicago, Illinois: The Charles T. Powner Co., 1951) pp. 194, 195.
28. *Secret Societies and Subversive Movements*, pp. 126, 127.
29. *Ridpath's Universal History*, John Clark Ridpath, (New York: Merrill & Baker, 1901) Vol. XIV, pp. 436-437.
30. *Guizot's Popular History of England*, Francois P. G. Guizot, (Boston: Estes and Lauriat, 1876) p. 361.
31. *The Master's Carpet or Masonry and Baal-Worship Identical*, p. 147.

## Chapter 14

1. *The Jesuits: A Complete History of Their Open and Secret Proceedings From the Foundation of the Order to the Present Time*, Theodor Griesinger, (London: W. H. Allen & Co., 1903; originally published in 1873) p. 654.
2. *A Glimpse of the Great Secret Society*, Multiple Contributors, (London: William Macintosh, 1872) pp. lxxii, lxxiii; *Ridpath's Universal History*, John Clark Ridpath, (New York: Merrill & Baker, 1901) Vol. XIV, p. 575.
3. *The Black Pope*, M. F. Cusack, (London: Marshall, Russell & Co., 1896) p. 76.
4. *The History of Protestantism*, James A. Wylie, (London: Cassell, Petter & Galpin, Ltd., 1878) Vol. II of III, Book Fifteenth, pp. 418-419.
5. *Papal Rome As It Is, By A Roman*, L. Aloysium Giustiniani, (Baltimore: Publication Rooms, 1843) pp. 246, 220.
6. *The Jesuit Enigma*, E. Boyd Barrett, (New York: Boni and Liveright, 1927) p. 209.
7. *The Footprints of the Jesuits*, R. W. Thompson, (New York: Hunt & Eaton, 1894) p. 228.
8. *A Glimpse of the Great Secret Society*, pp. 150, 151.
9. *The Jesuits: A Complete History of Their Open and Secret Proceedings From the Foundation of the Order to the Present Time*, p. 583.
10. *The Footprints of the Jesuits*, pp. 217, 218.
11. *Ibid*, p. 219.
12. *The Encyclopedia Britannica*, New Werner Edition, New American Supplement, Ninth Edition, Day Otis Kellogg, (New York: The Werner Co., 1903) Vol. XXII, p. 341.
13. *The Jesuits: A Complete History of Their Open and Secret Proceedings From the Foundation of the Order to the Present Time*, p. 592.
14. *Ibid*, pp. 594-596.
15. *The Encyclopedia Britannica*, Vol. XV, p. 343.
16. *The Footprints of the Jesuits*, p. 224.
17. *Ibid*, p. 222.
18. *Ibid*, p. 227.
19. *An Inquiry Into the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln*, Emmett McLoughlin, (New York: Lyle Stuart, Inc., 1963) pp. 84, 85.
20. *A Glimpse of the Great Secret Society*, pp. 151, 152; extracted from the publications of The Protestant Alliance; and from a pamphlet entitled "Startling Facts,"—*Bulwark*, April 1, 1863; the entire Bull translated in the "*Advocate*" for the year 1815, vol. iii., pp. 153 and following.
21. *The Jesuits: Religious Rogues*, Joseph McCabe, (Girard, Kansas: Haldeman-Julius Publications, 1927) pp. 59, 60, 61.
22. *The History of Romanism*, John Dowling, (New York: Edward Walker, 1845) p. 604.
23. *The Black Pope*, p. 363.
24. *The Footprints of the Jesuits*, pp. 227, 228.
25. *The Jesuits: A Complete History of Their Open and Secret Proceedings From the Foundation of the Order to the Present Time*, pp. 644, 645.



26. *The Footprints of the Jesuits*, p. 228.
27. *A Glimpse of the Great Secret Society*, pp. lii; quoting Edward W. Grinfield's *History of the Jesuits*, (No city, publisher or date) p. 260.
28. *The Engineer Corps of Hell; Or Rome's Sappers and Miners*, Compiled and translated by Edwin A. Sherman, (San Francisco, California: Private subscription, 1883) pp. 81, 82.
29. *Murder in the Vatican*, Avro Manhattan, (Springfield, Missouri: Ozark Book Publishers, 1985) pp. 155, 157.
30. *Ibid*, pp. 153, 129, 130.
31. *In God's Name: An Investigation Into the Murder of Pope John Paul I*, David A. Yallop, (New York: Bantam Books, 1984) pp. 176, 177.
32. *Behind the Dictators*, Leo H. Lehmann, (New York: Agora Publishing Co., 1944) pp. 44, 49, 55.

## **Pause II**

1. *The Power and Secret of the Jesuits*, Rene Fulop-Miller, (Garden City, New York: Garden City Publishing Co., 1930) p. vi.
2. *History of the Jesuits: Their Origin, Progress, Doctrines, and Designs*, G. B. Nicolini of Rome, (London: Henry G. Bohn, 1889) p. 453.
3. *Behind the Dictators*, Leo H. Lehmann, (New York: Agora Publishing Co., 1944) p. 38.
4. *Popery. An Enemy to Civil and Religious Liberty; and Dangerous to Our Republic*, W. C. Brownlee, (New York: John S. Taylor, Publisher, 1836) pp. 101, 102.
5. *Ibid*, p. 159.
6. *The Jesuits; 1534-1921*, Thomas J. Campbell, S.J., (New York: The Encyclopedia Press, 1921) p. 638.

## **Block II**

1. *Fifty Years In the Church of Rome*, Charles Chiniquy, (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Baker Book House, 1968; originally published in 1886) pp. 79, 80; in quoting the Pope's *Fourth Lateran Council*, 1215.

## **Chapter 15**

1. *A Glimpse of the Great Secret Society*, p. lxxxiii; quoting Antonio Escobar's *Moral Theology*, Vol. iv, pp. 278, 284.
2. *Popery, Puseyism and Jesuitism*, Luigi Desantis, (London: D. Catt, 1905; translated by Maria Betts from the original Italian edition published as *Roma Papale* in 1865; first published in English, 1852) p. 136.
3. *History of the Jesuits: Their Origin, Progress, Doctrines, and Designs*, G. B. Nicolini of Rome, (London: Henry G. Bohn, 1889) pp. 424-425.
4. *Encyclopedia of Freemasonry*, Albert G. Mackey, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: McClure Publishing Co., 1917) p. 329.
5. *The Footprints of the Jesuits*, R. W. Thompson, (New York: Hunt & Eaton, 1894) p. 240.

## **Chapter 16**

1. *The Black Pope*, M. F. Cusack, (London: Marshall, Russell & Co., 1896) p. 37.
2. *Behind the Dictators*, Leo H. Lehmann, (New York: Agora Publishing Co., 1944) p. 25.
3. *Alberto: Alberto Part One*, Jack Chick, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1979) p. 28.
4. *Secret Societies and Subversive Movements*, Nesta Webster, (South Pasadena, California: Emissary Publications, 1980; originally published in 1924) p. 259.
5. *The Encyclopedia Britannica*, New Werner Edition, New American Supplement, Ninth Edition, Day Otis Kellogg, (New York: The Werner Co., 1903) Vol. XII, pp. 706, 707.
6. *Secret Societies and Subversive Movements*, p. 139.
7. *Occult Theocracy*, Lady Queenborough, (South Pasadena, California: Emissary Publications, 1980; originally published in 1933) p. 313.
8. *Secret Societies and Subversive Movements*, p. 200.
9. *The New Encyclopedia Britannica*, 15<sup>th</sup> Edition, (Chicago: William Benton, Publisher, 1943-1973) Micropaedia, Vol. IX, p. 403.

10. *The Devil In Robes: Or, The Sin of Priests*, J Scott Carr, (St. Louis: Continental Bible House, 1900) pp. 19, 20, 21, 22.

## Chapter 17

1. *The Jesuits in North America*, Francis Parkman, (Boston, Massachusetts: Little, Brown and Co., 1902) pp. 550, 552, 553.
2. *John Cardinal O'Connor*, Nat Hentoff, (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1988) p. 16.
3. *Our Authorized Bible Vindicated*, Benjamin G. Wilkinson, (Collingswood' New Jersey: The Bible for Today, 1984; originally published in 1930) pp. 4, 70, 71.
4. *The Chaplains and Clergy of the Revolution*, J. T. Headley, (New York: Charles Scribner, 1864) pp. 283, 284.
5. *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, Charles Chiniquy, (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Baker Book House, 1968; originally published in 1886) p. 483; *The Papal Conspiracy Exposed*, Edward Beecher, (New York: M. W. Dodd, 1855) p. 26.
6. *The Fearful Master*, G. Edward Griffin, (Boston, Massachusetts: Western Islands, 1964) p. ii.
7. *Anti-Masonic Pamphlets*, 'Vindication of George Washington from the Stigma of Adherence to Secret Societies,' Joseph Ritner, 18 September 1837, p. 28.
8. *Ibid*, p. iii.
9. *Ibid*, p. 15.
10. *Romanism At Home: Letters To the Honorable Roger B. Taney, Chief Justice of the United States*, Kirwan, (New York: Harper & Brothers Publishers, 1852) pp. 240-241.
11. *Priests and People In Ireland*, Michael J. F. McCarthy, (Dublin: Hodges, Figgis & Co., 1902) pp. 589, 590, 591, 551, 499, 564-565, 574, 575.
12. *The Jesuits: A Complete History of Their Open and Secret Proceedings From the Foundation of the Order to the Present Time*, Theodor Griesinger, (London: W. H. Allen & Co., 1903; originally published in 1873) pp. 748, 749, 750.
13. *Bancroft's History of the United States*, George Bancroft, (Boston, Massachusetts: Little, Brown & Co., 1852) Vol. V., pp. 119-122.
14. *The Jesuits*, David Mitchell, (New York: Franklin Watts, 1981) p. 186.
15. *Days of Our Years*, Pierre van Paassen, (New York: Hillman-Curl, Inc., 1939) p. 24.
16. *Westminster Confession of Faith, the Larger and Shorter Catechisms*, authored by the Church of Scotland, (Ross-shire, Scotland: Free Presbyterian Publications, 1983; originally published in 1658) pp. 24-27.
17. *Ibid*, p. 29.
18. *Ibid*, pp. 29-31.
19. *Ibid*, p. 109.
20. *The History of the Reformation of Religion Within the Realm of Scotland*, John Knox, (Carlisle, Pennsylvania: Banner of Truth Trust; originally written in 1559-1571 by Knox; reprinted by C. J. Guthrie, 1898) p. 167.
21. *A Cloud of Witnesses*, John H. Thomson, (Harrisonburg, Virginia: Sprinkle Publications, 1989; originally published in 1741) p. 128.
22. *The Chaplains and Clergy of the Revolution*, p. 321.
23. *The Life of George Washington*, J. T. Headley, (New York: Charles Scribner, 1856) pp. 307-308.
24. *The Character, Claims and Practical Workings of Freemasonry*, Charles G. Finney, (Boring, Oregon: CPA Book Publisher, no date; originally published in 1869) p. 222.
25. *Ridpath's Universal History*, John Clark Ridpath, (New York: Merrill & Baker, 1901) Vol. XIV, p. 577.
26. *The Life of George Washington*, p. 432.
27. *Romanism: A Menace to the Nation*, Jeremiah J. Crowley, (Aurora, Missouri: The Menace Publishing Co., 1912) p. 140.
28. *The True Republican*, Jonathan French, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: J.B. Smith & Co., 1857) p. 30.
29. *Thirty Years' View; From 1820 to 1850*, Thomas Benton, (New York: D. Appleton and Co., 1854) Vol. I, pp. 624, 625.

## Chapter 18

1. *Secret Instructions of the Jesuits*, W. C. Brownlee, (New York: American and Foreign Christian Union, 1857) p. 143.
2. *The Jesuits in History*, Hector Macpherson, (Springfield, Missouri: Ozark Book Publishers, 1997; originally published in Edinburgh, 1914) pp. 126, 127.
3. *History of the Jesuits*, Andrew Steinmetz, (Philadelphia: Lea and Blanchard, 1848) Vol. II, p. 471.
4. *The Crisis: Or, The Enemies of America Unmasked*, J. Wayne Laurens, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: G. D. Miller, 1855) p. 289.
5. *The "Federal" Reserve Conspiracy and Rockefeller*, Emanuel M. Josephson, (New York: Chedney Press, 1968) pp. 4, 5.
6. *Babylon Mystery Religion*, Ralph Woodrow, (Riverside, California: Ralph Woodrow Evangelistic Assoc., Inc., 1966) pp. 109, 110.
7. *Popery, Puseyism and Jesuitism*, Luigi Desanctis, (London: D. Catt, 1905; translated by Maria Betts from the original Italian edition published as *Roma Papale*, 1865; first published in English, 1852) pp. 50, 51.
8. *The Encyclopedia Britannica*, New Werner Edition, New American Supplement, Ninth Edition, Day Otis Kellogg, (New York: The Werner Co., 1903) Vol. XXII, p. 45.
9. *War and Peace*, Leo Tolstoy, (New York: Simon & Schuster, 1942; first published in 1865) pp. 1185-86.
10. *The Deputy*, Rolf Hochhuth, (New York: Grove Press, Inc., 1964) p. 251.
11. *Life and Campaigns of Lt. General T. J. (Stonewall) Jackson*, R. L. Dabney, (Harrisonburg, Virginia: Sprinkle Publications, 1983; originally published in 1865) pp. 82, 83.
12. *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, Charles Chiniquy, (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Baker Book House, 1968; originally published in 1886) pp. 487, 488; quoting *Memorial of the Captivity of Napoleon at St. Helena*, General Montholon, Vol. II, pp. 62, 174.
13. *The Murder of Napoleon*, Ben Weider and David Hapgood, (New York: Berkley Books, 1983) p. 10.

## Chapter 19

1. *The Engineer Corps of Hell; Or Rome's Sappers and Miners*, Compiled and translated by Edwin A. Sherman, (San Francisco, California: Private subscription, 1883) p. 37.
2. *The Footprints of the Jesuits*, R. W. Thompson, (New York: Hunt & Eaton, 1894) p. 259.
3. *The Black Pope*, M. F. Cusack, (London: Marshall, Russell & Co., 1896) pp. 260, 261.
4. *History of the Jesuits: Their Origin, Progress, Doctrines, and Designs*, G. B. Nicolini of Rome, (London: Henry G. Bohn, 1889) p. 432.
5. *The Footprints of the Jesuits*, p. 245.
6. *A Parish for the Federal City: St. Patrick's In Washington, 1794-1994*, Morris J. MacGregor, (Washington, D.C.: The Catholic University of America Press, 1994) p. 36.
7. *Christian History of the Constitution of the United States of America*, Compilation by Verna M. Hall, (San Francisco: The American Christian Constitution Press, 1961) pp. 365-366.
8. *Popery, Puseyism, and Jesuitism*, Luigi Desanctis, (London: D. Catt, 1905; translated by Maria Betts from the original Italian edition published as *Roma Papale* in 1865) pp. 5, 7.
9. *The Jesuits*, Ian R. K. Paisley, (Belfast: Puritan Printing Co., LTD., 1968) pp. 9, 10.
10. *The Babington Plot*, J. E. C. Shepherd, (Toronto, Canada: Wittenburg Publications, 1987) p. 18; quoting a letter dated May 5, 1816.
11. *Secret Instructions of the Jesuits*, W. C. Brownlee, (New York: American and Foreign Christian Union, 1857) p. 47.

## Pause III

1. *The Engineer Corps of Hell; Or Rome's Sappers and Miners*, Compiled and translated by Edwin A. Sherman, (San Francisco, California: Private subscription, 1883) p. 33.
2. *The Black Pope*, M. F. Cusack, (London: Marshall, Russell & Co., 1896) p. 404.
3. *The Jesuits: 1534-1921; A History of the Society of Jesus from Its Foundation to the Present Time*, Thomas J. Campbell, S.J., (New York: The Encyclopedia Press, 1921) pp. 726, 727, 728.
4. *Ridpath's Universal History*, John Clark Ridpath, (New York: Merrill & Baker, 1901) Vol. XIV, p. 575.

5. *The Mind of the Jesuit*, Nelson C. Turner, (Grantville, Pennsylvania: Unpublished, 2006) pp. 1-3.
6. *The History of Protestantism*, James A. Wylie, (London: Cassell, Petter & Galpin, Ltd., 1878) Vol. II of III, Book Fifteenth, pp. 404, 406.

## **Chapter 20**

1. *The Jesuit Enigma*, E. Boyd Barrett, (New York: Boni and Liveright, 1927) p. 253.
2. *The Crisis: Or, The Enemies of America Unmasked*, J. Wayne Laurens, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: G. D. Miller, 1855) pp. 265-267.
3. *The Footprints of the Jesuits*, R. W. Thompson, (New York: Hunt & Eaton, 1894) p. 251.
4. *The Suppressed Truth About the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln*, Burke McCarty, (Merrimac, Massachusetts: Destiny Publishers, 1973; originally published in 1924) p. 7.
5. *Diplomacy*, Henry Kissinger, (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1994) p. 79.
6. *Foreign Conspiracy Against the Liberties of the United States*, Samuel Morse, (Boston, Massachusetts: Crocker & Brewster, 1835) p. 35.
7. *Ibid*, p. 34.

## **Chapter 21**

1. *The Jesuit Conspiracy: The Secret Plan of the Order*, Abbate [*Abate*] Leone, (London: Chapman and Hall, 1848) pp. 60, 61, 62, 63.
2. *The Great Controversy*, Ellen G. White, (Deland, Florida: Laymen for Religious Liberty, 1990; originally published in 1888) pp. 234, 235.
3. *A Glimpse of the Great Secret Society*, Multiple Contributors, (London: William Macintosh, 1872) p. 136; citing *Les Jesuits*, Charles Habeneck, (Paris: No publisher, 1860) p. 22.
4. *The Suppressed Truth About the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln*, Burke McCarty, (Merrimac, Massachusetts: Destiny Publishers, 1973; originally published in 1924) pp. 9, 10.
5. *The Jesuits in History*, Hector Macpherson, (Springfield, Missouri: Ozark Book Publishers, 1997; originally published in Edinburgh, 1914) Appendix 1.

## **Chapter 22**

1. *The Saturday Evening Post*, "The Pope's Commandos," Ernesto O. Hauser, (January 17, 1959) p. 51.
2. *The Jesuits*, Jules Michelet and Edgar Quinet; edited by C. Edwards Lester, (New York: Gates & Stedman, 1845) pp. 75, 76.
3. *A Glimpse of the Great Secret Society*, Multiple Contributors, (London: William Macintosh, 1872) pp. 153-154; citing a pamphlet entitled "Startling Facts"—*Bulwark*, April 1, 1863.
4. *Ibid*, pp. 155, 156, 157, 158.
5. *History of the Jesuits*, Andrew Steinmetz, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: Lea and Blanchard, 1848) Vol. II of II, pp. 474, 475, 476, 477.
6. *The Secret History of the Oxford Movement*, Walter Walsh, (London: Swan Sonnenschein and Co., 1899) pp. 23, 24.
7. *The Footprints of the Jesuits*, R. W. Thompson, (New York: Hunt & Eaton, 1894) pp. 245, 246.
8. *The Deadly Deception: Freemasonry Exposed By One of Its Top Leaders*, James D. Shaw & Tom C. McKenney, (Lafayette, Louisiana: Huntington House, Inc., 1988) p. 104.
9. *Secrets if the Tomb: Skull and Bones, the Ivy League and the Hidden Paths of Power*, Alexandra Robbins, (Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 2002) p. 119-121.
10. *America's Secret Establishment: An Introduction to The Order of Skull and Bones*, Antony C. Sutton, (Billings, Montana: Liberty House Press, 1986) pp. 5, 16.
11. *A Popular History of Priestcraft*, William Howitt, (London: Effingham Wilson, Royal Exchange, 1833) p. 175.
12. *Popery in its Social Aspect, Being a Complete Exposure of the Immorality and Intolerance of Romanism*, R. P. Blakeney, (Toronto, Canada: The Gospel Witness, 1854) p. 1.
13. *Murder in the Vatican*, Avro Manhattan, (Springfield, Missouri: Ozark Book Publishers, 1985) p. 97.
14. *Days of Our Years*, Pierre van Paassen, (New York: Hillman-Curl, Inc., 1939) pp. 398, 366.
15. *The Grand Design Exposed*, John Daniel, (Middleton, Idaho: CHJ Publishing, 1999) p. 302.

## Chapter 23

1. *The Engineer Corps of Hell; Or Rome's Sappers and Miners*, Compiled and translated by Edwin A. Sherman, (San Francisco, California: Private subscription, 1883) pp. 13, 14, 17, 18; quoting *The Company of Jesus* by Charles Sauvestre published in 1850.
2. *The Jesuit Conspiracy: The Secret Plan of the Order*, Abbate [*Abate*] Leone, (London: Chapman and Hall, 1848) pp. 77, 78, 63, 65, 66, 68, 69, 257.
3. *The Jesuit Conspiracy: The Secret Plan of the Order*, Abbate [*Abate*] Leone, (London: Chapman and Hall, 1848) pp. 216-222; quoting *Istruzione a principi intorno alla maniera colla quale si governano i Padri Gesuiti*, Thommaso Campanella, (author of *City of the Sun*), (No city: Not intended for publication, 1655?) Bibliotheque Royale de Paris, No. 636.
4. *Works of Eugene Sue: The Wandering Jew*, Eugene Sue, (Boston: The Wyman-Fogg Company, no date), Vol. III, pp. 368, 369, 370.
5. *The Wandering Jew*, Eugene Sue, (New York: Random House, Inc., no date; originally published in 1844) Vol. I of III, pp. 313, 314.
6. *The Jesuits*, David Mitchell, (New York: Franklin Watts, 1981) p. 218.
7. *The Complete Works of Shakespeare*, edited by Hardin Craig and David Bevington, (Glenview, Illinois: Scott, Foresman and Company, 1973) p. 781.

## Chapter 24

1. *History of the Jesuits: Their Origin, Progress, Doctrines, and Designs*, G. B. Nicolini of Rome, (London: Henry G. Bohn, 1889) pp. 95, 473.
2. *The Jesuit Enigma*, E. Boyd Barrett, (New York: Boni and Liveright, 1927) p. 251.
3. *History of the Jesuits: Their Origin, Progress, Doctrines, and Designs*, p. 74.
4. *The Master's Carpet; Or Masonry and Baal-Worship Identical*, Edmond Ronayne, (South Pasadena, California: Emissary Publications, 1988: originally published in 1879) pp. 69, 211, 212.
5. *The Vatican Against Europe*, Edmond Paris, (London: The Wickliffe Press, 1964; reprinted in 1993 by Ozark Book Publishers, Springfield, Missouri, (417) 883-0438) p. 123.
6. *The Vatican Billions*, Avro Manhattan, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1983) pp. 256, 231.
7. *The Papacy and the Civil Power*, Richard W. Thompson, (New York: Harper & Bros. Publishers, 1876) pp. 33, 32, 31.
8. *The Jesuit Conspiracy: The Secret Plan of the Order*, Abbate [*Abate*] Leone, (London: Chapman and Hall, 1848) pp. 80-81.
9. *Marx and Satan*, Richard Wurmbrand, (Westchester, Illinois: Crossway Books, 1986) pp. 9, 81, 41.
10. *A Glimpse of the Great Secret Society*, Multiple Contributors, (London: William Macintosh, 1872) pp. xiii, xiv, xv, xvi, xvii, xviii, xxi.
11. *The Secret History of the Oxford Movement*, Walter Walsh, (London: Swan Sonnenschein and Co., 1899) pp. 257, 258.
12. *Isis Unveiled*, Helena Petrovna Blavatsky, (Los Angeles, California: The Theosophy Company, 1968; originally published in 1877) p. 390.
13. *Light on Free Masonry*, David Bernard, (Dayton, Ohio: Vonneida & Sowers, 1858; originally published in 1829) p. 195.
14. *Ibid*, pp. 196, 197.
15. *Ibid*, p. 206.
16. *Ibid*, p. 343.
17. *The Jesuits*, Ian R. K. Paisley, (Belfast: Puritan Printing Co. LTD., no date) p. 5.
18. *The Crisis: Or, The Enemies of America Unmasked*, J. Wayne Laurens, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: G. D. Miller, 1855) p. 26.
19. *Popery, Puseyism and Jesuitism*, Luigi Desanctis, (London: D. Catt, 1905; translated by Maria Betts from the original Italian edition published as *Roma Papale*, 1865; first published in English, 1852) pp. 125-127.
20. *Popery in its Social Aspect, Being a Complete Exposure of the Immorality and Intolerance of Romanism*, R. P. Blakeney, (Toronto, Canada: The Gospel Witness, 1854) pp. 5, 6.
21. *Popery, Puseyism and Jesuitism*, p. 139.

## Chapter 25

1. *The Great Red Dragon: Master-key to Popery*, Anthony Gavin, (Boston, Massachusetts: Samuel Jones, 1854) p. 384.
2. *The Complete Works of Shakespeare*, edited by Hardin Craig and David Bevington, (Glenview, Illinois: Scott, Foresman and Company, 1973) p. 952.
3. *The New Jesuits*, George Riemer, (Boston, Massachusetts: Little, Brown & Co., 1971) p. xiv.
4. *Foreign Conspiracy Against the Liberties of the United States*, Samuel Morse, (Boston, Massachusetts: Crocker & Brewster, 1835) p. iv.
5. *Ibid*, p. 55.
6. *The Crisis: Or, The Enemies of America Unmasked*, J. Wayne Laurens, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: G. D. Miller, 1855) pp. 265-267.
7. *Ibid*, pp. 268-270.
8. *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, Charles Chiniquy, (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Baker Book House, 1968; originally published in 1886) p. 499.
9. *The Crisis: Or, The Enemies of America Unmasked*, p. 48.
10. *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, pp. 475, 476.
11. *Ibid*, p. 476.

## Chapter 26

1. *The Jesuits in History*, Hector Macpherson, (Springfield, Missouri: Ozark Book Publishers, 1997; originally published in Edinburgh, 1914) p. 32.
2. *American Bastille [Bastille]: A History of the Illegal Arrests and Imprisonment of American Citizens During the Late Civil War*, John A. Marshall, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: Evans, Stoddart & Co., 1870) p. xiii.
3. *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, Charles Chiniquy, (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Baker Book House, 1968; originally published in 1886) p. 498.
4. *Mr. Buchanan's Administration on the Eve of the Rebellion*, James Buchanan, (Freeport, New York: Books for Libraries Press, 1970; originally published in 1865) pp. iv, 10, 11.
5. *Washington In the Lap of Rome*, Justin D. Fulton, (Boston: W. Kellaway, 1888) p. 52.
6. *A Youth's History of the Great Civil War in the United States from 1861 to 1865*, R. G. Horton, (New York: Van Evrie, Horton & Co., 1867) pp. iii, iv.
7. *Ibid*, pp. 125, 126.
8. *A Private Letter from Confederate General Bradley T. Johnson addressed to his Sister, July 14, 1864*; discovered on [www.abebooks.com](http://www.abebooks.com) under the heading "Jesuit." One of 6000 entries fully searched.
9. *Lost Victories: The Military Genius of Stonewall Jackson*, Bevin Alexander, (New York: Hippocrene Books, Inc., 2004; originally published in 1992) pp. 140-141, 254, 141, 259, 286.
10. *Life and Campaigns of Lt. General T. J. (Stonewall) Jackson*, Robert L. Dabney, (Harrisonburg, Virginia: Sprinkle Publications, 1983, originally published in 1865) pp. 643, 644, 106.
11. *Foreign Conspiracy Against the Liberties of the United States*, Samuel Morse, (Boston, Massachusetts: Crocker & Brewster, 1835) p. 26.
12. *The Crisis: Or, The Enemies of America Unmasked*, J. Wayne Laurens, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: G. D. Miller, 1855) pp. 46, 47.
13. *Occult Theocracy*, Lady Queenborough, (South Pasadena, California: Emissary Publications, 1980; originally published in 1933) pp. 220, 221.
14. *The Crisis: Or, The Enemies of America Unmasked*, pp. 268, 269.
15. *Life and Campaigns of Lt. General T. J. (Stonewall) Jackson*, pp. 178, 179, 193, 389, 392.
16. *Ibid*, p. 161.
17. *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, p. 496.
18. *Life and Letters of Robert Edward Lee, Soldier and Man*, J. William Jones, (Harrisonburg, Virginia: Sprinkle Publications, 1986; originally published in 1906) p. 275.
19. *Lost Victories*, pp. xii, 60, 265, 394, 395.

20. *Life and Campaigns of Lt. General T. J. (Stonewall) Jackson*, pp. 93, 94, 95, 96.
21. *Ibid*, p. 649.
22. *Ibid*, pp. 280, 281.
23. *They Called Him Stonewall: The Life of Lt. General T. J. Jackson, C.S.A.*, Burke Davis, (New York: Random House, 1954) p. 425.
24. *Mighty Stonewall*, Frank E. Vandiver, (College Station, Texas: Texas A & M University Press, 1988; originally published in 1957) p. 478.
25. *Stonewall: A Biography of General Thomas J. Jackson*, Byron Farwell, (New York: W. W. Norton & Co., 1992) p. 507.
26. *Life and Campaigns of Lt. General T. J. (Stonewall) Jackson*, pp. 686.
27. *They Called Him Stonewall: The Life of Lt. General T. J. Jackson, C.S.A.*, pp. 426, 427.
28. *Mighty Stonewall*, p. 479.
29. *Stonewall: A Biography of General Thomas J. Jackson*, p. 508.
30. *They Called Him Stonewall: The Life of Lt. General T. J. Jackson, C.S.A.*, p. 429.
31. *Life and Campaigns of Lt. General T. J. (Stonewall) Jackson*, pp. 711, 712, 713.
32. *Mighty Stonewall*, p. 492.
33. *Life and Campaigns of Lt. General T. J. (Stonewall) Jackson*, pp. 716, 717.
34. *Mighty Stonewall*, p. 492.
35. *The Death of Oliver Cromwell*, H. F. McMains, (Lexington, Kentucky: The University Press of Kentucky, 2000) pp. 95, 96, 97, 98, 99, 100, 101. The publisher serves the Commonwealth and several Universities including the Jesuit Order's Bellarmine College.
36. *Life and Campaigns of Lt. General T. J. (Stonewall) Jackson*, pp. 724.
37. *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, p. 501.
38. *Halley's Bible Handbook*, Henry H. Halley, (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Zondervan Publishing. Co., 1963; originally published in 1927) p. 74.
39. *A Youth's History of the Great Civil War in the United States from 1861 to 1865*, pp. 46, 47, 48.
40. *A Defense of Virginia and the South*, Robert R. Dabney, (Harrisonburg, Virginia: Sprinkle Publications, 1977; originally published in 1867) pp. 352, 353.
41. *A Youth's History of the Great Civil War in the United States from 1861 to 1865*, p. 33.
42. *White Supremacy and Negro Subordination; Or, Negroes A Subordinate Race, and (So Called) Slavery Its Normal Condition*, J. H. Van Evrie, (New York: Van Evrie, Horton & Co., 1868) pp. 146, 147, 155, 148, 156.
43. *The Conflict of the Ages*, Arno Gaebelein, (Spokane, Washington: The Exhorters, 1988; originally published in 1933) pp. 117, 120-121.
44. *Gone With the Wind*, Margaret Mitchell, (New York: The Macmillan Co., 1974; originally published in 1936) p. 514.
45. *A Constitutional View of the Late War Between the States*, Alexander H. Stephens, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: National Publishing Co., 1870) Vol. I of II, dedication.
46. *Life and Campaigns of Lt. General T. J. (Stonewall) Jackson*, p. 159.
47. *Errors of the Roman Catholic Church and its Insidious Influence in the United States and Other Countries*, 15 Contributors, (Cincinnati, Ohio: J.H. Chambers & Co., 1894) p. 62.
48. *The Devil In Robes: Or, The Sin of Priests*, J Scott Carr, (St. Louis: Continental Bible House, 1900) pp. 250-255.
49. *Plain Talk About the Romanism of To-day*, Hugh Montgomery, (Boston: American Citizen Co. 1894) p. 128.

## Chapter 27

1. *The Holy War*, John Bunyan, (Springdale, Pennsylvania: Whitaker House, 1985; originally published in 1684) pp. 38, 64.
2. *The True Republican*, Jonathan French, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: J. B. Smith & Co., 1857) pp. 24, 27.

3. *Foreign Conspiracy Against the Liberties of the United States*, Samuel Morse, (Boston, Massachusetts: Crocker & Brewster, 1835) p. 118.
4. *The Papacy and the Civil Power*, Richard W. Thompson, (New York: Harper & Bros. Pubs., 1876) p. 29.
5. *The Protestant Crusade*, Ray Allen Billington, (Chicago: Quadrangle Books, 1964) p. 158.
6. *Ibid*, p. 291.
7. *Understanding the Times – Volume One: How Satan Turned America Against God*, William P. Grady, (Knoxville, Tennessee: Grady Publications, Inc., 2005) pp. 206, 207.
8. *Ridpath's Universal History*, John Clark Ridpath, (New York: Merrill & Baker, 1901) Vol. II, pp. 555, 556, 558, 571.
9. *The Lincoln Nobody Knows*, Richard N. Current, (New York: Hill & Wang, 1958) p. 233.
10. *The Negro in American Civilization*, Nathaniel Weyl, (Washington, D.C.: Public Affairs Press, 1960) p. 80.
11. *The Negro: The Southerner's Problem*, Thomas Nelson Page, (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1904) pp. 263-274.
12. *Ancient Civilization, The Dark Ages in Europe, and the Birth of Modern Liberty and Progress*, Thomas E. Watson, (Thomson, Georgia: The Jeffersonian Publishing Co., 1916) pp. 52, 53, 54, 55.
13. *Errors of the Roman Catholic Church and its Insidious Influence in the United States and Other Countries*, 15 Contributors, (Cincinnati, Ohio: J. H. Chambers & Co., 1894) p. liv.
14. *The Screwtape Letters and Screwtape Proposes a Toast*, C. S. Lewis, (New York: The Macmillan Co., 1971; originally published in 1961) pp. 165, 168, 169.
15. *Black's Law Dictionary*, Fifth Edition, Henry Campbell Black, (St. Paul, Minnesota: West Publishing Co., 1979) p. 1500.
16. *Political Discussions*, James G. Blaine, (Norwich, Connecticut: Henry Bill Publishing Co., 1887) pp. 63, 64.
17. *Colgate v. Harvey*, 296 US 427, 428 (1935).
18. *A Constitutional View of the Late War Between the States*, Alexander H. Stephens, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: National Publishing Co., 1870) Vol. II of II, p. 650.
19. *Slaughter-House Cases*, 83 US 36, 80 (1873).
20. *Ibid*, p. 95.
21. *Maxwell v. Dow*, 176 US 597, 607, 610, 611 (1899).
22. *Twining v. New Jersey*, 211 US 97, 105, 106 (1908).
23. *The Two Babylons*, Alexander Hislop, (Neptune, New Jersey: Loizeaux Brothers, 1959; originally published in 1858) pp. 50, 52.

## Chapter 28

1. *Fourteen Years a Jesuit*, Count Paul von Hoensbroech, translated by Alice Zimmern, (New York: Cassell and Company, LTD., 1911) Vol. I, p. 240.
2. *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, Charles Chiniquy, (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Baker Book House, 1968; originally published in 1886) pp. 493, 501, 506.
3. *History of the Plots and Crimes of the Great Conspiracy to Overthrow Liberty in America*, John Smith Dye, (New York: John Smith Dye, 1866) p. 113.
4. *The Jesuit Conspiracy: The Secret Plan of the Order*, Abbate [*Abate*] Leone, (London: Chapman and Hall, 1848) pp. 181, 182.
5. *A Glimpse of the Great Secret Society*, Multiple Contributors, (London: William Macintosh, 1872) pp. 224, 225.
6. *Rome's Responsibility for the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln*, Thomas M. Harris, (Carthage, North Carolina: MM Publishing, 2004; originally published in 1897) pp. 29, 30, 21, 22, 24, 25, 32, 33, 34.
7. *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, pp. 72, 73, 74, 78, 79, 80, 95, 96, 80.
8. *The Suppressed Truth About the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln*, Burke McCarty, (Merrimac, Massachusetts: Destiny Publishers, 1973; originally published in 1924) pp. 104, 79, 105, 106, 108, 111, 112.



9. *Why Was Lincoln Murdered?*, Otto Eisenschiml, (Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 1937) pp. v, 16, 31, 78, 155, 156, 161, 361, 362, 363, 364, 366, 367, 371.
10. *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, pp. 504-507.
11. *Ibid*, p. 507.
12. *The Suppressed Truth About the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln*, p. 6.
13. *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, pp. 512-514.
14. *The Suppressed Truth About the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln*, p. 195.
15. *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, pp. 518-521.
16. *The Assassination of Lincoln; A History of the Great Conspiracy*, T. M. Harris, Brigadier-General U.S.V. and Major-General by Brevet, (Boston: American Citizen Company, 1892; republished by Heritage Books, Inc., Bowie, Maryland, 1989) p. 281.
17. *The Suppressed Truth About the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln*, p. 183.
18. *Ibid*, p. 98.
19. *Ibid*, p. 5.
20. *An Inquiry Into the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln*, Emmett McLoughlin, (New York: Lyle Stuart, Inc., 1963) pp. 156, 157.
21. *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, p. 472.

## Chapter 29

1. *The Papacy of Modern Times*, Multiple Contributors, (Glasgow: The Scottish Protestant Alliance, 1886) p. 144.
2. *The Papal System*, William Cathcart, (Philadelphia: The Griffith & Rowland Press, 1872) p. 412.
3. *Errors of the Roman Catholic Church and its Insidious Influence in the United States and Other Countries*, 15 Contributors, (Cincinnati, Ohio: J. H. Chambers & Co., 1894) pp. 344-345.
4. *Bismarck: The Story of a Fighter*, Emil [Cohn] Ludwig, (New York: Blue Ribbon Books, 1927) pp. 412, 413, 414, 415, 416, 417, 418.
5. *Romanism: A Menace to the Nation*, Jeremiah J. Crowley, (Aurora, Missouri: The Menace Publishing Co., 1912) pp. 138, 139.
6. *Rome and the War: And Coming Events In Britain*, "Watchman," (London: McBride, Nast & Company, Ltd., 1916) p. 56.
7. *Rome and Germany: The Plot For the Downfall of Britain*, "Watchman," (London: Henry J. Drane, no date, 1916 or thereabout), p. 29.
8. *Jesuits and Jesuitism*, Jules Michelet and Edgar Quinet, translated by G. H. Smith, (London: Whittaker and Co., 1844) p. 9.
9. *History of the Jesuits: Their Origin, Progress, Doctrines, and Designs*, G. B. Nicolini of Rome, (London: Henry G. Bohn, 1889) pp. 474, 475.
10. *The Secret History of the Jesuits*, Edmond Paris, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1975) p. 80.
11. *Ibid*, pp. 80, 81.
12. *The Encyclopedia Britannica*, New Werner Edition, New American Supplement, Ninth Edition, Day Otis Kellogg, (New York: The Werner Co., 1903) Vol. XIII, p. 649.
13. *Romanism and the Republic*, Isaac J. Lansing, (Boston, Massachusetts: Arnold Publishing Assoc., 1890) pp. 116-118; cited from *Romanism the Danger Ahead* by A. P. Grover.
14. *Hitler's Pope: The Secret History of Pius XII*, John Cornwell, (New York: Penguin Books, 1999) p. 317.
15. *The Jesuits: A Complete History of Their Open and Secret Proceedings From the Foundation of the Order to the Present Time*, Theodor Griesinger, (London: W. H. Allen & Co., 1903; originally published in 1873) pp. 737-739.

## Chapter 30

1. *The Vatican Against Europe*, Edmond Paris, (London: The Wickliffe Press, 1964; reprinted in 1993 by Ozark Book Publishers, Springfield, Missouri, (417) 883-0438) p. 249; quoting *The Jesuit Conspiracy: The Secret Plan of the Order*, Abbate [Abate] Leone, (London: Chapman and Hall, 1848) p. 94.
2. *Ibid*, p. 237.

3. *The Jesuits: A Complete History of Their Open and Secret Proceedings From the Foundation of the Order to the Present Time*, Theodor Griesinger, (London: W. H. Allen & Co., 1903; originally published in 1873) p. 813.
4. *Ibid*, p. 817.
5. *The Power and Secret of the Jesuits*, Rene Fulop-Miller, (Garden City, New York: Garden City Publishing Co., 1930) p. 389.
6. *The Jesuits: A Complete History of Their Open and Secret Proceedings From the Foundation of the Order to the Present Time*, pp. 805, 806.
7. *A Glimpse of the Great Secret Society*, Multiple Contributors, (London: William Macintosh, 1872) pp. 212, 213, 214, 217, 220.
8. *Ridpath's Universal History*, John Clark Ridpath, (New York: Merrill & Baker, 1901) Vol. XVI, p. 559.
9. *The Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion*, translated by Victor E. Marsden, (Los Angeles, California: Christian Nationalist Crusade, date unknown; originally published in 1905) p. 55.
10. *The Jesuits in History*, Hector Macpherson, (Springfield, Missouri: Ozark Book Publishers, 1997; originally published in Edinburgh, 1914) pp. 128-130.
11. *A Glimpse of the Great Secret Society*, pp. lxxxiv, lxxxv, lxxxvi, lxxxviii.
12. *The Suppressed Truth About the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln*, Burke McCarty, (Merrimac, Massachusetts: Destiny Publishers, 1973; originally published in 1924) p. 11.

### **Chapter 31**

1. *Geese in Their Hoods*, Charles Haddon Spurgeon, (Publisher unknown, 1873).
2. *The Black Pope*, M. F. Cusack, (London: Marshall, Russell & Co., 1896) p. 277.
3. *Ibid*, p. 16.
4. *History of the Jesuits: Their Origin, Progress, Doctrines, and Designs*, G. B. Nicolini of Rome, (London: Henry G. Bohn, 1889) pp. 465-468.
5. *The Black Pope*, p. 285.
6. *The Crisis: Or, The Enemies of America Unmasked*, J. Wayne Laurens, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: G. D. Miller, 1855) pp. 68, 69.
7. *Occult Theocracy*, Lady Queenborough, (South Pasadena, California: Emissary Publications, 1980; originally published in 1933) p. 318.
8. *The Black Pope*, pp. 286, 287.
9. *A Glimpse of the Great Secret Society*, Multiple Contributors, (London: William Macintosh, 1872) pp. lxxxvii, lxxxviii, lxxxix.
10. *A Catholic Dictionary*, William E. Addis and Thomas Arnold; revised with additions by T. B. Scannell, (London: VIRTUE AND CO., 1928) pp. 306, 314.
11. *The Illustrious Life of William McKinley: Our Martyred President*, Murat Halstead, (Troy, Ohio: Union Publishing, 1901) pp. 175-176.
12. *Papal Rome As It Is, By A Roman*, L. Aloysium Giustiniani, (Baltimore: Publication Rooms, 1843) pp. 225, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230, 216, 217.
13. *Occult Theocracy*, p. 526.
14. *The Authentic Life of William McKinley: Our Third Martyr President*, Alexander K. McClure and Charles Morris, (Washington, D.C.: W. E. Scull, 1901) pp. 454, 455, 456.
15. *The Illustrious Life of William McKinley: Our Martyred President*, pp. 74, 78, 82.
16. *Private Email to the Author*, No Title, Alan O'Reilly, June 13, 2005.
17. *Jesuit Plots Against Britain from Queen Elizabeth to King George V. Compiled from Old State Papers and Recently Recovered Vatican Documents, 300 to 400 Years Old and Great War Disclosures*, Albert Close, (London: The Protestant Truth Society, 1936) pp. 18, 55.
18. *Modern Secret Societies*, Charles A. Blanchard, (Chicago, Illinois: National Christian Association, 1906) p. 21.
19. *The Jesuit Enigma*, E. Boyd Barrett, (New York: Boni and Liveright, 1927) p. 40.
20. *The Devil In Robes; Or, The Sin of Priests*, J. Scott Carr, (St. Louis: Continental Bible House, 1900) pp. 352, 353, 357, 358, 369, 359, 360, 361, 13, 14, 15.

21. *The Illustrious Life of William McKinley: Our Martyred President*, pp. 452, 453, 455, 460, 461.
22. *Conspirators' Hierarchy: The Story of the Committee of 300*, John Coleman, (Carson City, Nevada: America West Publishers, 1992) pp. i, 12, 13, 3.
23. *The Secret History of the Jesuits*, Edmond Paris, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1975) p. 74.
24. *The Jesuits in History*, Hector Macpherson, (Springfield, Missouri: Ozark Book Publishers, 1997; originally published in Edinburgh, 1914) pp. 148, 149.
25. *The Jesuits*, David Mitchell, (New York: Franklin Watts, 1981) p. 223.
26. *Romanism and the Republic*, Isaac J. Lansing, (Boston, Massachusetts: Arnold Publishing Assoc., 1890) pp. 58-60.
27. *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, Charles Chiniquy, (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Baker Book House, 1968; originally published in 1886) p. 517.
28. *The Dollar and the Vatican*, Avro Manhattan, (Springfield, Missouri: Ozark Book Publishers, 1988) pp. 44, 45.
29. *A Vision Betrayed: The Jesuits In Japan and China*, Andrew C. Ross, (Maryknoll, New York: Orbis Books, 1994) p. 107.
30. *Errors of the Roman Catholic Church and Its Insidious Influence in the United States and Other Countries*, 15 Contributors, (Cincinnati, Ohio: J. H. Chambers & Co., 1894) p. x.
31. *Romanism: A Menace to the Nation*, Jeremiah J. Crowley, (Aurora, Missouri: The Menace Publishing Co., 1912) pp. 194, 195.
32. *Ibid*, p. 207.

## Chapter 32

1. *The Brothers Karamazov*, Fyodor Dostoyevsky, (New York: Random House, 1950; originally published in 1880) pp. 292, 294, 295, 296, 297, 298, 299, 300, 301, 302, 303, 304, 305, 306, 309.
2. *History of the Jesuits: Their Origin, Progress, Doctrines, and Designs*, G. B. Nicolini of Rome, (London: Henry G. Bohn, 1889) pp. 45, 46.
3. *Dealings With the Inquisition: Or, Papal Rome, Her Priests, and Her Jesuits*, Giacinto Achilli, (New York: Harper & Brothers, Publishers, 1851) pp. 107, 108, 109, 110.
4. *The Gray People*, Victor Herman, (No City: Independent Publishing House, 1980) pp. 25, 26, 29, 30, 31, 32, 64, 65, 66, 67.
5. *Rome and the War: And Coming Events In Britain*, "Watchman," (London: McBride, Nast & Company, Ltd., 1916) pp. 74, 75, 76, 78-79, 80, 89, 86.
6. *Rome and Germany: The Plot For the Downfall of Britain*, "Watchman," (London: Henry J. Drane, no date, 1916 or thereabout), pp. 4, 5, 6, 7, 354-355.
7. *The Power and Secret of the Jesuits*, Rene Fulop-Miller, (Garden City, New York: Garden City Publishing Co., 1930) pp. 466, 467.
8. *To Number Our Days*, Pierre van Paassen, (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1964) p. 284.
9. *The Papacy of Modern Times*, Multiple contributors, (Glasgow: The Scottish Protestant Alliance, 1886) pp. 286-288, 251, 57.
10. *Romanism Analyzed*, John McDonald, (Edinburgh: Scottish Reformation Society, 1894) pp. 348-349.
11. *Is Alberto For Real?*, Sidney Hunter, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1988) p. 28; quoting *The Great Silence Conspiracy*, Andrew Sinclair, p. 8; quoting *The Encyclopedia Britannica*, 11<sup>th</sup> Edition, Vol. II, p. 37.
12. *The Jesuits*, David Mitchell, (New York: Franklin Watts, 1981) p. 254.
13. *The Secrets of the Federal Reserve*, Eustace Mullins, (Staunton, Virginia: Bankers Research Institute, 1993) pp. 85, 86, 105, 107, 120.
14. *National Suicide: Military Aid to the Soviet Union*, Antony C. Sutton, (Melbourne, Australia: Australian League of Rights, 1973) pp. 16, 52.
15. *Masters of Deceit: The Story of Communism in America and How to Fight It*, J. Edgar Hoover, (New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1958) pp. v, vi.
16. *J. Edgar Hoover: The Man and the Secrets*, Curt Gentry, (New York: W.W. Norton & Co., 1991) pp. 71, 72-73, 75, 76, 77, 78, 79, 80, 81, 82, 83.

17. *To Eliminate the Opiate*, Marvin S. Antelman, (Jerusalem: Zionist Book Club, 2002) Vol. II, pp. 5, 273-274, 207, 5, 70, 5.
18. *The Jesuits*, p. 11.
19. *The Footprints of the Jesuits*, R. W. Thompson, (New York: Hunt & Eaton, 1894) p. 246.
20. *Conflict of the Ages*, Arno Gaebelein, (Vienna, Virginia: The Exhorters, 1988; originally published in 1933) p. 85.
21. *Days of Our Years*, Pierre van Paassen, (New York: Hillman-Curl, Inc., 1939) p. 25.
22. *Behind the Dictators*, Leo H. Lehmann, (New York: Agora Publishing Co., 1944) p. 15.
23. *The Godfathers: Alberto Part Three*, Jack Chick, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1982) p. 10.
24. *Wall Street and the Bolshevik Revolution*, Antony C. Sutton, (Morley, Western Australia: Veritas Publishing Co., 1974) p. 11.
25. *Conflict of the Ages*, pp. 96, 97.
26. *Unholy Trinity*, Mark Aarons and John Loftus, (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1991) p. 208.
27. *Conflict of the Ages*, pp. 91, 93.
28. *Wall Street and the Bolshevik Revolution*, pp. 127-134.
29. *EIR Special Report: Project Democracy*, Assorted Authors, "*Sovereign Military Order of Malta (SMOM)*," (Washington, D.C.: Executive Intelligence Review, 1987) p. 324.
30. *Descent Into Darkness*, James J. Zatko, (Notre Dame, Indiana: University of Notre Dame Press, 1965) p. 111.
31. *Ibid*, p. 112.
32. *The Secret History of the Jesuits*, Edmond Paris, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1975) p. 124.
33. *Conflict of the Ages*, pp. 103-106.
34. *The Jesuits: A Complete History of Their Open and Secret Proceedings From the Foundation of the Order to the Present Time*, Theodor Griesinger, (London: W. H. Allen & Co., 1903; originally published in 1873) p. 238.
35. *The Vatican Against Europe*, Edmond Paris, (London: The Wickliffe Press, 1964; reprinted in 1993 by Ozark Book Publishers, Springfield, Missouri, (417) 883-0438) p. 253.
36. *Ibid*, p. 253.
37. *"C"*, Anthony Cave Brown, (New York: Macmillan Publishing Co., 1987) pp. 622, 623.
38. *The Last Hero: Wild Bill Donovan*, Anthony Cave Brown (New York: Times Books, 1982) picture of Donovan inside the Vatican between pages 428 and 429.
39. *Jesuits: A Multibiography*, Jean Lacouture, (Collegeville, Minnesota: The Liturgical Press, 1995) p. 333.
40. *Treason in the Blood*, Anthony Cave Brown, (New York: Houghton Mifflin Co., 1994) pp. 555-557.
41. *Spycatcher: The Candid Autobiography of a Senior Intelligence Officer*, Peter Wright with Paul Greengrass, (New York: Viking Penguin, Inc., 1987) pp. 315, 316, 317, 318.

### Chapter 33

1. *The Complete Works of Shakespeare*, edited by Hardin Craig and David Bevington, (Glenview, Illinois: Scott, Foresman and Company, 1973) p. 510.
2. *Errors of the Roman Catholic Church and its Insidious Influence in the United States and Other Countries*, 15 Contributors, (Cincinnati, Ohio: J. H. Chambers & Co., 1894) p. x.
3. *Washington In the Lap of Rome*, Justin D. Fulton, (Boston: W. Kellaway, 1888) pp. 36, 45, 37, 48.
4. *Rome: Pagan and Papal*, Maurant Brock, (London: Hodder and Stoughton, 1883) pp. 266-267.
5. *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, Charles Chiniquy, (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Baker Book House, 1968; originally published in 1886) pp. 476, 477.
6. *The Devil In Robes; Or, The Sin of Priests*, J. Scott Carr, (St. Louis: Continental Bible House, 1900) pp. 194, 195, 196, 197, 198, 199, 200.
7. *The Chief: The Life of William Randolph Hearst*, David Nasaw, (New York: Houghton Mifflin Company, 2000) pp. 387, 388.
8. *The Suppressed Truth About the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln*, Burke McCarty, (Merrimac, Massachusetts: Destiny Publishers, 1973; originally published in 1924) p. 166.

9. *Black's Law Dictionary*, Fifth Edition, Henry Campbell Black, (St. Paul, Minnesota: West Publishing Co., 1979) p. 1194.
10. *Vatican, U.S.A.*, Nino Lo Bello, (New York: Trident Press, 1972) p. 28.
11. *Romanism: A Menace to the Nation*, Jeremiah J. Crowley, (Aurora, Missouri: The Menace Publishing Co., 1912) p. 189.
12. *JFK, Director's Cut*, Oliver Stone; Director, (Warner Bros., Inc., 1991), Video, 189 minutes, Vol. I of II.
13. *General Sherman's Son: The Life of Thomas Ewing Sherman, S.J.*, Joseph T. Durkin, S. J., (New York: Farrar, Straus and Cudahy, 1959) p. 186.
14. *Ibid*, pp. 143, 145, 148.
15. *Ibid*, p. 205.
16. *The Luciano Project: The Secret Wartime Collaboration of the Mafia and the U.S. Navy*, Rodney Campbell, (New York: McGraw Book Co., 1977) pp. vii, viii.
17. *Contract on America: The Mafia Murder of President John F. Kennedy*, David E. Scheim, (New York: Shapolsky Publishers, Inc., 1988) p. 190.
18. *Romanism: A Menace to the Nation*, pp. 154-157.
19. *The Suppressed Truth About the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln*, pp. 238, 239.
20. [www.sspix.ca/Angelus/2000\\_August/Knights\\_of\\_Columbus\\_Pt2.htm](http://www.sspix.ca/Angelus/2000_August/Knights_of_Columbus_Pt2.htm), *The Angelus*; August 2000, Volume XXIII, No. 8; 'The Knights of Columbus: Conduits of Patriotism and Heresy (1882-1932), Part 2, Justin Walsh, pp. 2, 3, 4, 6, 7, 8.
21. *Slaves of the Godsmith*, H. George Buss ("The Gadfly"), (Chicago: The Revelation Publishing Co., 1913) pages not cited from secondary source.
22. *Romanism as a World Power*, Luther S. Kauffman (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: The American Publishing Co., 1922) pp. 27, 28.
23. *Ibid*, p. 30.
24. *Ibid*, p. 31.
25. *Romanism: A Menace to the Nation*, p. 159.
26. *Ibid*, p. 168.
27. *Romanism and the Republic*, Isaac J. Lansing, (Boston, Massachusetts: Arnold Publishing Assoc., 1890) p. 138.
28. *Errors of the Roman Catholic Church*, pp. xiv, xxii.
29. *Romanism: A Menace to the Nation*, p. 166.
30. *Ibid*, p. 180.
31. *The Boss: J. Edgar Hoover and the Great American Inquisition*, Nathan G. Theoharis and John Stuart Cox, (New York: Bantam Books, 1990) p. 46.
32. *Romanism: A Menace to the Nation*, p. 136.
33. *The Brothers Karamazov*, Fyodor Dostoyevsky, (New York: Random House, 1950; originally published in 1880) p. 309.
34. *Washington In the Lap of Rome*, p. 63.
35. *Romanism: A Menace to the Nation*, p. 186.
36. *Ibid*, p. 186.

## Chapter 34

1. *History of the Jesuits*, Andrew Steinmetz, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: Lea and Blanchard, 1848) Vol. I of II, p. 141.
2. *Ibid*, Vol. I of II, p. 107.
3. *In God's Name: An Investigation Into the Murder of Pope John Paul I*, David A. Yallop, (New York: Bantam Books, 1984) p. 133.
4. *Ibid*, p. 117.
5. *Ibid*, p. 117.
6. *Ibid*, pp. 265-267.
7. *The Da Vinci Code*, Dan Brown, (New York: Doubleday, 2003) p. 1.

8. *A Popular History of Priestcraft*, William Howitt, (London: Effingham Wilson, Royal Exchange, 1833) pp. 154, 157.
9. *The Wandering Jew*, Eugene Sue, (New York: Random House, Inc., no date; originally published in 1844) Vol. I, pp. 119, 120; quoting Libri, Member of the Institute, *Letters on the Clergy*.
10. *Romanism: A Menace to the Nation*, Jeremiah J. Crowley, (Aurora, Missouri: The Menace Publishing Co., 1912) p. 195.
11. *The Vatican Empire*, Nino Lo Bello, (New York: Trident Press, 1968) p. 78.
12. *The Boss: J. Edgar Hoover and the Great American Inquisition*, Nathan G. Theoharis and John Stuart Cox, (New York: Bantam Books, 1990) p. 234.
13. *J. Edgar Hoover: The Man and the Secrets*, Curt Gentry, (New York: W.W. Norton & Co., 1991) p. 111.
14. *The Boss: J. Edgar Hoover and the Great American Inquisition*, p. 46.
15. *J. Edgar Hoover: The Man and the Secrets*, p. 213.
16. *Ibid*, pp. 209, 210.
17. *Ibid*, p. 347.
18. *The Boss: J. Edgar Hoover and the Great American Inquisition*, p. 336.
19. *J. Edgar Hoover: The Man and the Secrets*, p. 327.
20. *Ibid*, pp. 329, 330.
21. *Papal Rome As It Is, By A Roman*, L. Aloysium Giustiniani, (Baltimore: Publication Rooms, 1843) pp. 240, 243, 244, 246, 248, 249.

## Chapter 35

1. *Secret Instructions of the Jesuits*, W. C. Brownlee, (New York: American and Foreign Christian Union, 1857) following page 143, "Morality of the Jesuits."
2. *History of the Jesuits: Their Origin, Progress, Doctrines, and Designs*, G. B. Nicolini of Rome, (London: Henry G. Bohn, 1889) pp. 495, 496.
3. *The Titanic Conspiracy: Cover-ups and Mysteries of the World's Most Famous Sea Disaster*, Robin Gardiner and Dan van der Vat, (Secaucus, New Jersey: Carol Publishing Group. 1996) pp. xiii, xiv, 254, 252, 255.
4. *The Footprints of the Jesuits*, R. W. Thompson, (New York: Hunt & Eaton, 1894) p. 54; quoting *History of the Jesuits*, Andrew Steinmetz, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: Lea and Blanchard, 1848) Vol. 1, p. 151.
5. *Ibid*, pp. 60, 61.
6. *The Footprints of the Jesuits*, p. 57; quoting *History of the Jesuits: Their Origin, Progress, Doctrines and Designs*, p. 34.
7. *Remarks of Honorable E. Joy Morris, of Philadelphia, In the House of Representatives of Pennsylvania, February 12, 1856 Against the Introduction of the Monastic System and the Secret Religious Orders of the Church of Rome Into that Commonwealth, Delivered on the Final Passage of a Bill to Incorporate the Third Order of Franciscans, in Cambria County, Into a Body Politic*, no source information.
8. *History of the Jesuits*, Andrew Steinmetz, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: Lea and Blanchard, 1848) Vol. I of II, pp. 146, 147.
9. *Secrets of the Titanic*, (National Geographic Society, 1986) Video.
10. [www.fatherbrowne.com](http://www.fatherbrowne.com), Frank Browne: 1880-1960, "The Titanic," p. 2.
11. *Morgan: American Financier*, Jean Strouse, (New York: Random House, 1999) pp. 626, 627.
12. *The Titanic Conspiracy: Cover-ups and Mysteries of the World's Most Famous Sea Disaster*, p. xiv.
13. *Ibid*, pp. 205-206.
14. *Morgan: American Financier*, p. 644.
15. *The Titanic Conspiracy: Cover-ups and Mysteries of the World's Most Famous Sea Disaster*, p. 205.
16. *Sinking of the Titanic: World's Greatest Sea Disaster*, Thomas H. Russell, Editor, (City unnamed: L. H. Walter, 1912) pp. 130-131.
17. *The Secret History of the Oxford Movement*, Walter Walsh, (London: Swan Sonnenschein and Co., 1899) pp. 221.
18. *The Footprints of the Jesuits*, pp. 72, 73.

## Chapter 36

1. *The History of Romanism*, John Dowling, (New York: Edward Walker, 1845) p. 473.
2. *History of the Jesuits: Their Origin, Progress, Doctrines, and Designs*, G. B. Nicolini of Rome, (London: Henry G. Bohn, 1889) p. 42.
3. *The Black Pope*, M. F. Cusack, (London: Marshall, Russell & Co., 1896) p. 34.
4. *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, Charles Chiniquy, (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Baker Book House, 1968; originally published in 1886) p. 476.
5. *Papal Rome As It Is, By A Roman*, L. Aloysium Giustiniani, (Baltimore: Publication Rooms, 1843) pp. 242-243.
6. *The Jesuits: A Complete History of Their Open and Secret Proceedings From the Foundation of the Order to the Present Time*, Theodor Griesinger, (London: W. H. Allen & Co., 1903; originally published in 1873) pp. 416, 417.
7. *The Roman Catholic Hierarchy: The Deadliest Menace to American Liberties and Christian Civilization*, Thomas E. Watson, (Thomson, Georgia: The Jeffersonian Publishing Co., 1912) pp. 30, 31.
8. *Washington In the Lap of Rome*, Justin D. Fulton, (Boston: W. Kellaway, 1888) p. 25.
9. *Errors of the Roman Catholic Church and its Insidious Influence in the United States and Other Countries*, 15 Contributors, (Cincinnati, Ohio: J. H. Chambers & Co., 1894) p. ii, iv.
10. *The New World Order: The Ancient Plan of Secret Societies*, William T. Still, (Lafayette, Louisiana: Huntington House Publishers, 1990) p. 94; quoting *The New Freedom: A Call for the Emancipation of the Generous Energies of a People*, William Bayard Hale and endorsed by Woodrow Wilson, (New York: Doubleday, Page & Co., 1913; republished by Prentice-Hall, Inc., Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey, 1961) pp. 20, 24, 26, 29, 36, 48, 133, 136.
11. *Secret Records Revealed: The Men, the Money, and the Methods Behind the New World Order*, Dennis Laurence Cuddy, (Oklahoma City, Oklahoma: Hearthstone Publishing, Ltd., 1994) p. 5.
12. *The Story of the Seer of Patmos*, Stephen N. Haskell, (Washington, D.C.: Review and Herald Publishing Assoc., 1907) pp. 307, 308.
13. *The Secrets of the Federal Reserve*, Eustace Mullins, (Staunton, Virginia: Bankers research Institute, 1993) pp. 21, 30, 42, 54, 150, 174.
14. *The Daily Times Journal*; Chicago Newspaper *L'Italia*, 'Jerusalem Will Be Given to Holy See,' Editor Oscar Durante, (Chicago, 1911) p. unlisted.
15. *The Russian Imperial Conspiracy of 1892-1914*, Robert L. Owen, (New York: Albert and Charles Boni, 1927) p. 129, 133, 134, 135.
16. *Brotherhood of Darkness*, Stanley Monteith, (Oklahoma City, Oklahoma: Hearthstone Publishing, 2000) pp. 67, 68, 69, 70, 71, 72.
17. *Collective Speeches of Congressman Louis T. McFadden*, Compiled from the Congressional Record, (Hawthorne, California: Omni Publications, 1970; distributed by CPA Books, Clackamas, Oregon, 97015) pp. 45, 67, 143.
18. *The Rockefellers: An American Dynasty*, Peter Collier & David Horowitz, (New York: Holt, Reinhart and Winston, 1976) pp. 57, 58, 59, 225, 226.
19. *The "Federal" Reserve Conspiracy and Rockefellers*, Emanuel M. Josephson, (New York: Chedney Press, 1968) pp. 78, 74.
20. *Rule By Secrecy*, Jim Marrs, (New York: Harper Collins Publishers, 2001) p. 131.
21. *The Vatican Against Europe*, Edmond Paris, (London: The Wickliffe Press, 1964; reprinted in 1993 by Ozark Book Publishers, Springfield, Missouri, (417) 883-0438) pp. 120, 293.
22. *The House of Morgan: An American Banking Dynasty and the Rise of Modern Finance*, Ron Chernow, (New York: Atlantic Monthly Press, 1990) pp. 79, 195, 156, 211, 450, 451, 472, 258, 458.
23. [www.bartleby.com/124/pres46.html](http://www.bartleby.com/124/pres46.html), *Inaugural Addresses of the Presidents of the United States*. 1989; 'Warren G. Harding: Inaugural Address, Friday, March 4, 1921,' pp. 2, 3.
24. *Florence Harding: The First Lady, The Jazz Age, and the Death of America's Most Scandalous President*, Carl Sferrazza Anthony, (New York: William Morrow and Company, 1998) p. 472.
25. *The Fort Knox Gold Scandal*, Peter David Beter, (Fort Worth, Texas: Audio Books, Inc., 1975) Cassette recording.

26. *The Vatican Billions*, Avro Manhattan, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1983) p. 200, 153, 154, 202, 206.
27. *On the Horns of the Beast: The Federal Reserve and the New World Order*, Bill Still, (Winchester, Virginia: Reinhardt & Still Publishers, 1995) pp. 252, 257, 259, 260, 262.
28. *Secrets of the Temple: How the Federal Reserve Runs the Country*, William Greider, (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1987) pp. 52, 53, 54.
29. *Papal Revenues in the Middle Ages*, William E. Lunt, (New York: Ocagon Books, Inc., 1965) pp. 71, 73.
30. *The Coming Prince*, Sir Robert Anderson, (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Kregel Publications, 1972; originally published in the late 1890s or early 1900s) p. 214.
31. *JFK, Director's Cut*, Oliver Stone; Director, (Warner Bros., Inc., 1991) Video, 189 minutes, Vol. I of II.
32. *F.D.R.: My Exploited Father-In-Law*, Curtis B. Dall, (Torrance, California: Institute for Historical Review, 1983; originally published in 1968) pp. 119, 120.
33. *The Federal Reserve Bank*, H. S. Kenan, (Los Angeles, California: The Noontide Press, 1968; originally published in 1966) pp. 140-173.

#### **Pause IV**

1. *American Bastille [Bastille]: A History of the Illegal Arrests and Imprisonment of American Citizens During the Late Civil War*, John A. Marshall, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: Evans, Stoddart & Co., 1870) pp. xxxi, xxxii.
2. *History of the Jesuits: Their Origin, Progress, Doctrines, and Designs*, G. B. Nicolini of Rome, (London: Henry G. Bohn, 1889) p. 2.
3. *Popery. An Enemy to Civil and Religious Liberty; and Dangerous to Our Republic*, William C. Brownlee, (New York: John S. Taylor, Publisher, 1836) pp. 29, 30.
4. *Popery, Puseyism and Jesuitism*, Luigi Desanctis, (London: D. Catt, 1905; translated by Maria Betts from the original Italian edition published as *Roma Papale* in 1865; first published in English, 1852) pp. 7, 8.
5. *Popery: In Its Relations To Civil and Religious Liberty*, Thomas E. Watson, (Thomson, Georgia: The Jeffersonian Publishing Co., 1917) pp. 3, 4, 42, 43, 44.
6. *The Italian Pope's Campaign Against the Constitutional Rights of American Citizens*, Thomas E. Watson, (Thomson, Georgia: The Tom Watson Book Company, Inc., 1928; first published in 1915) pp. 3, 5, 6, 9, 10, 14.
7. *CENTER-SHOTS AT ROME: A Series of Lectures on Catholicism*, George P. Rutledge, (Cincinnati: Standard Publishing Co., 1914) pp. 152, 157, 158, 159, 161, 166, 168, 169, 170.
8. *The Jesuits In Great Britain: An Historical Inquiry Into Their Political Influence*, Walter Walsh, (London: George Routledge and Sons, 1903; republished in electronic form by Bank of Wisdom, P.O. Box 926, Louisville, KY 40201) pp. 131, 327, 328, 347, viii.
9. *The Programme of the Jesuits: A Popular Exposition*, W. Blair Neatby, (London: Publisher unlisted, 1903; republished in electronic form by Bank of Wisdom, P.O. Box 926, Louisville, KY 40201) pp. 180, 181, 186.
10. *The Double Doctrine of the Church of Rome*, Baroness Von Zedtwitz, (New York: Fleming H. Revell Company, 1906) pp. 7-8, 11, 14-15, 16, 18, 24-25, 26, 33-34, 47, 48, 49, 50-51, 56, 58, 59-60.
11. *Behind the Dictators*, Leo H. Lehmann, (New York: Agora Publishing Co., 1944) pp. 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 69, 70, 71, 72, 73, 80-81, 96, 97, 77, 79, 78, 79, 91, 107, 108.
12. *Washington In the Lap of Rome*, Justin D. Fulton, (Boston: W. Kellaway, 1888) pp. vii, viii, ix.
13. *The Devil's Advocate*, Taylor Hackford, Director, (Warner Brothers, Inc., 1997) Home Video, 144 minutes.

#### **Chapter 37**

1. *The Jesuits: A Complete History of Their Open and Secret Proceedings From the Foundation of the Order to the Present Time*, Theodor Griesinger, (London: W. H. Allen & Co., 1903; originally published in 1873) pp. 804, 805.
2. *The Pope the Kings and the People; A History of the Movement to Make the Pope Governor of the World by a Universal Reconstruction of Society*, William Arthur, (London: Hodder and Stoughton, 1903) pp. 691, 692, 25.
3. *Romanism: A Menace to the Nation*, Jeremiah J. Crowley, (Aurora, Missouri: The Menace Publishing Co., 1912) p. 144.



4. *The Russian Imperial Conspiracy of 1892-1914*, Robert L. Owen, (New York: Albert and Charles Boni, 1927) p. 15.
5. *The Footprints of the Jesuits*, R. W. Thompson, (New York: Hunt & Eaton, 1894) pp. 28, 29.
6. *The Jesuits*, David Mitchell, (New York: Franklin Watts, 1981) p. 243.
7. *Rome and the War: And Coming Events In Britain*, "Watchman," (London: McBride, Nast & Company, Ltd., 1916) pp. 95, 96, 97, 98, 103, 230, 231, 233, 234, 235, 236, 237, 239, 240.
8. *Rome and Germany: The Plot For the Downfall of Britain*, "Watchman," (London: Henry J. Drane, no date, 1916 or thereabout), pp. 191, 192, 235, 241, 260, 312, 340, 381, 354.
9. *The Kaiser's Memoirs*, Wilhelm II, (New York: Harper & Brothers Publishers, 1922) p. 211.
10. *Behind the Dictators*, Leo H. Lehmann, (New York: Agora Publishing Co., 1944) p. 26.
11. *Father Coughlin: The Tumultuous Life of the Priest of the Little Flower*, Sheldon Marcus, (Boston, Massachusetts: Little, Brown & Co, 1973) pp. 101, 102.
12. *Behind the Dictators*, p. 26.
13. *The Secret History of the Jesuits*, Edmond Paris, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1975; originally published in 1965) p. 138.
14. *The Vatican Against Europe*, Edmond Paris, (London: The Wickliffe Press, 1964; reprinted in 1993 by Ozark Book Publishers, Springfield, Missouri, (417) 883-0438) p. 48.
15. *Behind the Dictators*, pp. 36, 38, 39, 40, 3.
16. *Collective Speeches of Congressman Louis T. McFadden*, Compiled from the Congressional Record, (Hawthorne, California: Omni Publications, 1970; distributed by CPA Books, Clackamas, Oregon, 97015) pp. 236, 237, 238, 239, 240.
17. *Hitler's Pope: The Secret History of Pius XII*, John Cornwell, (New York: Penguin Books, 1999) pp. 9, 16, 17, 20, 23, 24, 28, 63, 80, 81, 94, 96, 97, 126, 127, 132, 133, 135, 136, 296, 297. Cornwell, a Roman Catholic scholar and former research fellow at Jesus College, was aided by at least eight Jesuits in the compilation of his work. They are: **Philip Caraman, Pierre Blet, Robert Graham, Gerard O'Collins, Peter Hebblethwaite, Peter Gumpel, Paul Molinari and Marcel Chapin.**
18. *The History of Protestantism*, James A. Wylie, (London: Cassell, Petter & Galpin, Ltd., 1878) Vol. II of III, Book Fifteenth, pp. 412, 393, 394, 395, 398.
19. *The Secret History of the Jesuits*, pp. 9, 164.
20. *La Popessa*, Paul I. Murphy with R. René Arlington, (New York: Warner Books, 1983) pp. 51-52.
21. *God's First Love*, Friedrich Heer, (New York: Weybright and Talley, 1967) p. 320.
22. *The Catholic Church and Nazi Germany*, Guenter Lewy, (New York: McGraw Hill, 1964) p. 50ff.
23. [www.thetablet.co.uk/cgi-bin/book\\_review.cgi/past-00123](http://www.thetablet.co.uk/cgi-bin/book_review.cgi/past-00123), Michael Walsh reviews *Spies in the Vatican* (2002) authored by David Alvarez who was a collaborator with the late American Jesuit **Robert Graham**. Upon Graham's death all of his papers were sent to the Vatican Secretariat of State where they now languish in the Vatican Library, unavailable to researchers. Graham was one of ~~the Black Pope's~~ official Jesuit censors ordered to conceal the secret history of ~~the Society of Jesus~~ and its puppet, **Pope Pius XII**, in the political rise to power and hidden control of Adolf Hitler and thus the designs of the Third Reich. In the words of Michael Walsh, "Perhaps after all the Vatican has something to hide."
24. *Ridpath's Universal History*, John Clark Ridpath, (New York: Merrill & Baker, 1901) Vol. XII, pp. 728, 729, 731, 739.
25. *The Order of the Death's Head: The Story of Hitler's SS*, Heinz Höhne, translated by Richard Barry, (New York: Ballantine Books, 1969) pp. 1, 2, 5, 3, 4, 40, 56, 57, 58, 59, 94, 151, 401, 409, 430.
26. *The Devil In Robes; Or, The Sin of Priests*, J. Scott Carr, (St. Louis: Continental Bible House, 1900) pp. 21-22.
27. *The Deputy*, Rolf Hochhuth, (New York: Grove Press, Inc., 1964) pp. 309-310; citing *The Labyrinth: Memoirs of Walter Schellenberg*, Walter Schellenberg, (New York: Harper, 1956).
28. *The Popes Against the Jews*, David I. Kertzer, (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 2001) pp. 134-145.
29. *Papacy and Freemasonry*, Monseigneur Jouin, (Boring, Oregon: CPA Book Publisher, No date; first published in 1930) pp. 1, 2, 3, 34, 35.
30. *Mein Kampf*, Adolf Hitler (ghost-written by Priest Bernard Stampfle), (Boston: Houghton Mifflin Co., 1971; first published in 1925 by Verlag Frz. Eher Nachf, G.M.B.H.) pp. 14, 314, 315, 320.

31. *Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry*, Albert Pike, (Charleston: L. H. Jenkins, Inc., 1871) pp. 4, 5.
32. *I Was Hitler's Doctor*, Kurt Krueger, (New York: Biltmore Publishing Co., Inc., 1943) pp. 32, 33-34, 41, 310, 99, 200, 214-215.
33. *"Ravening Wolves"*, Monica Farrell, (Melbourne, Australia: Protestant Publications, 1981; originally published in 1949) pp. 50-54.
34. *IBM and the Holocaust: The Strategic Alliance Between Nazi Germany and America's Most Powerful Corporation*, Edwin Black, (New York: Crown Publishers, 2001) pp. 254, 255, 264, 266, 368, 369, 370, 371.
35. *Mein Kampf*, Adolf Hitler (ghost-written by Priest Bernard Stampfle), (New York: Stackpole Sons Publishers, 1939; the first unexpurgated edition in English) pp. 277, 278, 279, 281.
36. *I Was Hitler's Doctor*, pp. 267, 269, 270, 271.
37. *The Kersten Memoirs: 1940-1945*, Felix Kersten, translated by Constantine Fitzgibbon and James Oliver, (London: Hutchinson & Co., 1956) pp. 119, 120, 155, 97.
38. *To Number Our Days*, Pierre van Paassen, (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1964) pp. 311, 312, 313, 314, 317, 316.
39. *Israel: A Deadly Piece of Dirt*, Peter S. Ruckman, (Pensacola, Florida: Peter S. Ruckman, 2001) pp. 263, 267, 284.
40. *Brotherhood of Darkness*, Stanley Monteith, (Oklahoma City, Oklahoma: Hearthstone Publishing, 2000) pp. 132.
41. *The Labyrinth: Memoirs of Walter Schellenberg*, Walter Schellenberg, translated by Louis Hagen, (New York: Harper & Brothers, Publishers, 1956) pp. 288-295, 375-376. The strong statements revealing the relationship between the SS and the **Society of Jesus** as found in the German text quoted by Hochhuth in his *The Deputy* have been abridged and thereby censored.
42. *The Black International – No. 3: The Pope Helps Hitler to World Power*, Joseph McCabe, (Girard, Kansas: Haldeman – Julius Publications, 1941) p. 12.
43. *Days of Our Years*, Pierre van Paassen, (New York: Hillman-Curl, Inc., 1939) pp. 21, 75.
44. *The Deputy*, p. 350.
45. *Ibid*, pp. 76, 183, 248-249.
46. *Nazi Millionaires: The Allied Search For Hidden SS Gold*, Kenneth D. Alford & Theodore P Savas, (Havertown, Pennsylvania: CASEMATE, 2002) pp. 297-298.
47. *To Eliminate the Opiate*, Marvin S. Antelman, (Jerusalem: Zionist Book Club, 2002) Vol. II, pp. 206, 220-221.
48. *Military Intelligence Blunders*, John Hughes-Wilson, (New York: Carroll & Graf Publishers, 1999) pp. 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43, 48, 49, 52, 59, 41.
49. *Hitler's Traitor: Martin Bormann and the Defeat of the Reich*, Louis Kilzer, (Novato, California: Presidio Press, 2000) pp. 1, 261, 262, 263, 264, 265, 266.
50. *Day of Deceit: The Truth About FDR and Pearl Harbor*, Robert B. Stinnett, (New York: The Free Press, 2000) pp. xiii, xiv, 5, 30.
51. *The Russian Imperial Conspiracy of 1892-1914*, p. 135.
52. *The Kaiser's Memoirs*, pp. 257, 258.
53. *Roman Catholics In America Falsifying History and Poisoning the Minds of Protestant School Children*, Thomas E. Watson, (Thomson, Georgia: The Tom Watson Book Company, 1928) p. 26.
54. *The Dollar and the Vatican*, Avro Manhattan, (Springfield, Missouri: Ozark Book Publishers, 1988) p. 65.
55. *Documents of the Armenian Genocide; Series No. 1*, (Jerusalem: Armenian Genocide Council, 1995) pp. 1, 4, 7, 11, 12, 13, 17, 18, 19, 24.
56. *The Splendid Blonde Beast: Money, Law and Genocide in the Twentieth Century*, Christopher Simpson, (Monroe, Maine: Common Courage Press, 1995) pp. 28, 31, 32, 33, 34.
57. *Days of Our Years*, Pierre van Paassen, (New York: Hillman-Curl, Inc., 1939) pp. 122, 123, 124.
58. *Private Email to the Author*, "1918 US/Canadian/Bolshevik Takeover of Moscow and St. Petersburg," William R. Deagle, MD, June 22, 2006, p. 1 of 2.

- 
- 
59. *The Black Book of Communism; Crimes, Terror, Repression*, Courtois, Werth, Panné, Pacykowski, Bartosek, Margolin, (Cambridge, Massachusetts: Harvard University Press, 1999) pp. 103, 104, 100.
  60. *Conspirators' Hierarchy: The Story of the Committee of 300*, John Coleman, (Carson City, Nevada: America West Publishers, 1992) p. 167.
  61. *World War I*, S. L. A. Marshall, (New York: American Heritage Press, 1971) p. 325.
  62. *Barbarossa: The Russian-German Conflict, 1941-1945*, Alan Clark, (New York: William Morrow and Company, 1965) p. 18.
  63. *The Russian Imperial Conspiracy of 1892-1914*, pp. 190, 192, 201, 196, 197.
  64. *The Vatican Against Europe*, pp. 204, 205, 211.
  65. *Ibid*, p. 159.
  66. *Secret Records Revealed: The Men, the Money, and the Methods Behind the New World Order*, Dennis Laurence Cuddy, (Oklahoma City, Oklahoma: Hearthstone Publishing, Ltd., 1994) p. 13.
  67. *The Anglo-American Establishment: From Rhodes to Cliveden*, Carroll Quigley, (New York: Books in Focus, 1981) p. 36.
  68. *I Was Hitler's Doctor*, pp. 120, 121, 122, 123, 124.
  69. *A History of the Chinese Secret Service*, Richard Deacon, (London: Frederick Muller, Ltd., 1974) pp. 205, 206, 207.
  70. *The Invisible Government*, Dan Smoot, (Boston, Massachusetts: Western Islands, 1962) pp. xi, 100.
  71. *Ibid*, pp. 140, 141.
  72. *A U.S. Police Action: Operation Vampire Killer*, Multiple contributors, (Phoenix, Arizona: The American Citizens & Laumen Assoc., 1992) pp. 18, 19.
  73. *The Jesuits: A Complete History of Their Open and Secret Proceedings From the Foundation of the Order to the Present Time*, pp. 150-151.
  74. *Three Who Made a Revolution*, Bertram D. Wolfe, (New York: Dell Publishing Co., 1964; originally published by Dial Press, 1948) p. 96.
  75. *Stalin: Mysterious, Relentless Dictator of Soviet Russia*, Isaac Don Levine, (New York: Blue Ribbon Books, Inc., 1931) pp. 6, 7, 8, 9, 11, 20, 21, 22.
  76. *Fabian Freeway: High Road to Socialism In the U.S.A., 1884-1966*, Rose L. Martin, (Chicago: Heritage Foundation, 1966) pp. 16, 25, 17, 18, 26, 33, 28, 29, 30.
  77. *The Vatican Empire*, Nino Lo Bello, (New York: Trident Press, 1968) pp. 67, 68.
  78. *The Time of Jacob's Trouble: An Answer to the Question of a Little Jewish Girl: "What Makes Folks Hate Us So?"* Louis S. Bauman, (Long Beach, California: Louis S. Bauman, 1939) p. 70, 71.
  79. *The Secret History of the Jesuits*, p. 126.
  80. *The Vatican Against Europe*, p. 69.
  81. *Days of Our Years*, p. 465.
  82. *The Time of Jacob's Trouble: An Answer to the Question of a Little Jewish Girl: "What Makes Folks Hate Us So?"*, pp. 53, 54.
  83. *Ibid*, pp. 73, 74.
  84. *The Gulag Archipelago*, Alexander Solzhenitsyn, (New York: Harper and Row, 1974) p. 92.
  85. *The Suppressed Truth About the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln*, Burke McCarty, (Merrimac, Massachusetts: Destiny Publishers, 1973; originally published in 1924) pp. 238, 239.
  86. *The Fitzgeralds and the Kennedys*, Doris Kearns Goodwin, (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1987) pp. 497, 498.
  87. *Father Coughlin: The Tumultuous Life of the Priest of the Little Flower*, p. 82.
  88. *The Black Pope*, M. F. Cusack, (London: Marshall, Russell & Co., 1896) p. 87.
  89. *Father Coughlin: The Tumultuous Life of the Priest of the Little Flower*, p. 98.
  90. *The American Pope*, John Cooney, (New York: Times Books, 1984) pp. 124, 125.
  91. *National Suicide: Military Aid to the Soviet Union*, Antony C. Sutton, (Melbourne, Australia: Australian League of Rights, 1973) pp. 124, 125, 128.
  92. *Nightmare In Red*, Horst Gerlach, (Freeman, South Dakota: Pine Hill Press, Inc., 1995) pp. 64, 69.

93. *Total Empire: The Roots and Progress of World Communism*, Edmund A. Walsh, S.J., (Milwaukee: The Bruce Publishing Company, 1951) pp. 3, 28, 19, 24, 20.
94. *Trading with the Enemy*, Charles Higham, (New York: Dell Publishing Co., 1983) p. 42.
95. *Ibid*, p. 204.
96. *The Federal Reserve Bank*, H. S. Kenan, (Los Angeles; California: The Noontide Press, 1968; originally published in 1966) p. 158.
97. *The Vatican Against Europe*, p. 95.
98. *Days of Our Years*, p. 465.
99. *Trading with the Enemy*, pp. 182, 183.
100. *Ibid*, pp. 184, 185.
101. *National Catholic Reporter*, "Who Are the Knights of Malta?", Martin Lee, (Kansas City, Missouri, October 14, 1983) p. 1.
102. *Jesuit Plots Against Britain from Queen Elizabeth to King George V. Compiled from Old State Papers and Recently Recovered Vatican Documents, 300 to 400 Years Old and Great War Disclosures*, Albert Close, (London: The Protestant Truth Society, 1936) p. 39.
103. *Ibid*, p. 183.
104. *Alberto: Alberto Part One*, Jack Chick, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1979) p. 12.  
*The Godfathers: Alberto Part Three*, Jack Chick, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1982) p. 21.  
*The Prophet: Alberto Part Six*, Jack Chick, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1988) pp. 28, 29.
105. *Days of Our Years*, pp. 462-470.
106. *Joseph P. Kennedy: A Life and Times*, David E. Koskoff, (Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey: Prentice-Hall, Inc. 1974) p. 135.
107. *The Devil's Masterpiece: The Mystery of Iniquity*, Albert Garner, (Lakeland, Florida: Blessed Hope Foundation, 1954) pp. 70, 71.
108. *The Vatican Against Europe*, pp. 252, 256.
109. *Ibid*, p. 253.
110. *Ibid*, pp. 249, 250.
111. *Ibid*, p. 127.
112. *Ibid*, p. 253.
113. *The Vatican Papers: A Behind-the-Scenes Exposé of the Most Powerful City State In the World*, Nino Lo Bello, (London: New English Library, 1982) p. 26.
114. *The Vatican Against Europe*, pp. 206.
115. *Ibid*, p. 200.
116. *Ibid*, p. 163.
117. *Ibid*, p. 226.
118. *The Jesuits: A Story of Power*, Alain Woodrow, (London: Geoffrey Chapman, 1995) p. 217.
119. *The Jesuits*, Malachi Martin, (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1987) p. 350.
120. [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Katyn\\_massacre](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Katyn_massacre), "Katyn Massacre," p. 9 of 14.
121. *F.D.R.: My Exploited Father-In-Law*, Curtis B. Dall, (Torrance, California: Institute for Historical Review, 1983; originally published in 1968) p. 155.
122. *Ibid*, p. 153.
123. *The Unseen Hand*, A. Ralph Epperson, (Tucson, Arizona: Publius Press, 1994; first printed in 1985) p. 301.
124. [www.rense.com/general63/patton.htm](http://www.rense.com/general63/patton.htm), "The Assassination of General George Patton," 18 March 2005.
125. *The Unseen Hand* pp. 289, 290.
126. *Cancer Holocaust: Why Are Doctors Not Allowed to Cure Cancer?*, Carol Morrison-Kelly and William Kelly, (Hanover, Virginia: Elliott Germain of American Organization for Cultural Peace, 1996) p. 45.
127. *The Suppressed Truth About the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln*, p. 12.
128. *The Unseen Hand*, pp. 282, 283.

129. *The German Generals Talk: Startling Revelations from Hitler's High Command*, B. H. Liddell Hart, (New York: William Morrow & Co., 1948) pp. 106, 107, 134.
130. Source withheld upon the request of the contributor.
131. *The Vatican Against Europe*, pp. 118, 119.
132. *Luther's Works*, "Martin Luther", (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: Fortress Press, 1971) pp. 268-293.
133. *The Counter-Reformation In Europe*, Arthur R. Pennington, (London: Elliot Stock, 1899) p. 217.
134. *The Footprints of the Jesuits*, p. 59.
135. *The Vatican Against Europe*, p. 249.
136. *Aftermath: Martin Bormann and the Fourth Reich*, Ladislav Farago, (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1974), p. 185.

## Chapter 38

1. *Secret Instructions of the Jesuits*, W. C. Brownlee, (New York: American and Foreign Christian Union, 1857) pp. 81, 83.
2. *The Story of Aluminum Poisoning*, Multiple Contributors, (Mokelumne Hill, California: Health Research, 1960) p. 47.
3. *The Founding Father: The Story of Joseph P. Kennedy*, Richard J. Whalen, (New York: The New American World Library of World Literature, Inc., 1964) pp. 117, 119, 121, 122, 123, 124, 125, 365, 366.
4. *History of the SS*, G. S. Graber, (New York: David McKay Company, Inc., 1978) pp. 205-206.
5. *Flucht vor Nürnberg Pläne und Organisation der Fluchtwege der NS-Prominenz im Römischen Weg*, Werner Brockdorff, (Munich: Welsermühl Publishing House, 1969) pp. 20, 75, 51, 68, 80, 95.
6. *The Vatican Papers: A Behind-the-Scenes Exposé of the Most Powerful City State In the World*, Nino Lo Bello, (London: New English Library, 1982) pp. 42, 43, 44, 45.
7. *Aftermath: Martin Bormann and the Fourth Reich*, Ladislav Farago, (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1974) pp. 180, 181, 182, 183, 299.
8. *The Search for 'Gestapo' Mueller: The Man Without a Shadow*, Charles Whiting, (South Yorkshire, Great Britain, LEO COOPER, Pen & Sword Books Ltd., 2001) pp. 237, 240.
9. *The Omega Files: Secret Nazi UFO Bases Revealed!*, Anonymous Author "Brandon," (New Brunswick, New Jersey: Global Communications, 2000) "Hitler's Escape," No pagination.
10. *Hitler's Escape*, Ron T. Hansig, (London: Athena Press, 2005) pp. 116, 118, 119.
11. *Called to Serve: Profiles in Conspiracy from John F. Kennedy to George Bush*, Col. James "Bo" Gritz, (Sandy Valley, Nevada: Lazarus Publishing Co., 1991) pp. 537, 538, 563.
12. *To Number Our Days*, Pierre van Paassen, (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1964) pp. 287, 325-326.
13. *The Child of the Century*, Ben Hecht, (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1954) p. 520.
14. *Shabtai Tzvi, Labor Zionism and the Holocaust*, Barry Chamish, (Modiin, Israel: Modiin House, 2006) pp. 4, 12, 55, 114, 141, 205, 206, 207.
15. *Brotherhood of Darkness*, Stanley Monteith, (Oklahoma City, Oklahoma: Hearthstone Publishing, 2000) pp. 92, 131-132.
16. *Svetlana: The Story of Stalin's Daughter*, Martin Ebon, (New York: The New American Library, 1967) pp. 99, 100, 101, 102.
17. "The Secret State," Carl Oglesby, Speech to the Massachusetts Libertarian Party on the 200<sup>th</sup> Birthday of the Bill of Rights, December 19, 1991, pp. 1, 2, 3 of 14.
18. *National Catholic Reporter*, "Who Are the Knights of Malta?," Martin Lee, (Kansas City, Missouri, October 14, 1983) p. 5.
19. <http://www.prouty.org/brussell/nazi-1.html> "The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination," Mae Brussell (from *The Rebel*, January 22, 1984, pp. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 27 of 32).
20. [www.ratical.org/ratville/JFK/JohnJudge/GoodAmericans.html](http://www.ratical.org/ratville/JFK/JohnJudge/GoodAmericans.html), *The Ratville Times*, "Good Americans," John Judge, 1983, pp. 9, 10 of 24.
21. *The Belarus Secret*, John Loftus, (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1982) pp. vii, 8, 9, 10, 11, 18, 12, 25, 26, 28, 29, 31, 37, 38, 84, 128, 153, 154.

22. **Klaus Barbie: The Shocking Story of How the U.S. Used this Nazi War Criminal as an Intelligence Agent**, Erhard Dabringhaus, (Washington, D.C.: Acropolis Books Ltd., 1984) pp. 11, 12, 23, 35, 65, 71, 165, 169, 157, 176, 177.
23. [http://home.planet.nl/~reijd050/organisations/Le\\_Cercle.htm](http://home.planet.nl/~reijd050/organisations/Le_Cercle.htm), "Project for the Exposure of Hidden Institutions: Le Cercle," Joël van der Reijden, June 12, 2006, pp. 1, 2, 13 of 17.
24. **National Suicide: Military Aid to the Soviet Union**, Antony C. Sutton, (Melbourne, Australia: Australian League of Rights, 1973) pp. 17, 19, 30, 33, 261.
25. **The Vatican Billions**, Avro Manhattan, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1983) p. 184.
26. **The Black Book of Communism; Crimes, Terror, Repression**, Courtois, Werth, Panné, Pacykowski, Bartosek, Margolin, (Cambridge, Massachusetts: Harvard University Press, 1999) p. 4.
27. **Understanding the Times – Volume One: How Satan Turned America Against God**, William P. Grady, (Knoxville, Tennessee: Grady Publications, Inc., 2005) p. 557.
28. **The Rockefeller File**, Gary Allen, (Seal Beach, California: '76 Press, 1976) pp. 104, 102, 103, 104, 107, 109, 110, 116, 117, 108.
29. **The Deputy**, Rolf Hochhuth, (New York: Grove Press, Inc., 1964) pp. 319-320.
30. *Private Email to the Author*, "German and USA Nuclear Detonation 1939—Bikini Atoll Plutonium/Cobalt Primitive Nuclear Air Detonation," William R. Deagle, MD, June 22, 2006, pp. 1-2.
31. **The Jesuits: A Story of Power**, Alain Woodrow, (New York: Geoffrey Chapman, 1995) p. 217.
32. **Ibid**, pp. 217-218.
33. **Harmonic 33**, Bruce L. Cathie, (Wellington, New Zealand: Reed Publishers, 1968) pp. 77, 78.
34. **The Unseen Hand**, A. Ralph Epperson, (Tucson, Arizona: Publius Press, 1994; originally printed in 1985) pp. 330, 331.
35. [www.olderadio.com/archives/stations/wwj1.htm](http://www.olderadio.com/archives/stations/wwj1.htm), "WWJ, A Jesuit and the Bomb," Jeffrey McQueen, 2003, pp. 1, 2, 3, 5 of 7.
36. **The Gulag Archipelago**, Alexander Solzhenitsyn, (New York: Harper and Row, 1974) pp. 101, 102, 35.
37. **Murder in the Vatican**, Avro Manhattan, (Springfield, Missouri: Ozark Book Publishers, 1985) pp. 25, 26.
38. **None Dare Call It Conspiracy**, Gary Allen, (Rossmoor, California: Concord Press, 1971) pp. 13, 14.
39. **Alberto: Alberto Part One**, Jack Chick, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1979) pp. 27, 28.
40. **None Dare Call It Conspiracy**, pp. 100, 101.
41. **The American Pope**, John Cooney, (New York: Times Books, 1984) pp. 186, 187.
42. **The Search for 'Gestapo' Mueller: The Man Without a Shadow**, p. 71.
43. **Plausible Denial: Was the CIA Involved in the Assassination of JFK?**, Mark Lane, (New York: Thunder's Mouth Press, 1991) p. 117.
44. **The Visions and Prophecies of Zechariah**, David Baron, (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Kregel Publications, 1972; originally published in 1918) p. 310.
45. **Called to Serve: Profiles in Conspiracy from John F. Kennedy to George Bush**, pp. 561, 562.
46. **JFK: The CIA, Vietnam and the Plot to Assassinate John F. Kennedy**, Col. L. Fletcher Prouty, (New York: Carol Publishing Group, 1992) pp. 25, 26.
47. **Unholy Trinity**, Mark Aarons and John Loftus, (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1991) pp. xi, xii.
48. **National Catholic Reporter**, "Who Are the Knights of Malta?," p. 5.
49. **Unholy Trinity**, p. 262.
50. **Unholy Trinity**, quote from photo 28 between pages 184 and 185.
51. **EIR Special Report: Project Democracy**, Assorted Authors, "Sovereign Military Order of Malta (SMOM)", (Washington, D.C.: Executive Intelligence Review, 1987) p. 325.
52. **Called to Serve: Profiles in Conspiracy from John F. Kennedy to George Bush**, p. 551.

## Chapter 39

1. **Secret Instructions of the Jesuits**, W. C. Brownlee, (New York: American and Foreign Christian Union, 1857) p. 141.
2. **The Black Pope**, M. F. Cusack, (London: Marshall, Russell & Co., 1896) p. 334.
3. **Men Astutely Trained**, Peter McDonough, (New York: The Free Press, 1992) pp. 266-267.



4. *Octopus: The Long Reach of the International Sicilian Mafia*, Claire Sterling, (New York: W. W. Norton & Co., 1990) pp. 11-12, 195, 194, 314.
5. *In God's Name: An Investigation Into the Murder of Pope John Paul I*, David A. Yallop, (New York: Bantam Books, 1984) p. 191.
6. *Double Cross: The Explosive Inside Story of the Mobster Who Controlled America*, Sam and Chuck Giancana, (New York: Warner Books, Inc., 1993) pp. 468, 469, 470, 471, 478.
7. *The Vatican's Holocaust*, Avro Manhattan, (Springfield, Missouri: Ozark Books, 1986) pp. 137, 138, 139.
8. *Vietnam: Why Did We Go?*, Avro Manhattan, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1984) pp. 35, 36.
9. *Ibid*, p. 37.
10. *Ibid*, pp. 176, 177.
11. *JFK: The CIA, Vietnam, and the Plot to Assassinate John F. Kennedy*, Col. L. Fletcher Prouty, (New York: Carol Publishing Group, 1992) pp. 66, 67; picture between pages 156 and 157.
12. *Vietnam: Why Did We Go?*, p. 56.
13. *Ibid*, p. 71.
14. *Secret Instructions of the Jesuits*, following page 143, "Morality of the Jesuits."
15. *EIR: Dope, Inc.: The Book That Drove Kissinger Crazy*, Assorted Authors, (Washington, D.C.: Executive Intelligence Review, 1992) pp. 116, 117.
16. *Called to Serve: Profiles in Conspiracy from John F. Kennedy to George Bush*, Col. James "Bo" Gritz, (Sandy Valley, Nevada: Lazarus Publishing Co., 1991) pp. 334, 335.
17. *EIR: Dope, Inc.: The Book That Drove Kissinger Crazy*, p. 67.
18. *National Catholic Reporter*, "Who Are the Knights of Malta?", Martin Lee, (Kansas City, Missouri, October 14, 1983) p. 1.

## Pause V

1. *The Unfolding of the Ages in the Revelation of John*, Ford C. Ottman, (Glasgow, Scotland: Pickering & Inglis, 1914) pp. 340, 391, 292, 393, 394, 396, 400, 401.
2. *Dispensational Truth; Or, God's Plan and Purpose in the Ages*, Clarence Larkin, (Philadelphia: Rev. Clarence Larkin Est., 1918) p. 143.
3. *The Book of the Revelation*, William R. Newell, (Chicago: Moody Press, 1935) pp. 289-290.
4. *The Gospel of Matthew*, Arno C. Gaebelien, (Neptune: New Jersey: Loizeaux Brothers, 1977; originally published by Gaebelien's *Our Hope* magazine, 1910) pp. 500-501.
5. *Daniel: The Key to Prophetic Revelation*, John F. Walvoord, (Chicago: Moody Press, 1971) p. 235.
6. *Born In Blood: The Lost Secrets of Freemasonry*, John J. Robinson, (New York: M. Evans & Company, Inc., 1989) pp. 343, 344.

## Chapter 40

1. Source unknown.
2. *The Jesuit Enigma*, E. Boyd Barrett, (New York: Boni and Liveright, 1927) p. 218.
3. *The Vatican Against Europe*, Edmond Paris, (London: The Wickliffe Press, 1964; reprinted in 1993 by Ozark Book Publishers, Springfield, Missouri, (417) 883-0438) p. 308.
4. *The Secret War Against the Jews*, John Loftus and Mark Aarons, (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1994) p. 105.
5. *Called to Serve: Profiles in Conspiracy from John F. Kennedy to George Bush*, Col. James "Bo" Gritz, (Sandy Valley, Nevada: Lazarus Publishing Co., 1991) pp. 561, 562.
6. *The Secret War Against the Jews*, p. 105.
7. *Unholy Trinity*, Mark Aarons and John Loftus, (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1991) pp. 216.
8. *The Secret War Against the Jews*, pp. 151, 152, 302.
9. *Treason in the Blood*, Anthony Cave Brown, (New York: Houghton Mifflin Co., 1994) p. 298.
10. *Unholy Trinity*, pp. 208, 214.
11. *The Secret War Against the Jews*, pp. 216, 144, 145, 239.
12. *Fidel Castro*, Enrique Meneses, (New York: Taplinger Publishing Co., 1966) pp. 32, 33.

13. *Fidel: A Biography of Fidel Castro*, Peter G. Bourne, (New York: Dodd, Mead and Co., 1986) pp. 27, 28, 29, 248, 249, 302, 303.
14. *The "Federal" Reserve Conspiracy and Rockefellers*, Emanuel M. Josephson, (New York: Chedney Press, 1968) p. 72.
15. *Red Star Over Cuba; The Russian Assault on the Western Hemisphere*, Nathaniel Weyl, (New York: The Devin-Adair Co., 1962) pp. 136, 140, 141, 152, 154, 171, 182, 183.
16. *National Catholic Reporter*, "Who Are the Knights of Malta?", Martin Lee, (Kansas City, Missouri, October 14, 1983) p. 1.
17. *National Catholic Reporter*, "Knights of Malta to Provide Medical Aid to Contras", Martin Lee, (Kansas City, Missouri, January 11, 1985) p. 3.
18. *EIR Special Report: Project Democracy*, Assorted Authors, "Sovereign Military Order of Malta (SMOM)", (Washington, D.C.: Executive Intelligence Review, 1987) p. 320.
19. *Ibid*, p. 323.
20. *JFK: The CIA, Vietnam and the Plot to Assassinate John F. Kennedy*, Col. L. Fletcher Prouty, (New York: Carol Publishing Group, 1992) pp. 132, 133.

## Chapter 41

1. *The Vatican Against Europe*, Edmond Paris, (London: The Wickliffe Press, 1964; reprinted in 1993 by Ozark Book Publishers, Springfield, Missouri, (417) 883-0438) pp. 310, 311.
2. *Documents of Vatican II*, Walter M. Abbott, S. J., (Baltimore, Maryland: The America Press, 1966) p. 715.
3. *Ibid*, pp. 295, 296.
4. *Vietnam: Why Did We Go?*, Avro Manhattan, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1984) p. 164.
5. *France and England in North America*, Francis Parkman, (New York: The Viking Press, 1983; originally published in 1865) Vol. I of II, pp. 1172, 1173.
6. *The Black Pope*, M. F. Cusack, (London: Marshall, Russell & Co., 1896) p. 301.

## Chapter 42

1. *The Suppressed Truth About the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln*, Burke McCarty, (Merrimac, Massachusetts: Destiny Publishers, 1973; originally published in 1924) p. 57.
2. *The Black Pope*, M. F. Cusack, (London: Marshall, Russell & Co., 1896) p. 86.
3. *The Wandering Jew*, Eugene Sue, (New York: Random House, Inc., no date; originally published in 1844) Vol. I, pp. 308, 309.
4. *The American Pope*, John Cooney, (New York: Times Books, 1984) pp. xiii-xvi.
5. *The Vatican Billions*, Avro Manhattan, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1983) pp. 163, 164, 156.
6. *The Cardinal Spellman Story*, Robert I. Gannon, S.J., (New York: Doubleday & Company, Inc., 1962) pp. 338, 340.
7. *La Popessa*, Paul I. Murphy with R. René Arlington, (New York: Warner Books, 1983) pp. 182-183, 184, 185, 254-255, 258.
8. *Real Lace: America's Irish Rich*, Stephen Birmingham, (New York: Harper & Row Publishers, 1973) p. 244.
9. *ParaPolitics/USA, "The Men Behind the New Counter-Reformation,"* Kevin Koogan, (No city: No Publisher, March 1982) pp. 32, 33; obtained from Lloyd Miller, Research Director, A-albionic Research, P.O. Box 20273, Ferndale, Michigan, 48220-0273, <http://a-albionic.com/prjframe.html>.
10. *The Messianic Legacy*, Michael Baigent, Richard Leigh & Henry Lincoln, (London: Transworld Publishers, Ltd., 1987) pp. 429, 430, 431, 432, 433, 434, 435.
11. *The Available Man: Warren Gamaliel Harding*, Andrew Sinclair, (New York: Macmillan Co., 1965), p. 105.
12. *Priests and People In Ireland*, Michael J. F. McCarthy, (Dublin: Hodges, Figgis & Co., Ltd., 1902) p. iii.
13. *Texas In The Morning: The Love Story of Madeleine Brown and President Lyndon Baines Johnson*, Madeleine Duncan Brown, (Baltimore: The Conservatory Press, 1997) p. 85.
14. *The Elite Serial Killers of Lincoln, JFK, RFK & MLK*, Robert Gaylon Ross, Sr., (Spicewood, Texas: RIE, 2001) pp. 126, 128, 129, 130, 132, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 138, 140, 128-129.



15. *JFK: The CIA, Vietnam and the Plot to Assassinate John F. Kennedy*, Col. L. Fletcher Prouty, (New York: Carol Publishing Group, 1992) pp. 286, 287, 300, 334, 345.
16. *Rome and the War: And Coming Events In Britain*, "Watchman," (London: McBride, Nast & Company, Ltd., 1916) pp. 45, 50, 51.
17. *ParaPolitics/USA*, "The Men Behind the New Counter-Reformation," pp. 34, 35, 36, 37.
18. *National Catholic Reporter*, "Divided Loyalties of a Catholic Diplomat", Peter Hebblethwaite, S.J., (Kansas City, Missouri, September 9, 1994) p. 34.
19. *EIR Special Report: Project Democracy*, Assorted Authors, (Washington, D.C.: Executive Intelligence Review, 1987) p. 323.
20. *National Catholic Reporter*, "Who Are the Knights of Malta?", Martin Lee, (Kansas City, Missouri, October 14, 1983) p. 1.
21. *Contract On America: The Mafia Murder of President John F. Kennedy*, David E. Scheim, (New York: Shapolsky Publishers, Inc., 1988) p. 120.
22. *Secret and Suppressed*, Jim Keith, (Portland, Oregon: Feral House, 1993) p. 88.
23. *The American Pope*, p. 105.

### Chapter 43

1. *The Vatican Against Europe*, Edmond Paris, (London: The Wickliffe Press, 1964; reprinted in 1993 by Ozark Book Publishers, Springfield, Missouri, (417) 883-0438) pp. 142, 143.
2. *John LaFarge and the Limits of Catholic Interracialism, 1911-1963*, David W. Southern, (Baton Rouge, Louisiana: Louisiana State University Press, 1996) pp. 15, 16, 17, 97, 98, 148, 198, 199, 214, 280, 294.
3. *The Speeches Collection: John F. Kennedy*, MPI Home Video, 1988; for resale at HPI Home Video, Dept. 1500, 15825 Robroy Dr., Oak Forrest, Illinois, 60452.
4. *Hoover's FBI: The Inside Story of Hoover's Trusted Lieutenant*, Cartha "Deke" DeLoach, (Washington, D.C.: Regnery Publishing, Inc., 1997) pp. 213-214.
5. *Ultimate Sacrifice: John and Robert Kennedy, the Plan for a Coup in Cuba, and the Murder of JFK*, Lamar Waldron with Thom Hartmann, (New York: Carroll & Graf Publishers, 2006) pp. 1, 2, 3, 5, 7, 10, 17.
6. *Marita: One Woman's Extraordinary Tale of Love and Espionage from Castro to Kennedy*, Marita Lorenz with Ted Schwarz, (New York: Thunder's Mouth Press, 1993) pp. xi, 4-5, 44, 45, 46, 76, 68-69, 91-92, 223, 135, 127, 128, 129, 136, 142.
7. *The Jesuits in History*, Hector Macpherson, (Springfield, Missouri: Ozark Book Publishers, 1997; originally published in Edinburgh, 1914) pp. 108, 109, 110, 111, 112, 113, 114.
8. [www.philipcpffens.com/tina\\_letter.pdf](http://www.philipcpffens.com/tina_letter.pdf), *This Is Not America: The Assassination of President John F. Kennedy*, Philip Coppens, (No City: No Publisher, 1993, 2004) pp. 240, 241, 242-243.
9. *First Hand Knowledge*, Robert D. Morrow, (New York: Shapolsky Publishers, Inc., 1994) pp. ix, x, xi, xii.
10. *Final Judgment: The Missing Link in the JFK Assassination Conspiracy*, Michael Collins Piper, (Washington, D.C., The Center for Historical Review, 1998) pp. 8, 40, 95, 288, 511.
11. *To Eliminate the Opiate*, Marvin S. Antelman, (Jerusalem: Zionist Book Club, 2002) Vol. II of II, pp. 272-273.
12. *Orders To Kill: The Truth Behind the Murder of martin Luther King, Jr.*, William F. Pepper; Forward by Dexter Scott King, (New York: Warner Books with Carroll & Graf Publishers, Inc., 1995) pp. xxvii, xxviii, xxix, 60, 61, 62.
13. *The CIA and the Cult of Intelligence*, Victor Marchetti and John D. Marks, (New York: Dell Publishing Co., 1975) p. 55.
14. *JFK: The CIA, Vietnam and the Plot to Assassinate John F. Kennedy*, Col. L. Fletcher Prouty, (New York: Carol Publishing Group, 1992) p. 154.
15. *Ibid*, p. 264.
16. *Ibid*, p. 257.
17. *First Hand Knowledge*, p. 249.
18. *Called to Serve: Profiles in Conspiracy from John F. Kennedy to George Bush*, Col. James "Bo" Gritz, (Sandy Valley, Nevada: Lazarus Publishing Co., 1991) pp. 511, 512.

## Chapter 44

1. *The Complete Works of Shakespeare*, edited by Hardin Craig and David Bevington, (Glenview, Illinois: Scott, Foresman and Company, 1973) p. 215.
2. *Secret Instructions of the Jesuits*, W. C. Brownlee, (New York: American and Foreign Christian Union, 1857) p. 47.
3. *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, Charles Chiniquy, (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Baker Book House, 1968; originally published in 1886) p. 484.
4. *The Black Pope*, M. F. Cusack, (London: Marshall, Russell & Co., 1896) p. 267.
5. *The Engineer Corps of Hell; Or Rome's Sappers and Miners*, Compiled and translated by Edwin A. Sherman, (San Francisco, California: Private subscription, 1883) p. 23.
6. *The Jesuits in History*, Hector Macpherson, (Springfield, Missouri: Ozark Book Publishers, 1997; originally published in Edinburgh, 1914) p. 115.
7. *The Deadly Deception: Freemasonry Exposed By One of Its Top Leaders*, James D. Shaw & Tom C. McKenney, (Lafayette, Louisiana: Huntington House, Inc., 1988) pp. 75-76.
8. *The History of Protestantism*, James A. Wylie, (London: Cassell, Petter & Galpin, Ltd., 1878) Vol. II of III, Book Fifteenth, pp. 398, 399.
9. *An Inquiry Into the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln*, Emmett McLoughlin, (New York: Lyle Stuart, Inc., 1963) p. 4.
10. *Plausible Denial: Was the CIA Involved in the Assassination of JFK?*, Mark Lane, (New York: Thunder's Mouth Press, 1991) p. 85.
11. *Mortal Error: The Shot that Killed JFK*, Bonar Menninger, (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1992) p. 108.
12. <http://www.maebrussell.com/Mae%20Brussell%20Articles/Nazi%20Connection%20to%20JFK%20Assas.html>, "The Nazi Connection to the JFK Assassination: Evidence of Link Between Nazis Still in Operation After World War II to the Still Unsolved Murder of John F. Kennedy, Mae Brussell, (from the short-lived Larry Flint Publication *The Rebel*, January 1984, pp. 11, 12, of 29.
13. *The Papacy and the Civil Power*, Richard W. Thompson, (New York: Harper & Bros. Pubs., 1876) p. 113.
14. *Legend: The Secret World of Lee Harvey Oswald*, Edward Jay Epstein, (New York: McGraw-Hill Book Company, 1978) pp. 215-216, 222.
15. *"Behold A Pale Horse,"* Milton William Cooper, (Sedona, Arizona: Light Technology Publishing, 1991) pp. 27, 215.
16. <http://community-2.webtv.net/Larry762/fontcolor3300FF/page4.html>, "Did the Limo Driver Shoot JFK?," Larry Jamison, 2003.
17. *There Was A President: Seventy Hours and Thirty Minutes; the Weekend No One Will Ever Forget*, National Broadcasting Company, (New York: Random House, Inc., 1966) p. 22.
18. *Audio Letter #3*, Peter David Beter, (Fort Worth, Texas: Audio Books, Inc., 1976).
19. *Secret Societies and Their Power in the 20<sup>th</sup> Century*, Jan van Helsing, (Zurich, Switzerland: EWERTVERLAG S.L., 1995) pp. 230, 231.
20. *JFK: Breaking the Silence*, Bill Sloan, (Dallas, Texas: Taylor Publishing Co., 1993) pp. 177, 186-187.
21. *The Black Pope*, p. 376.
22. [www.radical.org/ratville/JFK/John Judge/SewerShot.html](http://www.radical.org/ratville/JFK/John%20Judge/SewerShot.html), "Sewer Shot in JFK Assassination," John Judge, Email to "treefrog," 21 May 2001.
23. *Forgive My Grief: A Critical Review of the Warren Commission Report on the Assassination of President John F. Kennedy*, William Penn Jones, Jr., (Midlothian, Texas: Midlothian Mirror, Inc., 1966) Vol. I of IV, p. 40.
24. *Texas In The Morning: The Love Story of Madeleine Brown and President Lyndon Baines Johnson*, Madeleine Duncan Brown, (Baltimore: The Conservatory Press, 1997) pp. 166, 167.
25. *First Hand Knowledge*, Robert D. Morrow, (New York: Shapolsky Publishers, Inc., 1994) pp. 193, 195.
26. *The Brotherhood of the Bell*, Video, (No City: Cinema Center Films, Warner Brothers Pictures, 1970; notice the four "I-H-S" (the "S" being broken in halves thus in an esoteric form) symbols on the floor underneath the Bell during an initiation of a new member at the beginning of the film).
27. *Talks With Mussolini*, Emil Ludwig, (Boston: Little, Brown, and Company, 1933) pp. 156, 157.

28. *Texas In The Morning: The Love Story of Madeleine Brown and President Lyndon Baines Johnson*, pp. 173, 185.
29. *The History of Protestantism*, p. 403.
30. *High Treason 2: The Great Cover-Up: The Assassination of President John F. Kennedy*, Harrison Edward Livingstone, (New York: Carroll & Graf Publishers, Inc., 1992) pp. 91, 103, 104, 110, 111, 112, 172, 173.
31. <http://community-2.webtv.net/Larry762/fontcolor3300FF/page4.html>, "Did the Limo Driver Shoot JFK?," Larry Jamison, 2003.
32. *Battling Wall Street: The Kennedy Presidency*, Donald Gibson, (New York: Sheridan Square Press, 1994) pp. 23, 55, 56, 131, 81, 82.
33. *The Founding Father: The Story of Joseph P. Kennedy*, Richard J. Whalen, (New York: The New American Library of World Literature, Inc., 1964) pp. 485, 486.
34. *Murder in the Vatican*, Avro Manhattan, (Springfield, Missouri: Ozark Book Publishers, 1985) pp. 35, 36, 271.
35. *The "Federal" Reserve Conspiracy and Rockefellers*, Emanuel M. Josephson, (New York: Chedney Press, 1968) p. 241.
36. *On the Trail of the Assassins*, Jim Garrison, (New York: Warner Books, 1991) pp. 100, 323.
37. *The CIA and the Cult of Intelligence*, Victor Marchetti and John D. Marks, (New York: Dell Publishing Co., 1975) p. 41.
38. *On the Trail of the Assassins*, p. 254.
39. *J. Edgar Hoover: The Man and the Secrets*, Curt Gentry, (New York: W.W. Norton & Co., 1991) p. 597.
40. *JFK: The CIA, Vietnam and the Plot to Assassinate John F. Kennedy*, Col. L. Fletcher Prouty, (New York: Carol Publishing Group, 1992) pp. 350, 351.
41. *Final Judgment: The Missing Link in the JFK Assassination Conspiracy*, Michael Collins Piper, (Washington, D.C., The Center for Historical Review, 1998) pp. 59, 66, 67, 68.
42. *The Visions and Prophecies of Zechariah*, David Baron, (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Kregel Publications, 1972; originally published in 1918) pp. 167, 168, 169.
43. *Plausible Denial: Was the CIA Involved in the Assassination of JFK?*, p. 270.
44. *Ibid*, p. 270.
45. *Ibid*, p. 322, front inside cover.
46. *The History of the Reformation of Religion Within the Realm of Scotland*, John Knox, (Carlisle, Pennsylvania: Banner of Truth Trust; originally written in 1559-1571 by Knox; reprinted by C. J. Guthrie, 1898) pp. 270, 278, 330, 347.

## Chapter 45

1. *Secret Instructions of the Jesuits*, W. C. Brownlee, (New York: American and Foreign Christian Union, 1857) p. 45.
2. *Fourteen Years a Jesuit*, Count Paul von Hoensbroech, translated by Alice Zimmern, (New York: Cassell and Company, LTD., 1911) Vol. I of II, p. 413; quoting *Formula Institute*.
3. *Hoover's FBI: The Inside Story of Hoover's Trusted Lieutenant*, Cartha "Deke" DeLoach, (Washington, D.C.: Regnery Publishing, Inc., 1997) p. 153.
4. *The Prophet: Alberto Part Six*, Jack Chick, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1988) p. 32.

## Chapter 46

1. *Secret Instructions of the Jesuits*, W. C. Brownlee, (New York: American and Foreign Christian Union, 1857) p. 59.
2. *The Engineer Corps of Hell; Or Rome's Sappers and Miners*, Compiled and translated by Edwin A. Sherman, (San Francisco, California: Private subscription, 1883) p. 28.
3. *Ibid*, p. 38.
4. *An Inquiry Into the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln*, Emmett McLoughlin, (New York: Lyle Stuart, Inc., 1963) p. 161.
5. *The Jesuit Enigma*, E. Boyd Barrett, (New York: Boni and Liveright, 1927) pp. vi, 59, 79.

6. **Crossfire: The Plot That Killed Kennedy**, Jim Marrs, (New York: Carroll & Graf Pubs., Inc., 1989) pp. Preface i, 16, 17, 275, 277, 587, 588, 580, 581.
7. **Bound by Honor**, Bill Bonanno, (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1999) pp. 299, 300, 301, 303.
8. **JFK, Director's Cut**, Oliver Stone; Director, (Warner Bros., Inc., 1991) Video, 189 minutes, Vol. II of II.
9. **Texas In The Morning: The Love Story of Madeleine Brown and President Lyndon Baines Johnson**, Madeleine Duncan Brown, (Baltimore: The Conservatory Press, 1997) pp. 189-191.
10. **Executive Action**, Video, (National General Pictures, Edward Lewis Production, 1973).
11. **Teddy Bare: The Last of the Kennedy Clan**, Zad Rust, (Belmont, Massachusetts: Western Islands, 1971) pp. ix, x.
12. **Forgive My Grief: A Critical Review of the Warren Commission Report on the Assassination of President John F. Kennedy**, William Penn Jones, Jr., (Midlothian, Texas: Midlothian Mirror, Inc., 1966) Vol. I of IV, pp. 64-65, 160-161, 187-188.
13. **Double Cross: The Explosive Inside Story of the Mobster Who Controlled America**, Sam and Chuck Giancana, (New York: Warner Books, Inc., 1993) pp. 457, 458, 459, 460, 461, 462, 463, 464, 465, 466, 467.
14. **Called to Serve: Profiles in Conspiracy from John F. Kennedy to George Bush**, Col. James "Bo" Gritz, (Sandy Valley, Nevada: Lazarus Publishing Co., 1991) pp. 525, 526, 523.
15. **A Farewell To Justice: Jim Garrison, JFK's Assassination, and the Case That Should Have Changed History**, Joan Mellen, (Washington, D.C.: Potomac Books, Inc., 2005) pp. xvii, xviii, 41, 356, 2, 203, 302, 357, 383-384.
16. **Dr. Mary's Monkey: How the Unsolved Murder of a Doctor, a Secret Laboratory in New Orleans and Cancer-Causing Monkey Viruses are Linked to Lee Harvey Oswald, the JFK Assassination and Emerging Global Epidemics**, Edward T. Haslam and Jim Marrs, (Triune Day, 2006) pp. 144, 145, 154, 156, 157; first published as **Mary, Ferrie & the Monkey Virus: The Story of an Underground Medical Laboratory**, Edward T. Haslam, (Brandenton, Florida: Edward T. Haslam, 1995).
17. <http://www.arcticbeacon.com/1221062.mp3>, Greg Szymanski, "Two Part Interview with NYPD Detective Jim Rothstein Who Nails George H.W. Bush and Frank Sturgis for acting as co-conspirators in the Kennedy Assassination," December 21, 2006, Hours One and Two.
18. **Luce and His Empire**, W. A. Swanberg, (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1972) p. 423.
19. **Ibid**, p. 215.
20. **High Treason**, Robert J. Groden and Harrison Edward Livingstone, (New York: Berkley Books, 1989) p. 217.
21. **Plausible Denial: Was the CIA Involved in the Assassination of JFK?**, Mark Lane, (New York: Thunder's Mouth Press, 1991) p. 43.
22. **Romanism: A Menace to the Nation**, Jeremiah J. Crowley, (Aurora, Missouri: The Menace Publishing Co., 1912) pp. 199, 200.
23. **High Treason**, p. 309.
24. **The Last Investigation**, Gaeton Fonzi, (New York: Thunder's Mouth Press, 1993) p. 184.
25. **High Treason**, p. 362.
26. **The Last Investigation**, pp. 53, 55, 59.
27. **JFK: The Dead Witnesses**, Craig Roberts and John Armstrong, (Tulsa, Oklahoma: Consolidated Press, 1995) p. iii.
28. **First Hand Knowledge**, Robert D. Morrow, (New York: Shapolsky Publishers, Inc., 1994) pp. 300, 301.
29. **JFK, Director's Cut**, Vol. I of II.
30. **The Spiritual Exercises of St. Ignatius**, Ignatius Loyola, translated by Anthony Mottola, (New York: Doubleday Publishers, 1989; originally written in 1523) pp. 139, 141.

## **Chapter 47**

1. **Peveril of the Peak**, Sir Walter Scott, (New York: Houghton Mifflin Co., 1913; originally published in 1820) Vol. I of II, pp. 159, 160.
2. **Ivanhoe: A Romance**, Sir Walter Scott, (Boston: D.C. Heath & Co. Publishers, 1905; originally published in 1829) p. 407, 412-413.

3. *JFK: Conspiracy of Silence*, Charles A. Crenshaw, (New York: Penguin Books USA, Inc., 1992) p. 106.
4. *Ford: The Men and the Machine*, Robert Lacy, (New York: Ballantine Books, 1986) p. 531.
5. *Iacocca: An Autobiography*, Lee Iacocca, (New York: Bantam Books, 1984) p. 8.
6. *Ibid*, p. 116.
7. *Ford: The Men and the Machine*, p. 538.
8. *Iacocca: An Autobiography*, pp. 218, 225.
9. *National Catholic Reporter*, "Who Are the Knights of Malta?", Martin Lee, (Kansas City, Missouri, October 14, 1983) p. 1.
10. *Ivanhoe; A Romance*, p. 406.

## Chapter 48

1. *The Crisis: Or, The Enemies of America Unmasked*, J. Wayne Laurens, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: G. D. Miller, 1855) p. 13.
2. *The Black Pope*, M. F. Cusack, (London: Marshall, Russell & Co., 1896) p. 348.
3. *Romanism: A Menace to the Nation*, Jeremiah J. Crowley, (Aurora, Missouri: The Menace Publishing Co., 1912) p. 196.
4. *The Jesuit Enigma*, E. Boyd Barrett, (New York: Boni and Liveright, 1927) p. 218, 219.
5. *The Black Pope*, p. 356.
6. *The Jesuits: Their History and Crimes*, Multiple Contributors, (London: Protestant Truth Society, 1918) p. 30.
7. *National Catholic Reporter*, "McSorley and famous friend go way back; Jesuit sees Clinton as able president", Arthur Jones, (Kansas City, Missouri, July 28, 1995) p. 3.
8. *Trance: Formation of America*, Cathy O'Brien with Mark Phillips, (Las Vegas, Nevada: Reality Marketing, Inc., 1995, (800) 656-3597) pp. 184, 152, 107, 93.
9. **President William Clinton**, (CBS, 1997) National Television Interview.
10. *The Provincial Letters*, Blaise Pascal, (New York: Robert Carter & Brothers, 1850) p. 199.
11. *ParaPolitics/USA*, "The Men Behind the New Counter-Reformation," Kevin Koogan, (No city: No Publisher, March 1982) pp. 31, 32; obtained from Lloyd Miller, Research Director, A-albionic Research, P.O. Box 20273, Ferndale, Michigan, 48220-0273, <http://a-albionic.com/prjframe.html>
12. "Evil One-World Government Agents are Claiming To Be United States Agents," *Alamo Christian Ministries World Newsletter*, Tony Alamo, (Alma, Arkansas: Holy Alamo Christian Church, 2003), pp. 1-3, 15.
13. *None Dare Call It Conspiracy*, Gary Allen, (Rossmoor, California; Concord Press, 1971) pp. 98, 99, 100, 101, 102, 104.
14. *Year of the Rat: How Bill Clinton and Al Gore Compromised U.S. Security for Chinese Cash*, Edward Timperlake and William C. Triplett II, (Washington, D.C.: Regnery Pub., Inc., 1998) pp. 263, 264, 265, 266.
15. *The China Threat: How the People's Republic Targets America*, Bill Gertz, (Washington, D.C.: Regnery Publishing, Inc., 2000) pp. xi, 8, 89, 167, 199.
16. *Air Force One*, Video, Wolfgang Peterson, Columbia Pictures, 1997.
17. *Through the Eyes of the Enemy: Russia's Highest Ranking Military Defector Reveals Why Russia is More Dangerous Than Ever*, Stanislav Lunev with Ira Winkler, (Washington, D.C.: Regnery Publishing, Inc., 1998) pp. 11, 12, 13, 18, 20, 21, 24, 25, 32.
18. *Spider's Web: The Secret History of How the White House Illegally Armed Iraq*, Alan Friedman, (New York: Bantam Books, 1993) p. xvii.
19. *Occult Theocracy*, Lady Queenborough, (South Pasadena, California: Emissary Publications, 1980; originally published in 1933) pp. 241, 242.
20. **Source withheld**, Private Letter to Eric Jon Phelps, "Jesuits in Iraq," February 28, 2002.
21. *The Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion*, translated by Victor E. Marsden, (Los Angeles, California: Christian Nationalist Crusade, date unknown; originally published in 1905) p. 49.
22. *Vatican, U.S.A.*, Nino Lo Bello, (New York: Trident Press, 1972) pp. 48, 51.

23. *The Vatican Billions*, Avro Manhattan, (Chino, California: Chick Publications, 1983) p. 227.
24. *Called to Serve: Profiles in Conspiracy from John F. Kennedy to George Bush*, Col. James "Bo" Gritz, (Sandy Valley, Nevada: Lazarus Publishing Co., 1991) unnumbered first page.
25. *Trance: Formation of America*, p. 2.
26. *The Crimes of a President: New Revelations on Conspiracy & Cover-up in the Bush & Reagan Administrations*, Joel Bainerman, (New York: S.P.I. Books/Shapolsky Publishers, 1992) pp. 317, 319.

## Chapter 49

1. *The Great Apostacy, Identical With Papal Rome; An Exposition of the Mystery of Iniquity, and the Marks and Doom of Antichrist*, Joseph F. Berg, (Philadelphia: J. B. Lippincott & Co., Baker, Printer; 1842) pp. 139-141, 167.
2. *The Engineer Corps of Hell; Or Rome's Sappers and Miners*, Compiled and translated by Edwin A. Sherman, (San Francisco, California: Private subscription, 1883) p. 34.
3. *The Nazi Doctors: Medical Killing and the Psychology of Genocide*, Robert Jay Lifton, (No city: BasicBooks, 1986) pp. 337-350.
4. *Natural Cures "They" Don't Want You to Know About*, Kevin Trudeau, (Elk Grove Village, Illinois: Alliance Publishing Group, Inc., 2004) pp. 53-55.
5. *Dr. Mary's Monkey: How the Unsolved Murder of a Doctor, a Secret Laboratory in New Orleans and Cancer-Causing Monkey Viruses are Linked to Lee Harvey Oswald, the JFK Assassination and Emerging Global Epidemics*, Edward T. Haslam and Jim Marrs, (Triune Day, 2006) pp. 154, 158, 148; first published as *Mary, Ferrie & the Monkey Virus: The Story of an Underground Medical Laboratory*, Edward T. Haslam, (Brandenton, Florida: Edward T. Haslam, 1995).
6. *Hoover's FBI: The Inside Story of Hoover's Trusted Lieutenant*, Cartha "Deke" DeLoach, (Washington, D.C.: Regnery Pub., Inc., 1997) pp. 153, 156-157.
7. *Popery, Puseyism and Jesuitism*, Luigi Desanctis, (London: D. Catt, 1905; translated by Maria Betts from the original Italian edition published as *Roma Papale* in 1865; first published in English, 1852) p. 138.
8. *I Dare You*, William H. Danforth, (St. Louis, Missouri: American Youth Foundation, 1991; originally published in 1931) p. 27.
9. *Casey: From the OSS to the CIA*, Joseph E. Persico, (New York: Penguin Books, 1990) p. 21, 29, 26, 31.
10. *Trance: Formation of America*, Cathy O'Brien with Mark Phillips, (Las Vegas, Nevada: Reality Marketing, Inc., 1995, (800) 656-3597) p. 187.
11. *Emerging Viruses: AIDS and Ebola*, Leonard G. Horowitz, (Rockport, Massachusetts: Tetrahedron Publishing Group, 1997) p. 501.
12. *Naked Empress; Or, The Great Medical Fraud*, Hans Ruesch, (No city, Switzerland: CIVIS Publications, 1992) pp. 11, 30.
13. *Here's How Health Works*, Edward Elmer Keeler, (Syracuse, New York: Good Health Clinic Publishing Co., 1912) pp. 31, 32.
14. *Second Opinion*, Dr. William Campbell Douglas, (Atlanta, Georgia: Second Opinion Publishing, 1999) Vol. IX, No. 5, pp. 4, 5.
15. *Anti-Aging Manual*, Joseph B. Marion, (South Woodstock, Connecticut: Information Pioneers, 1996) p. 1055.
16. *The Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion*, translated by Victor E. Marsden, (Los Angeles, California: Christian Nationalist Crusade, date unknown; originally published in 1905) p. 41.
17. *Emerging Viruses: AIDS and Ebola*, p. 497.
18. *Into the Light*, William Campbell Douglas, (Atlanta, Georgia: Second Opinion Publishing, 1997), no page.
19. *Healing Photons: The Science and Art of Blood Irradiation Therapy*, Kenneth J. Dillon, (Washington, D.C.: Scientia Press, 1998).
20. *Diabetes Mellitus: The Secret of Prevention and Reversal*, William H. Philpott, (Holmen, Wisconsin: LGS Trust, 1998) pp. 16, 18, 19.
21. *Confessions of a Medical Heretic*, Robert Mendelsohn, (New York: Warner Books, 1979) pp. 11, 13, 14, 117, 221, 58, 248, 225.
22. *Emerging Viruses: AIDS and Ebola*, pp. 336, 337, 339, 529.



23. *Annual Report: Council on Foreign Relations*, (New York: The Harold Pratt House, 1993-1994) pp. 137, 138.
24. *Ibid*, p. 60.
25. *Emerging Viruses: AIDS and Ebola*, p. 530.
26. *The Suppressed Truth About the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln*, Burke McCarty, (Merrimac, Massachusetts: Destiny Publishers, 1973; originally published in 1924) p. 16.

## Chapter 50

1. *History of the Jesuits: Their Origin, Progress, Doctrines, and Designs*, G. B. Nicolini of Rome, (London: Henry G. Bohn, 1889) pp. 78, 79.
2. *The History of the Jesuits in England 1580-1773*, (Roman Catholic Priest) Ethelred L. Taunton, (London: Methuen & Co., 1901) pp. 351, 352.
3. *Peveril of the Peak*, Sir Walter Scott, (New York: Houghton Mifflin Co., 1913; originally published in 1820) Vol. II of II, p. 41.
4. *The Jesuit Enigma*, E. Boyd Barrett, (New York: Boni and Liveright, 1927) p. 23, 32, 21-22, 61.
5. *The Engineer Corps of Hell; Or Rome's Sappers and Miners*, Compiled and translated by Edwin A. Sherman, (San Francisco, California: Private subscription, 1883) p. 112.
6. *Fourteen Years a Jesuit*, Count Paul von Hoensbroech, translated by Alice Zimmern, (New York: Cassell and Company, LTD., 1911) Vol. II of II, p. 430.
7. *The Authorized King James Bible Defended*, Chester A. Murray, (Cassville, Maryland: Litho Printers, 1983) p. 54.
8. *Behind the Dictators*, Leo H. Lehmann, (New York: Agora Publishing Co., 1944) p. 28.
9. *Plain Talk About the Romanism of Today*, Hugh Montgomery, (Boston: American Citizen Co., 1894) pp. 186-189.
10. *The American Sentinel*, Lee Bellinger, editor, (Washington, D.C., American Lantern Press, Inc., 2004) issue #684, March edition, pp. 1-3; issue #687 June edition, p. 5.
11. *The Omega Files: Secret Nazi UFO Bases Revealed!*, "Brandon," (New Brunswick, New Jersey: Global Communications, 2000; [www.webufo.net](http://www.webufo.net)) "The Coming Chaos," pp. 1-2; "Final Invasion Plans," p. 2, 3, 4; "Prologue," p. 1.
12. *Endgame: The Blueprint for the Victory in the War on Terror*, Thomas McInerney and Paul Valley, (Washington, D.C.: Regnery Publishing, Inc., 2004) pp. 48, 51, 52.
13. *Showdown With Nuclear Iran: Radical Islam's Messianic Mission to Destroy Israel and Cripple the United States*, Michael D. Evans with Jerome R. Corsi, (Nashville, Tennessee: Nelson Current, 2006) pp. 27, 107, 109, 173.
14. *Year of the Rat: How Bill Clinton and Al Gore Compromised U.S. Security for Chinese Cash*, Edward Timperlake and William C. Triplett II, (Washington, D.C.: Regnery Publishing Inc., 2000) pp. ix, 269, 196, 265, 263.
15. *The Service: The Memoirs of General Reinhard Gehlen*, Reinhard Gehlen, (New York: World Publishing Co., 1972) p. 369.
16. *The Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion*, translated by Victor E. Marsden, (Los Angeles, California: Christian Nationalist Crusade, date unknown; originally published in 1905) p. 70.
17. *Ibid*, p. 39.
18. *Days of Our Years*, Pierre van Paassen, (New York: Hillman-Curl, Inc., 1939) p. 465.
19. *The Secret War Against the Jews*, John Loftus and Mark Aarons, (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1994) pp. 193, 194.
20. *Secret Instructions of the Jesuits*, W. C. Brownlee, (New York: American and Foreign Christian Union, 1857) p. 139.
21. *The Jesuit Enigma*, p. 43.
22. *The Black Pope*, M. F. Cusack, (London: Marshall, Russell & Co., 1896) p. 50.
23. *Rome Stoops To Conquer*, E. Boyd Barrett, (New York: Julian Messner, Inc., 1935) pp. 180-181, 187-189.

## Conclusion

1. *The Works of Augustus Toplady*, Augustus Toplady, (Harrisonburg, Virginia: Sprinkle Publications, 1987; originally published in 1794) p. 55.
2. *Peveril of the Peak*, Sir Walter Scott, (New York: Houghton Mifflin Co., 1913; originally published in 1820) Vol. I of II, p. 139.
3. *Secret Instructions of the Jesuits*, W. C. Brownlee, (New York: American and Foreign Christian Union, 1857) pp. 39, 143.
4. *History of the Jesuits: Their Origin, Progress, Doctrines, and Designs*, G. B. Nicolini of Rome, (London: Henry G. Bohn, 1889) p. 58.
5. *Our Authorized Bible Vindicated*, Benjamin G. Wilkinson, (Tacoma Park, Washington, D.C.: Publisher not named, 1930; reprinted by D. A. Waite, (Collingswood, New Jersey: The Bible For Today, 1984) pp. 59-60.
6. *The Papacy and the Civil Power*, Richard W. Thompson, (New York: Harper & Bros. Publishers, 1876) pp. 114, 115, 116.
7. *Swarms of Locusts: The Jesuit Attack On the Faith*, Michael Bunker, (New York: Writers Club Press, 2002) pp. 13-14.
8. *The Complete Works of Shakespeare*, edited by Hardin Craig and David Bevington, (Glenview, Illinois: Scott, Foresman and Company, 1973) p. 775.
9. *Westminster Confession of Faith, the Larger and Shorter Catechisms*, authored by the Church of Scotland, (Ross-shire, Scotland: Free Presbyterian Publications, 1983; originally published in 1658) pp. 358, 366, 367, 360.
10. *The History of the Reformation of Religion Within the Realm of Scotland*, John Knox, (Carlisle, Pennsylvania: Banner of Truth Trust; originally written in 1559-1571 by Knox; reprinted by C. J. Guthrie, 1898) p. 270.
11. *Crown Against Concubine*, N. H. Merton, (Exeter, England: Coverdale Press, 1994) pp. 38-40.
12. *Ethics*, Dietrich Bonhoeffer, (New York: Macmillan Publishing Co., 1975) p. 112.
13. *Quaint Sayings and Doings Concerning Luther*, John D. Morris, (Philadelphia: Lindsay & Blakiston, 1859) p. 63.
14. *E. M. Bounds on Prayer*, E. M. Bounds, (New Kensington, Pennsylvania: Whitaker House, 1997; originally published in 1900) p. 29.
15. *Battling Wall Street: The Kennedy Presidency*, Donald Gibson, (New York: Sheridan Square Press, 1994) p. v.
16. *The True Republican*, Jonathan French, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: J.B. Smith & Co., 1857) pp. 20, 22, 24, 25-26, 27, 30, 31.

## End of Sources



A quote was recently pointed out to the author that was deemed important enough to place in the work a few days before going to press. The narration provides the solution for the removal of America's CFR/Jesuit Senate now ruling the Company's "Holy Roman" Fourteenth Amendment American Empire.

### "A SENATE OF JESUITS"

"When Sigismond, king of Sweden, was elected king of Poland, he made a treaty with the states of Sweden, by which he obliged himself to pass every fifth year in that kingdom. By his wars with the Ottoman court, with Muscovy, and Tartary, compelled to remain in Poland to encounter these powerful enemies, during fifteen years he failed in accomplishing his promise. To remedy this in some shape, **by the advice of the Jesuits, who had gained an ascendancy over him, he created a senate to reside at Stockholm, composed of forty chosen Jesuits. He presented them with letters-patent, and invested them with the royal authority.**

While this **senate of Jesuits** was at Dantizic, waiting for a fair wind to set sail for Stockholm, he published an edict, that the Swedes should receive them as his own royal person [*as are the Jesuits in the US today*]. A public council was immediately held. Charles, the uncle of Sigismond, the prelates, and the lords, resolved to prepare for them a splendid and magnificent entry. But in a private council, they came to very contrary resolutions: for the prince said, he could not bear that a **senate of priests** should command, in preference to all the princes and lords, natives of the country. All the others agreed with him in rejecting this holy senate. The archbishop rose, and said, '**Since Sigismond has disdained to be our king, we also must not acknowledge him as such; and from this moment we should no longer consider ourselves as his subjects. His authority is *in suspenso*, because he has bestowed it on the Jesuits who form this senate. The people have not yet acknowledged them. In this interval of resignation on the one side, and assumption on the other, I absolve you all of the fidelity the king may claim from you as his Swedish subjects.**' [*This, dear truth-seeker, is the Calvinist response to Jesuit tyranny!*] The prince of Bithynia addressing himself to Prince Charles, uncle of the king, said, '**I owe no other king than you; and I believe you are now obliged to receive us as your affectionate subjects, and to assist us to hunt these vermin from the state.**' All the others joined him, and acknowledged Charles as their lawful monarch.

Having resolved to keep their declaration for some time secret [*ah, a most important tactic, dear truth-seeker!*], they deliberated in what manner they were to receive and to precede this senate in their entry into the harbour, who were now on board a great galleon, which had anchored two leagues from Stockholm, that they might enter more magnificently in the night, when the fire-works they had prepared would appear to the greatest

advantage. About the time of their reception, Prince Charles, accompanied by twenty-five or thirty vessels, appeared before this senate. Wheeling about and forming a caracol [*semicircle*] of ships, they discharged a volley, and emptied all their cannon on the galleon bearing this senate, which had its sides pierced through with the balls. **The galleon immediately filled with water and sunk, without one of the unfortunate Jesuits being assisted: on the contrary, their assailants cried to them that this was the time to perform some miracle, such as they were accustomed to do in India and Japan; and if they chose, they could walk on the waters!** [*Don't you just love this history, dear truth-seeker!*]

The report of the cannon, and the smoke which the powder occasioned, prevented either the cries or the submersion of the holy fathers from being observed: and as if they were conducting the senate to the town, Charles entered triumphantly; went into the church, where they sung *Te Deum*; and to conclude the night, he partook of the entertainment which had been prepared for this ill-fated senate.

The Jesuits of the city of Stockholm having come, about midnight, to pay their respects to the Fathers, perceived their loss. They directly posted up *placards* of excommunication against Charles and his adherents, who had caused the senate of Jesuits to perish. They urged the people to rebel; **but they were soon expelled [from] the city**, and Charles made a public profession of [*anti-Jesuit*] Lutheranism.

Sigismund, King of Poland, began a war with Charles in 1604, which lasted two years. Disturbed by the invasions of the Tartars, the Muscovites, and the Cossacks, a truce was concluded; but Sigismund lost both his crowns, by his bigoted attachment to Roman Catholicism [**the risen Son of God intervening for Charles**].”

*Curiosities of Literature*, Isaac Disraeli, (Boston: William Veazie, 62 and 64 Cornhill, 1858) pp. 313-316.

**The deeds of the Jesuits in subjugating Protestant nations is based on the “works salvation” doctrines of historic Romanism perfected by the Jesuit Order. The following quote recites once again the purpose of Jesuitism here in historic White Celtic-Anglo-Saxon Protestant and Baptist-Calvinist North America.**

**“Let it be remembered that the great boast of Romanism is that her church never changes; that its action in the future will be the same that it has been in the past; that Protestants have no right in the eye of the church. . . . According to the following oath, Protestants have no rights that Catholic Irish are bound to respect [evidenced by the murderous deeds of the Irish Republican Army (IRA) having worked with the SS during WWII and the KGB during the Cold War, and which IRA, according to ex-Jesuit Alberto Rivera, is led by Jesuits under Extreme Oath]:**

‘I swear by **Almighty God**, by all in heaven and earth, by the **holy prayer-book** of my holy church [*with which prayer-book Lyndon Johnson was sworn in as the President of the United States on “Air Force One” after he participated in the murder of Roman Catholic President Kennedy*], by the blessed **Virgin Mary, mother of God**, by her sorrow and grief at the foot of the cross, by her tears and wailings, by the holy apostles **Saint Peter** and **Saint Paul**, by the glorious apostle of Ireland—**St. Patrick**—[*who was not a Romanist*] by the **blessed and adorable host**, by the blessed and holy church in all ages, by our holy and national martyrs, to fight upon Irish soil for the independence of Ireland—to fight until I die, wading to the knee in the red gore of the **Sassenach (Protestant) for the glorious cause of nationality**; to fight until not a single vestige, track, or footstep is left to tell that the holy soil of Ireland was ever trodden by the **Sassenach tyrants and murderers**; and, moreover, when the **Protestant robbers and brutes in Ireland shall be murdered and driven into the sea**, like the swine our Lord Jesus Christ caused to be drowned, **then we shall embark for and take England** [*as attempted by the Jesuits in 1588 via their Spanish Armada*], and root out every vestige of the accursed blood of the **heretic adulterer, Henry VIII**, and possess ourselves of the treasures of the **beast** who has so long kept our island of saints—old Ireland—in the chains of bondage, and driven us from her shores, exiles, into foreign lands [*these oath-bound, hypocritical “Black Irish” immigrating to Protestant America to enjoy Protestant liberty secured by the Baptist-Calvinist Bill of Rights*].

### I WILL WADE IN THE BLOOD

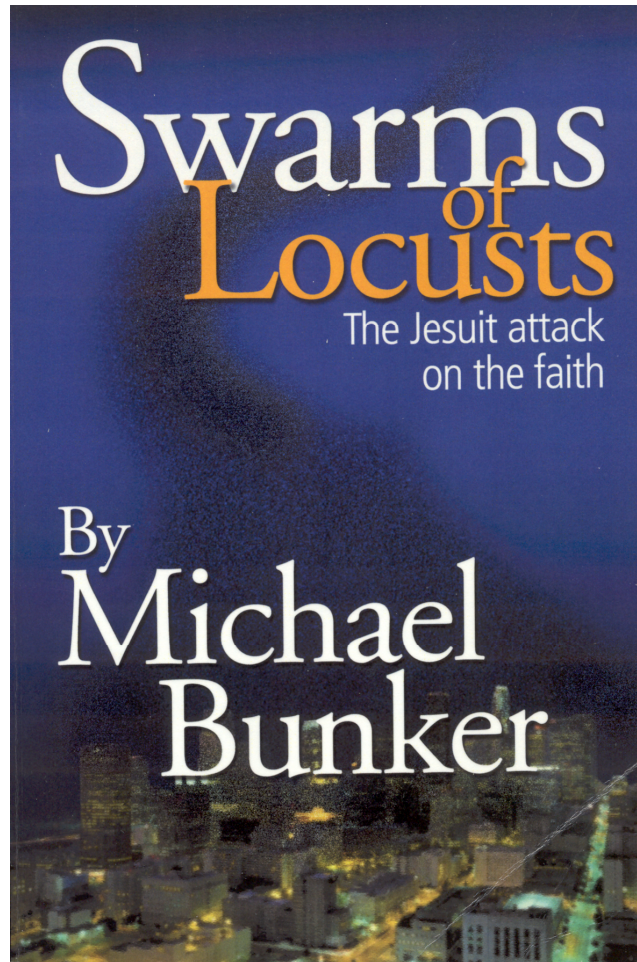
of **Orangemen** and **heretics** (Protestants) who do not join us and become of ourselves. Scotland, too, having given aid and succor to the beast, we shall leave her in her gore. **We shall not give up until we have restored our holy faith all over the British Isles.** To all of this I sincerely and conscientiously swear, with my eyes blindfolded [*as though this initiate is in a Masonic Lodge*], not knowing who to me administers this oath.’

The *Catholic Review* says, ‘**Protestantism of every form has not and never can have any right where Catholicity is triumphant** [*just like Islam*]; **that therefore we lose the breath we expend in declaiming against bigotry and intolerance, and in favor of religious liberty or the right of any man to be of any religion as best pleases him.**’

In 1864 the pope issued his encyclical condemning all the liberties and the progress of the nineteenth century, and adding that civil rulers ought to enforce the decrees of the church. The Archbishop of Cincinnati spoke of it thus: ‘We receive it implicitly. We bow to it reverently. We embrace it cordially. We hail it gratefully. **To us it is the voice of God in Sinai.**’ And this is the tolerant Romanism of America?”

*Plain Talk About the Romanism of To-Day*, Hugh Montgomery, (Boston: American Citizen Company, 1894) pp. 192, 193, 194.

The author of *Vatican Assassins: "Wounded In The House Of My Friends"* highly recommends Calvinist Michael Bunker's timely, historical and scriptural work published in 2002:

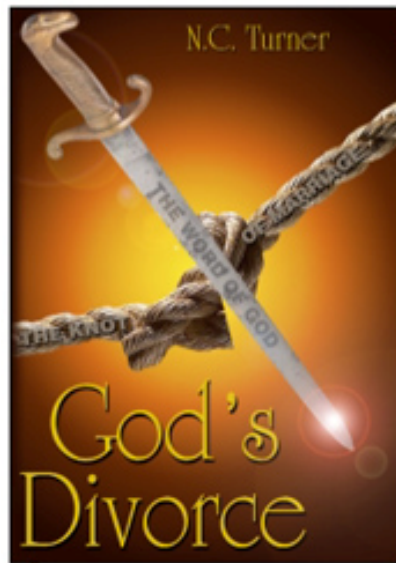


***Swarms of Locusts: The Jesuit Attack on the Faith***

“Even though the Jesuits exude vast influence and control in the areas of theology, education, recorded history and current media, it is still perplexing that virtually no literature exists exposing the Jesuit’s influence on mainline Protestantism. This is what makes *Swarms of Locusts* such a necessary book. In this work, the author uncovers forgotten history regarding the cooperative salvation theology of the Jesuits. The author then builds upon these historical truths and clearly exposes how the Jesuits (and their cooperative redemption theology) have permeated all denominations of the Protestant Church. From Cain to Charles [G.] Finney, this book historically connects-the-dots and undeniably proves that modern Protestantism has abandoned the Doctrines of Grace and embraced the doctrines of cooperative salvation.”

Michael Bunker, P.O. Box 216, Smyer, TX 79367  
[www.michaelbunker.com](http://www.michaelbunker.com) ; [mbunker@michaelbunker.com](mailto:mbunker@michaelbunker.com)

The author also highly recommends his pastor's most timely work, *God's Divorce*. If a man cannot divorce his wife for Scriptural reasons, neither can he divorce his government. Both rights have been maxims of White Anglo-Saxon Protestant and Baptist-Calvinist Western Civilization during its Modern Era.



*God's Divorce*

- Does the Bible teach that divorce is sin?
- Did Jesus ever recognize the legitimacy of divorce when he was on the earth?
- Does God command a spouse to remain in a marriage where he or she is subjected to physical or mental abuse?
- Is it true that if I am divorced and remarried, I am living in adultery?
- What did the Christians of previous generations teach and practice concerning divorce?

These and many similar questions are answered from the Bible in *God's Divorce*. The author demonstrates the true Christian teaching of divorce from the Bible in a manner that can be understood by anyone willing to believe the Scriptures, and provides historical documentation of what the Baptists, Puritans, Protestants, and Catholics have taught and practiced concerning divorce. The truths of Scripture are placed in the context of history and individual experience, magnifying the holiness and righteousness of God by proclaiming the justice of his law of divorce.

Orders: \$16.00 postpaid media mail shipping in continental U.S.

International orders worldwide, please e-mail for shipping quotes.

Money orders or checks payable in US funds to:

Nelson Turner, P.O. Box 257, PA 17028.

Paypal payment of \$17.00 each may be made to e-mail address [drogheda@comcast.net](mailto:drogheda@comcast.net). Please make sure your correct and full mailing address is on the payment in the notation.

You may contact the author at the same e-mail address for case lots, and discount on quantities over 20 for dealers. Order Online At:  
biblo.com and E-Bay store historybookville.

## **Appendix IV**

### **General Index Pending**

#### **Thirteen Rare Books: Anti-Jesuit Suppressed Documents on CD-ROM**

##### **A Gift from the Author and Publisher Including:**

1. **The History of Romanism**, John Dowling, (New York: Edward Walker, 1845).
2. **History of the Jesuits: Their Origin, Progress, Doctrines and Designs**, G. B. Nicolini, (London: George Bell and Sons, 1889).
3. **Popery, Puseyism and Jesuitism**, Luigi Desanctis, (London: D. Catt, 1903; translated by Maria Betts from the original Italian edition published as *Roma Papale* in 1865; first published in a series of letters in English, 1852).
4. **The Engineer Corps of Hell; Or, Rome's Sappers and Miners. Containing the Tactics of the "Militia of the Pope," Or the Secret Manuel of the Jesuits, and Other Matter Intensely Interesting, Especially to the Freemason and Lovers of Civil and Religious Liberty, Whithersoever Dispersed Throughout the Globe**, (Introduction Only), Edwin A. Sherman, (San Francisco: Private Subscription, 1883).
5. **Secret Instructions of the Jesuits**, W. C. Brownlee, (New York: American and Foreign Christian Union, 1857).
6. **The Black Pope**, M. F. Cusack, (London: Marshall, Russell & Co., 1896).
7. **The Jesuits: A Complete History of Their Open and Secret Proceedings From the Foundation of the Order to the Present Time (1536-1872)**, Theodor Griesinger, (London: W. H. Allen & Co., 1903).
8. **The Footprints of the Jesuits**, Richard W. Thompson, (New York: Hunt & Eaton, 1894).
9. **The Awful Disclosures of Maria Monk**, Maria Monk, (Philadelphia: E. B. Peterson, 1836).
10. **The Thrilling Mysteries of a Convent Revealed**, Author Unknown, (Philadelphia: T. B. Peterson, 1800s, precise date unknown).
11. **The Jesuit Conspiracy: The Secret Plan of the Order**, Abate Leone, (London: Chapman and Hall, 1848).
12. **The Crisis: Or, The Enemies of America Unmasked**, J. Wayne Laurens, (Philadelphia: G. D. Miller, 1855).
13. **Romanism As a World Power**, Luther S. Kauffman, (Philadelphia: True American Publishing Co., 1922).

The author also **HIGHLY RECOMMENDS** this extraordinary and most fantastic CD-ROM made available by Emmett F. Fields, titled *The Jesuits*. It contains **TWENTY** anti-Jesuit rare books, which, if purchased separately, would cost in excess of 1500 Federal Reserve Notes (alias "US dollars"). It took the author many years to discover these titles and raise the funds in order to obtain these priceless reference works. This absolute necessity to your library may be ordered from: Bank of Wisdom, P.O. Box 926, Louisville, KY, 40201. The CD's perceptive and candid introduction by Emmett F. Fields and its incomparable book list is below and is as follows:

THE JESUITS • CD-ROM #12

## The Jesuits

It is amazing that an international organization of regimented priests, with allegiance to no nation, and a notorious history of political intrigue and corruption, is able – under the guise of religion – to freely associate, advise, influence and infiltrate the governments of the world. Knowing the history of the Jesuits; their methods, political morals and stated purpose, makes us aware of the danger we are in. It explains the corruption of the clearly stated intentions of the U. S. Constitution, and the loss of our civil liberties; it explains international terrorism and the wars, always along the lines of dead religions.


America has a moral obligation to the world, to our friends and to our enemies – and our enemies to us – to investigate, expose, neutralize and render politically null, all secret societies, religious or not, that have international connections and sectarian political ambitions. It is only after these "friendly" enemies have been neutralized that we can hope to find peace and understanding in the world.

Emmett F. Fields  
Bank of Wisdom, LLC


THE JESUITS • CD-ROM #12

*History of the Jesuits, 3 Volumes*, by Andrew Steinmetz  
*Provincial Letters: Moral Teachings of the Jesuit Fathers Opposed to the Church of Rome and Latin Vulgate* by Blaise Pascal  
*The Jesuits, A Complete History of Their Open and Secret Proceedings From the Foundation of the Order to the Present Time* by Theodor Griesinger  
*Fourteen Years a Jesuit, 2 Volumes*, by Count Paul Von Hoensbroech  
*History of the Jesuits: Their Origin, Progress, Doctrines and Designs* by G. B. Nicolini  
*The Doctrine of the Jesuits* by Paul Bert  
*The History of the Jesuits in England, 1580 to 1773* by Ethelred L. Taunton  
*A Candid History of the Jesuits* by Joseph McCabe  
*The Jesuits in Great Britain, An Historical Inquiry into Their Political Influence* by Walter Walsh  
*The Jesuits, An Historical Sketch* by E. W. Grinfield  
*Treason and Plot - Struggles for Catholic Supremacy in the Last Years of Queen Elizabeth* by Martin S. A. Hume  
*The Programme of the Jesuits* by W. Blair Neatby  
*The Footprints of the Jesuits* by R. W. Thompson  
*Secret Instructions of the Society of Jesus (two versions)*  
*The Answer of Ernst Haeckel to the Falsehoods of the Jesuits*  
*The Jesuits in History* by Hector Macpherson  
*The Secret Plan* by the Abbate Leone  
*The Jesuits* by Dr. Otto Henne Rhyn  
*The Jesuits in North America in the Seventeenth Century* by Francis Parkman  
*Jesuitism* by Thomas Carlile  
*A Glimpse of the Great Secret Society*

www.bankofwisdom.com



ISBN 1-929708-11-4



9 781929 708116

Design by Anne M. Richardson

Bank of Wisdom  
P.O. Box 926  
Louisville, KY 40201  
USA

### **The Jesuits: CD-ROM #12**

**Bank of Wisdom  
P.O. Box 926  
Louisville, Kentucky  
40201 USA**



Appendix V

53

THE HISTORY  
OF  
PROTESTANTISM.

BY THE  
REV. J. A. WYLIE, LL.D.,

*Author of "The Papacy," "Daybreak in Spain," &c.*

ILLUSTRATED.

---

"PROTESTANTISM, THE SACRED CAUSE OF GOD'S LIGHT AND TRUTH AGAINST THE DEVIL'S FALSITY AND DARKNESS."—*Carlyle*.

---

VOLUME II.

CASSELL PETTER & GALPIN:

LONDON, PARIS & NEW YORK.

5279 new



## Book Fifteenth.

## THE JESUITS.

## CHAPTER I.

## IGNATIUS LOYOLA.

Rome's New Army—Ignatius Loyola—His Birth—His Wars—He is Wounded—Betakes him to the Legends of the Saints—His Fanaticism Kindled—The Knight-Errant of Mary—The Cave at Manresa—His Mortifications—Comparison between Luther and Ignatius Loyola—An Awakening of the Conscience in both—Luther turns to the Bible, Loyola to Visions—His Revelations.

PROTESTANTISM had marshalled its spiritual forces a second time, and placing itself at the heart of Christendom—at a point where three great empires met—it was labouring with redoubled vigour to propagate itself on all sides. It was expelling from the air of the world that ancient superstition, born of Paganism and Judaism, which, like an opaque veil, had darkened the human mind: a new light was breaking on the eyes and a new life stirring in the souls of men: schools of learning, pure Churches, and free nations were springing up in different parts of Europe; while hundreds of thousands of disciples were ready, by their holy lives or heroic deaths, to serve that great cause which, having broken their ancient fetters, had made them the heirs of a new liberty and the citizens of a new world. It was clear that if let alone, for only a few years, Protestantism would achieve a victory so complete that it would be vain for any opposing power to think of renewing the contest. If that power which was seated in Geneva was to be withstood, and the tide of victory which was bearing it to dominion rolled back, there must be no longer delay in the measures necessary for achieving such a result.

It was further clear that armies would never effect the overthrow of Protestantism. The serried strength of Popish Europe had been put forth to crush it, but all in vain: Protestantism had risen only the stronger from the blows which, it was hoped, would overwhelm it. It was plain that other weapons must be forged, and other armies mustered, than those which Charles and Francis had been accustomed to lead into the field. It was now that the Jesuit corps was embodied. And it must be confessed that these new soldiers did more than all the armies of France and Spain to stem the tide of Protestant success, and bind victory once more to the banners of Rome.

We have seen Protestantism renew its energies: Rome, too, will show what she is capable of doing.

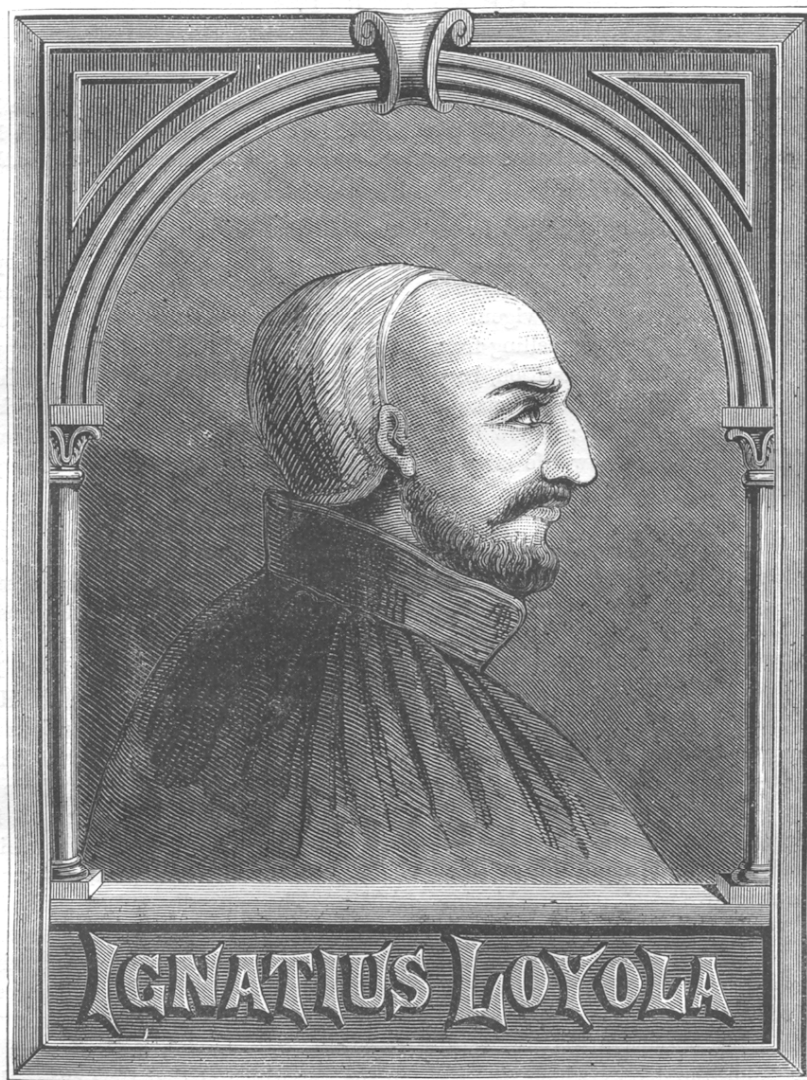
As the tribes of Israel were approaching the frontier of the Promised Land, a Wizard-prophet was summoned from the East to bar their entrance by his divinations and enchantments. And now, when the armies of Protestantism seem to be nearing their final victory, there starts up the Jesuit host, with a subtler casuistry and a darker divination, to dispute possession of Christendom. We shall consider that host in its rise, its equipments, its discipline, its diffusion, and its successes.

Don Inigo Lopez de Recalde, the Ignatius Loyola of history, was the founder of the Order of Jesus, or the Jesuits. His birth was nearly contemporaneous with that of Luther. He was the youngest son of one of the highest Spanish grandees, and was born in his father's Castle of Loyola, in the province of Guipuzcoa, in 1491. His youth was passed at the splendid and luxurious court of Ferdinand the Catholic. Spain at that time was fighting to expel the Moors, whose presence on her soil she accounted at once an insult to her independence and an affront to her faith. She was ending the conflict in Spain, but continuing it in Africa. The naturally ardent soul of Ignatius was set on fire by the religious fervour around him. He grew weary of the gaieties and frivolities of the court; nor could even the dalliances and adventures of knight-errantry satisfy him. He thirsted to earn renown on the field of arms. Embarking in the war which at that time engaged the religious enthusiasm and military chivalry of his countrymen, he soon distinguished himself by his feats of daring. Ignatius was bidding fair to take a high place among warriors, and transmit to posterity a name encompassed with the halo of military glory—but with that halo only. At this stage of his career an incident occurred which cut short his exploits on the battle-field, and transferred his enthusiasm and chivalry to another sphere.

It was the year 1521. Luther was uttering his famous "No!" before the emperor and his princes,

and summoning, as with trumpet-peal, Christendom to arms. It is at this moment the young Ignatius, the intrepid soldier of Spain, and about to become the yet more intrepid soldier of Rome, appears before us. He is shut up in the town of Pampeluna, which the French are besieging. The

hand through the host of the besiegers. He goes forth and joins battle with the French. As he is fighting desperately he is struck by a musket-ball, wounded dangerously in both legs, and laid senseless on the field. Ignatius had ended the last campaign he was ever to fight with the sword:



IGNATIUS LOYOLA. (From the Portrait in Freher's "Theatrum.")

garrison are hard pressed: and after some whispered consultations they openly propose to surrender. Ignatius deems the very thought of such a thing dishonour; he denounces the proposed act of his comrades as cowardice, and re-entering the citadel with a few companions as courageous as himself, swears to defend it to the last drop of his blood. By-and-by famine leaves him no alternative save to die within the walls, or to cut his way sword in

his valour he was yet to display on other fields, but he would mingle no more on those which resound with the clash of swords and the roar of artillery.

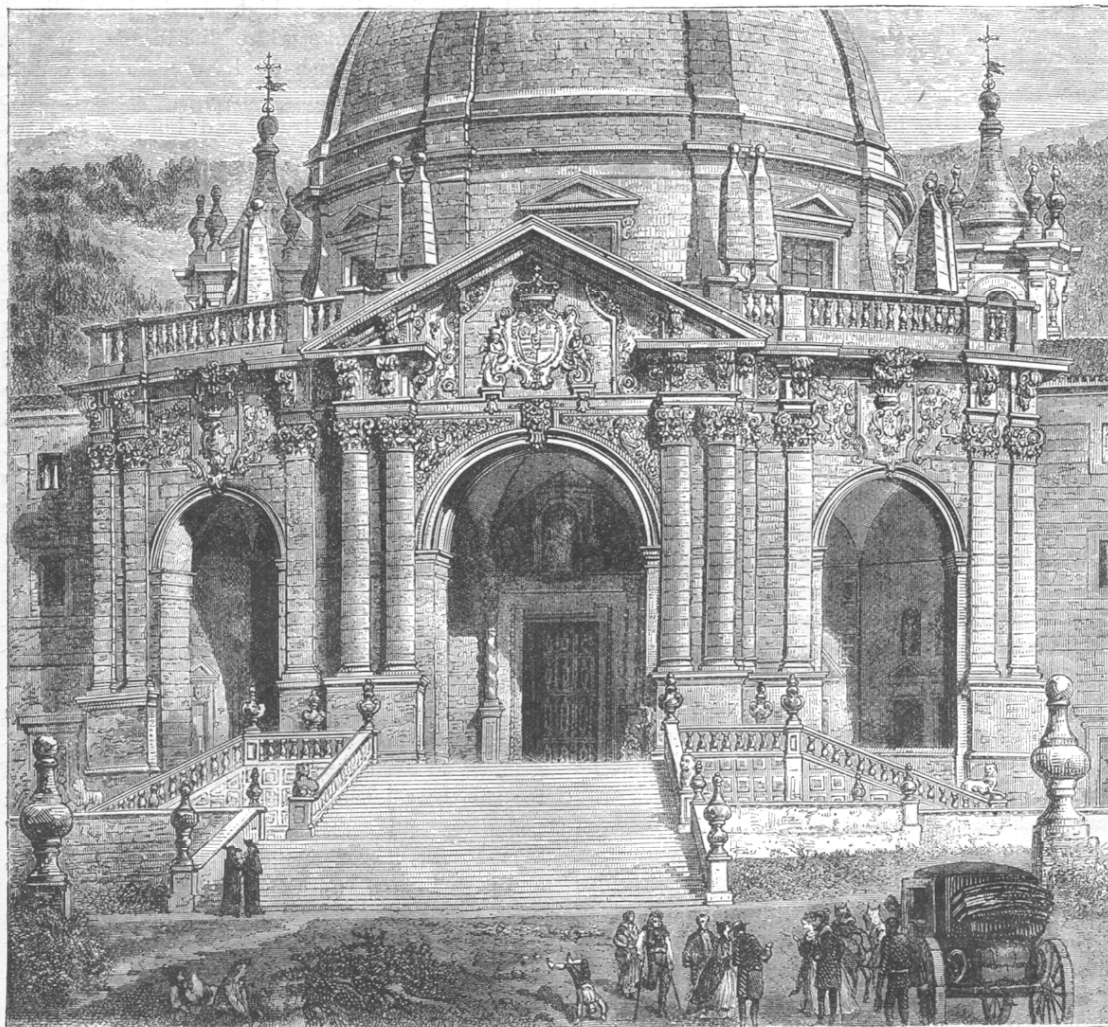
The bravery of the fallen warrior had won the respect of the foe. Raising him from the ground, where he was fast bleeding to death, they carried him to the hospital of Pampeluna, and tended him with care, till he was able to be conveyed in a

## LOYOLA'S MISSION.

379

litter to his father's castle. Thrice had he to undergo the agony of having his wounds opened. Clenching his teeth and closing his fists he bade defiance to pain. Not a groan escaped him while under the torture of the surgeon's knife. But the tardy passage of the weeks and months during

the early Christian martyrs passed before him as he read. Next came the monks and hermits of the Thebaic deserts and the Sinaitic mountains. With an imagination on fire he perused the story of the hunger and cold they had braved; of the self-conquests they had achieved; of the battles they



VIEW OF THE FRONT ENTRANCE OF THE SANCTUARY OF LOYOLA, GUIPUZCOA.

which he waited the slow healing of his wounds, inflicted on his ardent spirit a keener pain than had the probing-knife on his quivering limbs. Fettered to his couch he chafed at the inactivity to which he was doomed. Romances of chivalry and tales of war were brought him to beguile the hours. These exhausted, other books were produced, but of a somewhat different character. This time it was the legends of the saints that were brought the bed-ridden knight. The tragedy of

had waged with evil spirits; of the glorious visions that had been vouchsafed them; and the brilliant rewards they had gained in the lasting reverence of earth and the felicities and dignities of heaven. He panted to rival these heroes, whose glory was of a kind so bright and pure, that compared with it the renown of the battle-field was dim and sordid. His enthusiasm and ambition were as boundless as ever, but now they were directed into a new channel. Henceforward the current of his life was changed.

He had lain down "a knight of the burning sword"—to use the words of his biographer, Vieyra—he rose up from it "a saint of the burning torch."

The change was a sudden and violent one, and drew after it vast consequences not to Ignatius only, and the men of his own age, but to millions of the human race in all countries of the world, and in all the ages that have elapsed since. He who lay down on his bed the fiery soldier of the emperor, rose from it the yet more fiery soldier of the Pope. The weakness occasioned by loss of blood, the morbidity produced by long seclusion, the irritation of acute and protracted suffering, joined to a temperament highly excitable, and a mind that had fed on miracles and visions till its enthusiasm had grown into fanaticism, accounts in part for the transformation which Ignatius had undergone. Though the balance of his intellect was now sadly disturbed, his shrewdness, his tenacity, and his daring remained. Set free from the fetters of calm reason, these qualities had freer scope than ever. The wing of his earthly ambition was broken, but he could take his flight heavenward. If earth was forbidden him, the celestial domains stood open, and there worthier exploits and more brilliant rewards awaited his prowess.

The heart of a soldier plucked out, and that of a monk given him, Ignatius vowed, before leaving his sick-chamber, to be the slave, the champion, the knight-errant of Mary. She was the lady of his soul, and after the manner of dutiful knights he immediately repaired to her shrine at Montserrat, hung up his arms before her image, and spent the night in watching them. But reflecting that he was a soldier of Christ, that great Monarch who had gone forth to subjugate all the earth, he resolved to eat no other food, wear no other raiment than his King had done, and endure the same hardships and vigils. Laying aside his plume, his coat of mail, his shield and sword, he donned the cloak of the mendicant. "Wrapped in sordid rags," says Duller, "an iron chain and prickly girdle pressing on his naked body, covered with filth, with uncombed hair and untrimmed nails," he retired to a dark mountain in the vicinity of Manresa, where was a gloomy cave, in which he made his abode for some time. There he subjected himself to all the penances and mortifications of the early anchorites whose holiness he emulated. He wrestled with the evil spirit, talked to voices audible to no ear but his own, fasted for days on end, till his weakness was such that he fell into a swoon, and one day was found at the entrance of his cave, lying on the ground, half dead.

The cave at Manresa recalls vividly to our

memory the cell at Erfurt. The same austerities, vigils, mortifications, and mental efforts and agonies which were undergone by Ignatius Loyola, had but a very few years before this been passed through by Martin Luther. So far the career of the founder of the Jesuits and that of the champion of Protestantism were the same. Both had set before them a high standard of holiness, and both had all but sacrifice life to reach it. But at the point to which we have come the courses of the two men widely diverge. Both hitherto in their pursuit of truth and holiness had travelled by the same road; but now we see Luther turning to the Bible, "the light that shineth in a dark place," "the sure Word of Prophecy." Ignatius Loyola, on the other hand, surrenders himself to visions and revelations. As Luther went onward the light grew only the brighter around him. He had turned his face to the sun. Ignatius had turned his gaze inward upon his own beclouded mind, and verified the saying of the wise man, "He who wandereth out of the way of understanding shall remain in the congregation of the dead."

Finding him half exanimate at the mouth of his cave, sympathising friends carried Ignatius to the town of Manresa. Continuing there the same course of penances and self-mortifications which he had pursued in solitude, his bodily weakness greatly increased, but he was more than recompensed by the greater frequency of those heavenly visions with which he now began to be favoured. In Manresa he occupied a cell in the Dominican convent, and as he was then projecting a pilgrimage to Jerusalem, he began to qualify himself for this holy journey by a course of the severest penances. "He scourged himself thrice a day," says Ranke, "he rose up to prayer at midnight, and passed seven hours of each day on his knees."<sup>1</sup>

It will hardly do to say that this marvellous case is merely an instance of an unstrung bodily condition, and of vicious mental stimulants abundantly supplied, where the thirst for adventure and distinction was still unquenched. A closer study of the case will show that there was in it an awakening of the conscience. There was a sense of sin—its awful demerit, and its fearful award. Loyola, too, would seem to have felt the "terrors of death, and the pains of hell." He had spent three days in Montserrat in confessing the sins of all his past life.<sup>2</sup> But on a more searching review of his life, finding that he had omitted many sins, he re-

<sup>1</sup> Ranke, *Hist. of the Popes*, bk. ii., sec. 4, p. 138; Lond., 1874.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 138, 139.



## LOYOLA'S DREAMS AND VISIONS.

381

newed and amplified his confession at Manressa. If he found peace it was only for a short while; again his sense of sin would return, and to such a pitch did his anguish rise, that thoughts of self-destruction came into his mind. Approaching the window of his cell, he was about to throw himself from it, when it suddenly flashed upon him that the act was abhorrent to the Almighty, and he withdrew, crying out, "Lord, I will not do aught that may offend thee."<sup>1</sup>

One day he awakened as from a dream. Now I know, said he to himself, that all these torments are from the assaults of Satan. I am tossed between the promptings of the good Spirit, who would have me be at peace, and the dark suggestions of the evil one, who seeks continually to terrify me. I will have done with this warfare. I will forget my past life; I will open these wounds not again. Luther in the midst of tempests as terrible had come to a similar resolution. Awaking as from a frightful dream, he lifted up his eyes and saw One who had borne his sins upon His cross: and like the mariner who clings amid the surging billows to the rock, Luther was at peace because he had anchored his soul on an Almighty foundation. But says Ranke, speaking of Loyola and the course he had now resolved to pursue, "this was not so much the restoration of his peace as a resolution, it was an engagement entered into by the will rather than a conviction to which the submission of the will is inevitable. It required no aid from Scripture, it was based on the belief he entertained of an immediate connection between himself and the world of spirits. This would never have satisfied Luther. No inspirations—no visions would Luther admit; all were in his opinion alike injurious. He would have the simple, written, indubitable Word of God alone."<sup>2</sup>

From the hour that Ignatius resolved to think no more of his sins his spiritual horizon began, as he believed, to clear up. All his gloomy terrors receded with the past which he had consigned to oblivion. His bitter tears were dried up, and his heavy sighs no longer resounded through the convent halls. He was taken, he felt, into more intimate communion with God. The heavens were

opened that he might have a clearer insight into Divine mysteries. True, the Spirit had revealed these things in the morning of the world, through chosen and accredited channels, and inscribed them on the page of inspiration that all might learn them from that infallible source. But Ignatius did not search for these mysteries in the Bible; favoured above the sons of men, he received them, as he thought, in revelations made specially to himself. Alas! his hour had come and passed, and the gate that would have ushered him in amid celestial realities and joys was shut, and henceforward he must dwell amid phantasies and dreams.

It was intimated to him one day that he should yet see the Saviour in person. He had not long to wait for the promised revelation. At mass his eyes were opened, and he saw the incarnate God in the Host. What farther proof did he need of transubstantiation, seeing the whole process had been shown to him? A short while thereafter the Virgin revealed herself with equal plainness to his bodily eyes. Not fewer than thirty such visits did Loyola receive. One day as he sat on the steps of the Church of St. Dominic at Manressa, singing a hymn to Mary, he suddenly fell into a reverie, and had the symbol of the ineffable mystery of the Trinity shown to him, under the figure of "three keys of a musical instrument." He sobbed for very joy, and entering the church, began publishing the miracle. On another occasion, as he walked along the banks of the Llobregat, that waters Manressa, he sat down, and fixing his eyes intently on the stream, many Divine mysteries became apparent to him, such "as other men," says his biographer Maffei, "can with great difficulty understand, after much reading, long vigils, and study."

This narration places us beside the respective springs of Protestantism and Ultramontaniam. The source from which the one is seen to issue is the Word of God. To it Luther swore fealty, and before it he hung up his sword, like a true knight, when he received ordination. The other is seen to be the product of a clouded yet proud and ambitious imagination, and a wayward will. And therewith have corresponded the fruits, as the past three centuries bear witness. The one principle has gathered round it a noble host clad in the panoply of purity and truth. In the wake of the other has come the dark army of the Jesuits.

<sup>1</sup> Ranke, bk. ii., sec. 4, pp. 133, 139.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 140.

## CHAPTER II.

## LOYOLA'S FIRST DISCIPLES.

Vision of Two Camps—Ignatius Visits Jerusalem—Forbidden to Proselytise—Returns to Spain—Resolves to make Christendom his Field—Puts himself to School—Repairs to Paris—His Two Companions—Peter Fabre—Francis Xavier—Loyola subjects them to a Severe Regimen—They become his Disciples—Loyola's First Nine Followers—Their Vow in the Church of Montmartre—The Book of *Spiritual Exercises*—Its Course of Discipline—Four Weeks of Meditation—Topic of each Week—The *Spiritual Exercises* and the Holy Spirit—Visits Venice—Repairs to Rome—Draft of Rules—Bull Constituting the Society.

AMONG the wonderful things shown to Ignatius Loyola by special revelation was a vision of two great camps. The centre of the one was placed at Babylon; and over it there floated the gloomy ensign of the prince of darkness. The Heavenly King had erected his standard on Mount Zion, and made Jerusalem his head-quarters. In the war of which these two camps were the symbols, and the issues of which were to be grand beyond all former precedent, Loyola was chosen, he believed, to be one of the chief captains. He longed to place himself at the centre of action. The way thither was long. Wide oceans and gloomy deserts had to be traversed, and hostile tribes passed through. But he had an iron will, a boundless enthusiasm, and what was more, a Divine call—for such it seemed to him in his delusion. He set out penniless (1523), and begging his bread by the way, he arrived at Barcelona. There he embarked in a ship which landed him on the shore of Italy. Thence, travelling on foot, after long months, and innumerable hardships, he entered in safety the gates of Jerusalem. But the reception that awaited him in the "Holy City" was not such as he had fondly anticipated. His rags, his uncombed locks, which almost hid his emaciated features, but ill accorded with the magnificence of the errand which had brought him to that shore. Loyola thought of doing in his single person what the armies of the Crusaders had failed to do by their combined strength. The head of the Romanists in Jerusalem saw in him rather the mendicant than the warrior, and fearing doubtless that should he offer battle to the Crescent, he was more likely to provoke a tempest of Turkish fanaticism than drive back the hordes of the infidel, he commanded him to desist under the threat of excommunication. Thus withstood Loyola returned to Barcelona, which he reached in 1524.

Derision and insults awaited his arrival in his native Spain. His countrymen failed to see the grand aims cherished beneath his rags; nor could they divine the splendid career, and the immortality

of fame, which were to emerge from this present squalor and debasement. But not for one moment did Loyola's own faith falter in his great destiny. He had the art, known only to those fated to act a great part, of converting impediments into helps, and extracting new experience and fresh courage from disappointment. His repulsion from the "holy fields" had taught him that Christendom, and not Asia, was the predestined scene of his warfare, and that he was to do battle, not with the infidels of the East, but with the ever-growing hosts of heretics in Europe. But to meet the Protestant on his own ground, and to fight him with his own weapons, was a still more difficult task than to convert the Saracen. He felt that meanwhile he was destitute of the necessary qualifications, but it was not too late to acquire them.

Though a man of thirty-five, he put himself to school at Barcelona, and there, seated amid the youth of the city, he prosecuted the study of Latin. Having acquired some mastery of this tongue, he removed (1526) to the University of Alcalá to commence theology. In a little space he began to preach. Discovering a vast zeal in the propagation of his tenets, and no little success in making disciples, male and female, the Inquisition, deeming both the man and his aims somewhat mysterious, arrested him. The order of the Jesuits was on the point of being nipped in the bud. But finding in Loyola no heretical bias, the Fathers dismissed him on his promise of holding his peace. He repaired to Salamanca, but there too he encountered similar obstacles. It was not agreeable thus to champ the curb of privilege and canonical authority; but it ministered to him a wholesome discipline. It sharpened his circumspection and shrewdness, without in the least abating his ardour. Holding fast by his grand purpose, he quitted his native land, and repairing in 1528 to Paris, entered himself as a student in the College of St. Barbara.

In the world of Paris he became more practical; but the flame of his enthusiasm still burned on.

## LOYOLA'S FIRST DISCIPLES.

383

Through penance, through study, through ecstatic visions, and occasional checks, he pursued with unshaken faith and unquenched resolution his celestial calling as the leader of a mighty spiritual army, of which he was to be the creator, and which was to wage victorious battle with the hosts of Protestantism. Loyola's residence in Paris, which was from 1528 to 1535,<sup>1</sup> coincides with the period of greatest religious excitement in the French capital. Discussions were at that time of hourly occurrence in the streets, in the halls of the Sorbonne, and at the royal table. Loyola must have witnessed all the stirring and tragic scenes we have already described; he may have stood by the stake of Berquin; he had seen with indignation, doubtless, the saloons of the Louvre opened for the Protestant sermon; he had felt the great shock which France received from the Placards, and taken part, it may be, in the bloody rites of her great day of expiation. It is easy to see how, amid excitements like these, Loyola's zeal would burn stronger every hour; but his ardour did not hurry him into action till all was ready. The blow he meditated was great, and time, patience, and skill were necessary to prepare the instruments by whom he was to inflict it.

It chanced that two young students shared with Loyola his rooms in the College of St. Barbara. The one was Peter Fabre, from Savoy. His youth had been passed amid his father's flocks; the majesty of the silent mountains had sublimed his natural piety into enthusiasm; and one night, on bended knee, under the star-bestudded vault, he devoted himself to God in a life of study. The other companion of Loyola was Francis Xavier, of Pampeluna, in Nayarre. For 500 years his ancestors had been renowned as warriors, and his ambition was, by becoming a scholar, to enhance the fame of his house by adding to its glory in arms the yet purer glory of learning. These two, the humble Savoyard and the high-born Navarrese, Loyola had resolved should be his first disciples.

As the artist selects his block, and with skilful eye and plastic hand bestows touch after touch of the chisel, till at last the superfluous parts are cleared away, and the statue stands forth so complete and perfect in its symmetry that the dead stone seems to breathe, so did the future general of the Jesuit army proceed to mould and fashion his two companions, Fabre and Xavier. The former was soft and pliable, and easily took the shape which the master-hand sought to communicate. The other was obdurate, like the rocks of his native mountains, but the patience

and genius of Loyola finally triumphed over his pride of family and haughtiness of spirit. He first of all won their affection by certain disinterested services; he next excited their admiration by the loftiness of his own asceticism; he then imparted to them his grand project, and fired them with the ambition of sharing with him in the accomplishment of it. Having brought them thus far he entered them on a course of discipline, the design of which was to give them those hardy qualities of body and soul, which would enable them to fulfil their lofty vocation as leaders in an army, every soldier in which was to be tried and hardened in the fire as he himself had been. He exacted of them frequent confession; he was equally rigid as regarded their participation in the Eucharist; the one exercise trained them in submission, the other fed the flame of their zeal, and thus the two cardinal qualities which Loyola demanded in all his followers were developed side by side. Severe bodily mortifications were also enjoined upon them. "Three days and three nights did he compel them to fast. During the severest winters, when carriages might be seen to traverse the frozen Seine, he would not permit Fabre the slightest relaxation of discipline." Thus it was that he mortified their pride, taught them to despise wealth, schooled them to brave danger and condemn luxury, and inured them to cold, hunger, and toil; in short, he made them dead to every passion save that of the "Holy War," in which they were to bear arms.

A beginning had been made; the first recruits had been enrolled in that army which was speedily to swell into a mighty host, and unfurl its gloomy ensigns and win its dismal triumphs in every land. We can imagine Loyola's joy as he contemplated these two men, fashioned so perfectly in his own likeness. The same master-artificer who had moulded these two could form others—in short, any number. The list was soon enlarged by the addition of four other disciples. Their names—obscure then, but in after-years to shine with a fiery splendour—were Jacob Lainez, Alfonso Salmeron, Nicholas Bobadilla, and Simon Rodriguez. The first three were Spaniards, the fourth was a Portuguese. They were seven in all; but the accession of two others increased them to nine: and now they resolved on taking their first step.

On the 15th of August, 1534, Loyola, followed by his nine companions, entered the subterranean chapel of the Church of Montmartre, at Paris, and mass being said by Fabre, who had received priest's orders, the company, after the usual vow of chastity and poverty, took a solemn oath to dedicate their lives to the conversion of the Saracens, or, should

<sup>1</sup> Ranke, bk. ii., sec. 4, p. 143, foot-note.

circumstances make that attempt impossible, to lay themselves and their services unreservedly at the feet of the Pope. They sealed their oath by now receiving the Host. The day was chosen because it was the anniversary of the Assumption of the Virgin, and the place because it was consecrated to Mary, the queen of saints and angels, from whom, as Loyola firmly believed, he had received his mission. The army thus enrolled was little, and it was great. It was little when counted, it was great when

sion, during the space of the rising and setting of seven suns. It may be fitly styled a journey from the gates of destruction to the gates of Paradise, mapped out in stages so that it might be gone in the short period of four weeks. There are few more remarkable books in the world. It combines the self-denial and mortification of the Brahmin with the asceticism of the anchorite, and the ecstasies of the schoolmen. It professes, like the Koran, to be a revelation. "The Book of Exercises,"



LOYOLA AND HIS DISCIPLES BEFORE POPE PAUL III.

weighed. In sublimity of aim, and strength of faith—using the term in its mundane sense—it wielded a power before which nothing on earth—one principle excepted—should be able to stand.<sup>1</sup>

To foster the growth of this infant Hercules, Loyola had prepared beforehand his book entitled *Spiritual Exercises*. This is a body of rules for teaching men how to conduct the work of their "conversion." It consists of four grand meditations, and the penitent, retiring into solitude, is to occupy absorbingly his mind on each in succes-

sion, says a Jesuit, "was truly written by the finger of God, and delivered to Ignatius by the Holy Mother of God."<sup>2</sup>

The *Spiritual Exercises*, we have said, was a body of rules by following which one could effect upon himself that great change which in Biblical and theological language is termed "conversion." The book displayed on the part of its author great knowledge of the human heart. The method prescribed was an adroit imitation of that process of conviction, of alarm, of enlightenment, and of peace, through which the Holy Spirit leads the soul

<sup>1</sup> Duller, *The Jesuits*, pp. 10, 11. Ranke, bk. ii., sec. 4, pp. 143, 144.

<sup>2</sup> *Homo Orat.* a J. Nouet, S.J.



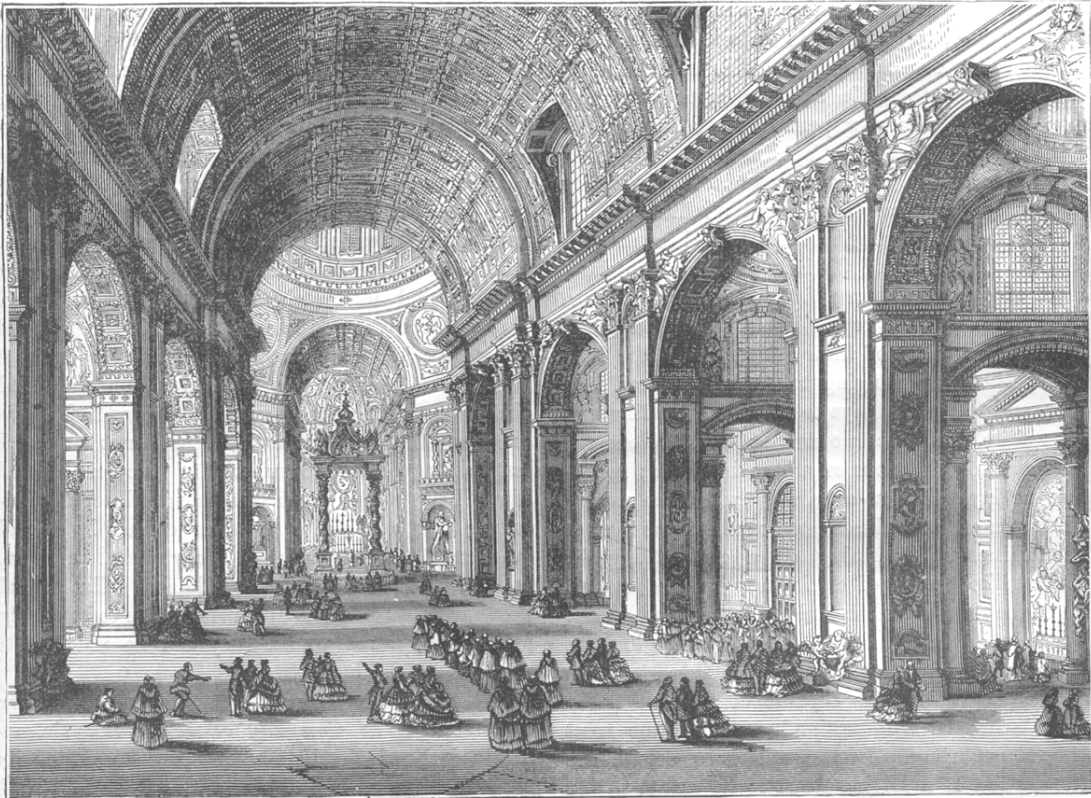
## THE "SPIRITUAL EXERCISES."

385

that undergoes that change in very deed. This Divine transformation was at that hour taking place in thousands of instances in the Protestant world. Loyola, like the magicians of old who strove to rival Moses, wrought with his enchantments to produce the same miracle. Let us observe how he proceeded.

The person was, first of all, to go aside from the world, by entirely isolating himself from all the affairs of life. In the solemn stillness of his

The second week he was to withdraw his eye from these dreadful spectacles and fix it upon the Incarnation. It is no longer the wailings of the lost that fill the ear as he sits in his darkened chamber, it is the song of the angel announcing the birth of the Child, and "Mary acquiescing in the work of redemption." At the feet of the Trinity he is directed to pour out the expression of the gratitude and praise with which continued meditation on these themes causes his soul to overflow.



VIEW OF THE INTERIOR OF ST. PETER'S, ROME.

chamber he was to engage in four meditations each day, the first at daybreak, the last at midnight. To assist the action of the imagination on the soul, the room was to be artificially darkened, and on its walls were to be suspended pictures of hell and other horrors. Sin, death, and judgment were exclusively to occupy the thoughts of the penitent during the first week of his seclusion. He was to ponder upon them till in a sense "he beheld the vast conflagration of hell; its wailings, shrieks, and blasphemies; felt the worm of conscience; in fine, touched those fires by whose contact the souls of the reprobate are scorched."

85—VOL. II.

The third week is to witness the solemn act of the soul's enrolment in the army of that Great Captain, who "bowed the heavens and came down" in his Incarnation. Two cities are before the devotee—Jerusalem and Babylon—in which will he choose to dwell? Two standards are displayed in his sight—under which will he fight? Here a broad and brave pennon floats freely on the wind. Its golden folds bear the motto, "Pride, Honour, Riches." Here is another, but how unlike the motto inscribed upon it, "Poverty, Shame, Humility." On all sides resounds the cry "To arms!" He must make his choice, and he

must make it now, for the seventh sun of his third week is hastening to the setting. It is under the banner of Poverty that he elects to win the incorruptible crown.

Now comes his fourth and last week, and with it there comes a great change in the subjects of his meditation. He is to dismiss all gloomy ideas, all images of terror; the gates of Hades are to be closed, and those of a new life opened. It is morning with him, it is a spring-time that has come to him, and he is to surround himself with light, and flowers, and odours. It is the Sunday of a spiritual creation; he is to rest, and to taste in that rest the prelude of the everlasting joys. This mood of mind he is to cultivate while seven suns rise and set upon him. He is now perfected and fit to fight in the army of the Great Captain.

A not unsimilar course of mental discipline, as our history has already shown, did Wicliffe, Luther, and Calvin pass through before they became captains in the army of Christ. They began in a horror of great darkness; through that cloud there broke upon them the revelation of the "Crucified;" throwing the arms of their faith around the Tree of Expiation, and clinging to it, they entered into peace, and tasted the joys to come. How like, yet how unlike, are these two courses! In the one the penitent finds a Saviour on whom he leans; in the other he lays hold on a rule by which he works, and works as methodically and regularly as a piece of machinery. Beginning on a certain day, he finishes, like stroke of clock, duly as the seventh sun of the fourth week is sinking below the horizon. We trace in the one the action of the imagination, fostering one over-mastering passion into strength, till the person becomes capable of attempting the most daring enterprises, and enduring the most dreadful sufferings. In the other we behold the intervention of a Divine Agent, who plants in the soul a new principle, and thence educes a new life.

The war in which Loyola and his nine companions enrolled themselves when on the 15th of August, 1534, they made their vow in the Church of Montmartre, was to be waged against the Saracens of the East. They acted so far on their original design as to proceed to Venice, where they learned that their project was meanwhile impracticable. The war which had just broken out between the Republic and the Porte had closed the gates of Asia. They took this as an intimation that the field of their operations was to be in the

Western world. Returning on their path they now directed their steps towards Rome. In every town through which they passed on their way to the Eternal City, they left behind them an immense reputation for sanctity by their labours in the hospitals, and their earnest addresses to the populace on the streets. As they drew nigh to Rome, and the hearts of some of his companions were beginning to despond, Loyola was cheered by a vision, in which Christ appeared and said to him, "In Rome will I be gracious unto thee."<sup>1</sup> The hopes this vision inspired were not to be disappointed. Entering the gates of the capital of Christendom, and throwing themselves at the feet of Paul III., they met a most gracious reception. The Pope hailed their offer of assistance as most opportune. Mighty dangers at that hour threatened the Papacy, and with the half of Europe in revolt, and the old monkish orders become incapable, this new and unexpected aid seemed sent by Heaven. The rules and constitution of the new order were drafted, and ultimately approved, by the Pope. Two peculiarities in the constitution of the proposed order specially recommended it in the eyes of Paul III. The first was its vow of unconditional obedience. The society swore to obey the Pope as an army obeys its general. It was not *canonical* but *military* obedience which its members offered him. They would go to whatsoever place, at whatsoever time, and on whatsoever errand he should be pleased to order them. They were, in short, to be not so much monks as soldiers. The second peculiarity was that their services were to be wholly gratuitous; never would they ask so much as a penny from the Papal See.

It was resolved that the new order should bear the name of *The Company of Jesus*. Loyola modestly declined the honour of being accounted its founder. Christ himself, he affirmed, had dictated to him its constitution in his cave at Manresa. He was its real Founder: whose name then could it so appropriately bear as His? The bull constituting it was issued on the 27th of September, 1540, and was entitled *Regimini Militantis Ecclesie*,<sup>2</sup> and bore that the persons it enrolled into an army were to bear "the standard of the Cross, to wield the arms of God, to serve the only Lord, and the Roman Pontiff, His Vicar on earth.

<sup>1</sup> Duller, p. 12.

<sup>2</sup> "Raised to the government of the Church Militant."

## THE "CONSTITUTIONS."

387

## CHAPTER III.

## ORGANISATION AND TRAINING OF THE JESUITS.

Loyola's Vast Schemes—A General for the Army—Loyola Elected—"Constitutions"—Made Known to only a Select Few—Powers of the General—An Autocrat—He only can make Laws—Appoints all Officers, &c.—Organisation—Six Grand Divisions—Thirty-seven Provinces—Houses, Colleges, Missions, &c.—Reports to the General—His Eye Surveys the World—Organisation—Preparatory Ordeal—Four Classes—Novitiates—Second Novitiate—Its Rigorous Training—The Indifferents—The Scholars—The Coadjutors—The Professed—Their Oath—Their Obedience.

THE long-delayed wishes of Loyola had been realised, and his efforts, abortive in the past, had now at length been crowned with success. The Papal bull had given formal existence to the order, what Christ had done in heaven his Vicar had ratified on the earth. But Loyola was too wise to think that all had been accomplished; he knew that he was only at the beginning of his labours. In the little band around him he saw but the nucleus of an army that would multiply and expand till one day it should be as the stars in multitude, and bear the standard of victory to every land on earth. The gates of the East were meanwhile closed against him; but the Western world would not always set limits to the triumphs of his spiritual arms. He would yet subjugate both hemispheres, and extend the dominion of Rome from the rising to the setting sun. Such were the schemes that Loyola, who hid under his mendicant's cloak an ambition vast as Alexander's, was at that moment revolving. Assembling his comrades one day about this time, he addressed them, his biographer Bouhours tells us, in a long speech, saying, "Ought we not to conclude that we are called to win to God, not only a single nation, a single country, *but all nations, all the kingdoms of the world?*"<sup>1</sup>

An army to conquer the world, Loyola was forming. But he knew that nothing is stronger than its weakest part, and therefore the soundness of every link, the thorough discipline and tried fidelity of every soldier in this mighty host was with him an essential point. That could be secured only by making each individual, before enrolling himself, pass through an ordeal that should sift, and try, and harden him to the utmost.

But first the Company of Jesus had to elect a head. The dignity was offered to Loyola. He modestly declined the post, as Julius Cæsar did the diadem. After four days spent in prayer and penance, his disciples returned and humbly supplicated him to be their chief. Ignatius, viewing this

as an intimation of the will of God, consented. He was the first General of the order. Few royal sceptres bring with them such an amount of real power as this election bestowed on Loyola. The day would come when the tiara itself would bow before that yet mightier authority which was represented by the cap of the General of the Jesuits.

The second step was to frame the "Constitutions" of the society. In this labour Loyola accepted the aid of Lainez, the ablest of his converts. Seeing it was at God's command that Ignatius had planted the tree of Jesuitism in the spiritual vineyard, it was to be expected that the Constitutions of the Company would proceed from the same high source. The Constitutions were declared to be a revelation from God, the inspiration of the Holy Spirit.<sup>2</sup> This gave them absolute authority over the members, and paved the way for the substitution of the Constitution and canons of the Society of Jesus in the room of Christianity itself. These canons and Instructions were not published: they were not communicated to all the members of the society even; they were made known to a few only—in all their extent to a very few. They took care to print them in their own college at Rome, or in their college at Prague; and if it happened that they had been printed elsewhere, they secured the whole edition. "I cannot discover," says M. de la Chalotais, "that the Constitutions of the Jesuits have ever been seen or examined by any tribunal whatsoever, secular or ecclesiastic; by any sovereign—not even by the Court of Chancery of Prague, when permission was asked to print them . . . . They have taken all sorts of precautions to keep them a secret."<sup>3</sup> For a century they were con-

<sup>2</sup> See Mariani, *Life of Loyola*; Rome, 1842—English translation by Card. Wiseman's authority; Lond., 1847. Bouhours, *Life of Ignatius*, bk. iii., p. 282.

<sup>3</sup> *Report on the Constitutions of the Jesuits*, delivered by M. Louis René de Caraduc de la Chalotais, Procureur-General of the King, to the Parliament of Bretagne; 1761. In obedience to the Court. Translated from the French edition of 1762. Lond., 1868. Pages 16, 17.

<sup>1</sup> Bouhours, *Life of Ignatius*, bk. i., p. 248.

cealed from the knowledge of the world; and it was an accident which at last dragged them into the light from the darkness in which they had so long been buried.

It is not easy, perhaps it is not possible, to say what number of volumes the Constitutions of the Jesuits form. M. Louis René de la Chalotais, Procurator-General of King Louis XV., in his *Report on the Constitutions of the Jesuits*, given in to the Parliament of Bretagne, speaks of fifty volumes folio. That was in the year 1761, or 221 years after the founding of the order. This code, then enormous, must be greatly more so now, seeing every bull and brief of the Pope addressed to the society, every edict of its General, is so much more added to a legislation that is continually augmenting. We doubt whether any member of the order is found bold enough to undertake a complete study of them, or ingenious enough to reconcile all their contradictions and inconsistencies. Prudently abstaining from venturing into a labyrinth from which he may never emerge, he simply asks, not what do the Constitutions say, but what does the General command? Practically the *will* of his chief is the *code* of the Jesuit.

We shall first consider the powers of the General. The original bull of Paul III. constituting the Company gave to "Ignatius de Loyola, with nine priests, his companions," the power to make Constitutions and particular rules, and also to alter them. The legislative power thus rested in the hands of the General and his company—that is, in a "Congregation" representing them. But when Loyola died, and Lainez succeeded him as General, one of his first acts was to assemble a Congregation, and cause it to be decided that the General only had the right to make rules.<sup>1</sup> This crowned the autocracy of the General, for while he has the power of legislating for all others, no one may legislate for him. He acts without control, without responsibility, without law. It is true that in certain cases the society may depose the General. But it cannot exercise its powers unless it be assembled, and the General alone can assemble the Congregation. The whole order, with all its authority, is, in fact, comprised in him.

In virtue of his prerogative the General can command and regulate everything in the society. He may make special Constitutions for the advantage of the society, and he may alter them, abrogate them, and make new ones, dating them at any time

he pleases. These new rules must be regarded as confirmed by apostolic authority, not merely from the time they were made, but the time they are dated.

The General assigns to all provincials, superiors, and members of the society, of whatever grade, the powers they are to exercise, the places where they are to labour, the missions they are to discharge, and he may annul or confirm their acts at his pleasure. He has the right to nominate provincials and rectors, to admit or exclude members, to say what proffered dignity they are or are not to accept, to change the destination of legacies, and, though to give money to his relatives exposes him to deposition, "he may yet give alms to any amount that he may deem conducive to the glory of God." He is invested moreover with the entire government and regulation of the colleges of the society. He may institute missions in all parts of the world. When commanding in the name of Jesus Christ, and in virtue of obedience, he commands under the penalty of mortal and venial sin. From his orders there is no appeal to the Pope. He can release from vows; he can examine into the consciences of the members; but it is useless to particularise—the General is the society.<sup>2</sup>

The General alone, we have said, has power to make laws, ordinances, and declarations. This power is *theoretically* bounded, though *practically* absolute. It has been declared that everything *essential* ("Substantia Institutionis") to the society is immutable, and therefore removed beyond the power of the General. But it has never yet been determined what things belong to the *essence* of the institute. Many attempts have been made to solve this question, but no solution that is comprehensible has ever been arrived at; and so long as this question remains without an answer, the powers of the General will remain without a limit.

Let us next attend to the organisation of the society. The Jesuit monarchy covers the globe. At its head, as we have said, is a sovereign, who rules over all, but is himself ruled over by no one. First come six grand divisions termed *Assistanzen*, satrapies or principedoms. These comprehend the space stretching from the Indus to the Mediterranean; more particularly India, Spain and Portugal, Germany and France, Italy and Sicily, Poland and Lithuania.<sup>3</sup> Outside this area the Jesuits have established missions. The heads of these six divi-

<sup>1</sup> "Solus præpositus Generalis auctoritatem habet regulas condendi." (Can. 3rd., Congreg. i., p. 693, tom. i.)

<sup>2</sup> Chalotais, *Report on the Constitutions of the Jesuits*, pp. 19–23.

<sup>3</sup> Duller, p. 54.



## THE GENERAL AND HIS ARMY.

389

sions act as coadjutors to their General; they are his staff or cabinet.

These six great divisions are subdivided into thirty-seven Provinces.<sup>1</sup> Over each province is placed a chief, termed a Provincial. The provinces are again subdivided into a variety of houses or establishments. First come the houses of the *Professed*, presided over by their Provost. Next come the colleges, or houses of the novices and scholars, presided over by their Rector or Superior. Where these cannot be established, "residences" are erected, for the accommodation of the priests who perambulate the district, preaching and hearing confessions. And lastly may be mentioned "mission-houses," in which Jesuits live unnoticed as secular clergy, but seeking, by all possible means, to promote the interests of the society.<sup>2</sup>

From his chamber in Rome the eye of the General surveys the world of Jesuitism to its farthest bounds; there is nothing done in it which he does not see; there is nothing spoken in it which he does not hear. It becomes us to note the means by which this almost superhuman intelligence is acquired. Every year a list of the houses and members of the society, with the name, talents, virtues, and failings of each, is laid before the General. In addition to the annual report, every one of the thirty-seven provincials must send him a report monthly of the state of his province. He must inform him minutely of its political and ecclesiastical condition. Every superior of a college must report once every three months. The heads of houses of residence, and houses of novitiates, must do the same. In short, from every quarter of his vast dominions come a monthly and a tri-monthly report. If the matter reported on has reference to persons outside the society, the Constitutions direct that the provincials and superiors shall write to the General in cipher. "Such precautions are taken against enemies," says M. de Chalotais. "Is the system of the Jesuits inimical to all governments?"

Thus to the General of the Jesuits the world lies "naked and open." He sees by a thousand eyes, he hears by a thousand ears; and when he has a behest to execute, he can select the fittest agent from an innumerable host, all of whom are ready to do his bidding. The past history, the good and evil qualities of every member of the society, his talents, his dispositions, his inclinations, his tastes, his secret thoughts, have all been strictly examined, minutely chronicled, and laid before the eye of

the General. It is the same as if he were present in person, and had seen and conversed with each.

All ranks, from the nobleman to the day-labourer; all trades, from the opulent banker to the shoemaker and porter; all professions, from the stoled dignitary and the learned professor to the cowed mendicant; all grades of literary men, from the philosopher, the mathematician, and the historian, to the schoolmaster and the reporter on the provincial newspaper, are enrolled in the society. Marshalled, and in continual attendance, before their chief, stand this host, so large in numbers, and so various in gifts. At his word they go, and at his word they come, speeding over seas and mountains, across frozen steppes, or burning plains, on his errand. Pestilence, or battle, or death may lie on his path, the Jesuit's obedience is not less prompt. Selecting one, the General sends him to the royal cabinet. Making choice of another, he opens to him the door of Parliament. A third he enrols in a political club; a fourth he places in the pulpit of a church, whose creed he professes that he may betray it; a fifth he commands to mingle in the saloons of the *litterati*; a sixth he sends to act his part in the Evangelical Conference; a seventh he seats beside the domestic hearth; and an eighth he sends afar off to barbarous tribes, where, speaking a strange tongue, and wearing a rough garment, he executes, amidst hardships and perils, the will of his superior. There is no disguise which the Jesuit will not wear, no art he will not employ, no motive he will not feign, no creed he will not profess, provided only he can acquit himself as a true soldier in the Jesuit army, and accomplish the work on which he has been sent forth. "We have men," exclaimed a General exultingly, as he glanced over the long roll of philosophers, orators, statesmen, and scholars who stood before him, ready to serve him in the State or in the Church, in the camp or in the school, at home or abroad—"We have men for martyrdom if they be required."

No one can be enrolled in the Society of Jesus till he has undergone a severe and long-continued course of training. Let us glance at the several grades of that great army, and the preparatory discipline in the case of each. There are four classes of Jesuits. We begin with the lowest. The *Novitiates* are the first in order of admission, the last in dignity. When one presents himself for admission into the order, a strict scrutiny takes place into his talents, his disposition, his family, his former life; and if it is seen that he is not likely to be of service to the society, he is at once dismissed. If his fitness appears probable, he is received into

<sup>1</sup> Such was their number in 1761, when Chalotais gave in his *Report* to the Parliament of Bretagne.

<sup>2</sup> Chalotais' *Report*. Duller, p. 54.

the House of Primary Probation.<sup>1</sup> Here he is forbidden all intercourse with the servants within and his relations outside the house. A *Compend* of the Institutions is submitted for his consideration; the full body of laws and regulations being withheld from him as yet. If he possesses property he is told that he must give it to the poor—that is, to the society. His tact and address, his sound judgment and business talent, his health and bodily vigour, are all closely watched and noted; above all, his *obedience* is subjected to severe experiment. If he acquits himself on the trial to the satisfaction of his examiners, he receives the Sacrament, and is advanced to the House of Second Probation.<sup>2</sup>

Here the discipline is of a yet severer kind. The novitiate first devotes a certain period to confession of sins and meditation. He next fulfils a course of service in the hospitals, learning humility by helping the poor and ministering at the beds of the sick. To further his advance in this grace, he next spends a certain term in begging his bread from door to door. Thus he learns to live on the coarsest fare and to sleep on the hardest couch. To perfect himself in the virtue of self-abnegation, he next discharges for awhile the most humiliating and repulsive offices in the house in which he lives. And now, this course of service ended, he is invited to show his powers of operating on others, by communicating instruction to boys in Christian doctrine, by hearing confessions, and by preaching in public. This course is to last two years, unless the superior should see fit to shorten it on the ground of greater zeal, or superior talent.

The period of probation at an end, the candidate for admission into the Order of Jesus is to present himself before the superior, furnished with certificates from those under whose eye he has fulfilled his six *experimenta*, or trials, as to the manner in which he has acquitted himself. If the testimonials should prove satisfactory to the superior, the novitiate is enrolled, not as yet in the Company of the Jesuits, but among the *Indifferents*. He is presumed to have no choice as regards the place he is to occupy in the august corps he aspires to enter; he leaves that entirely to the decision of the superior; he is equally ready to stand at the head or at the foot of the body; to discharge the most menial or the most dignified service; to play his part in the saloons of the great, encompassed by luxury and splendour, or to discharge his mission in the hovels of the poor, in the midst of misery

and filth; to remain at home, or to go to the ends of the earth. To have a preference, though unexpressed, is to fall into deadly sin. Obedience is not only the letter of his vow, it is the lesson that his training has written on his heart.<sup>3</sup>

This further trial gone through, the approved novitiate may now take the three simple vows—poverty, chastity, and obedience—which, with certain modifications, he must ever after renew twice every year. The novitiate is now admitted into the class of *Scholars*. The Jesuits have colleges of their own, amply endowed by wealthy devotees, and to one of these the novitiate is sent, to receive instruction in the higher mysteries of the society. His intellectual powers are here more severely tested and trained, and according to the genius and subtlety he may display, and his progress in his studies, so is the post assigned him in due time in the order. “The qualities to be desired and commended in the scholars,” say the Constitutions, “are acuteness of talent, brilliancy of example, and soundness of body.”<sup>4</sup> They are to be chosen men, picked from the flower of the troop, and the General has absolute power in admitting or dismissing them according to his expectations of their utility in promoting the designs of the institute.<sup>5</sup> Having finished his course, first as a simple scholar, and secondly as an approved scholar, he renews his three vows, and passes into the third class, or *Coadjutors*.

The coadjutors are divided into temporal and spiritual. The temporal coadjutor is never admitted into holy orders.<sup>6</sup> Such are retained to minister in the lowest offices. They become college cooks, porters, or purveyors. For these and similar purposes it is held expedient that they should be “lovers of virtue and perfection,” and “content to serve the society in the careful office of a Martha.”<sup>7</sup> The spiritual coadjutor must be a priest of adequate learning, that he may assist the society in hearing confessions, and giving instructions in Christian doctrine. It is from among the spiritual coadjutors that the rectors of colleges are usually selected by the General. It is a further privilege of theirs that they may be assembled in congregation to deliberate with the *Professed* members in matters of importance,<sup>8</sup> but no vote is granted them in the election of a General. Having passed with approbation the many stringent tests to which he is here

<sup>3</sup> *Constit. Societatis Jesu*, pars. iii., cap. 2., sec. 1, and pars. v., cap. 4, sec. 5—Parroisien, p. 22.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, pars. iv., cap. 3, sec. 2.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, pars. viii., cap. 1, sec. 2.

<sup>6</sup> *Examen* vi., sec. 1.

<sup>7</sup> *Constit. Societatis Jesu*, pars. i., cap. 2, sec. 2.

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*, pars. viii., cap. 3, A.

<sup>1</sup> *Constit. Societatis Jesu*, pars. i., cap. 4, sec. 1, 2.

<sup>2</sup> *Examen* iii. and iv., sec. 1 and 2—Parroisien, *Principles of the Jesuits*, pp. 16–19; Lond., 1860.



A JESUIT MISSIONARY PREACHING TO A TRIBE OF INDIANS.

**A Jesuit “Missionary” Preaching “Works Salvation” to a Tribe of Indians**  
(Page 391; No usual page number given at the top of the text as seen before and after)



subjected, in order to perfect his humility and obedience, and having duly deposited in the exchequer of the society whatever property he may happen to possess, the spiritual coadjutor, if a candidate for the highest grade, is admitted to the oblation of his vows, which are similar in form and substance to those he has already taken, with this exception, that they assign to the General the place of God. "I promise," so runs the oath, "to the Omnipotent God, in presence of his virgin mother, and of all the heavenly hierarchy, and to thee, Father General of the Society of Jesus, *holding the place of God*,"<sup>1</sup> &c. With this oath sworn on its threshold, he enters the inner circle of the society, and is enrolled among the *Professed*.

The *Professed Members* constitute the society *par excellence*. They alone know its deepest secrets, and they alone wield its highest powers. But perfection in Jesuitism cannot be reached otherwise than by the loss of manhood. Will, judgment, conscience, liberty, all the Jesuit lays down at the feet of his General. It is a tremendous sacrifice, but to him the General is God. He now takes his fourth, or peculiar vow, in which he binds himself to go, without question, delay, or repugnance, to whatever region of the earth, and on whatever errand, the Pope may be pleased to send him. This he promises to the Omnipotent God, and to his General, *holding the place of God*. The wisdom, justice, righteousness of the command he is not to question; he is not even to permit his mind to dwell upon it for a moment; it is the command of his General, and the command of his General is the precept of the Almighty. His superiors are "over him in the place of the Divine Majesty."<sup>2</sup> "In not fewer than 500 places in the Constitutions," says M. de la Chalotais, "are expressions used similar to the following:—'We must always see Jesus Christ in the General; be obedient to him in all his behests, as if they came directly from God himself.'"<sup>3</sup> When the command of the superior goes forth, the person to whom it is directed "is not to stay till he has finished the letter his pen is tracing," say the Constitutions; "he must give instant compliance, so that holy obedience may be perfect in us in every point—in execution, in will, in intellect."<sup>4</sup> Obedience is styled "the tomb of the will," "a blessed blindness, which causes the soul to see the road to salvation," and the members of the society are taught to "immolate their will as a sheep is

sacrificed." The Jesuit is to be in the hands of his superior, "as the axe is in the hands of the wood-cutter," or "as a staff is in the hands of an old man, which serves him wherever and in whatever thing he is pleased to use it." In fine, the Constitutions enjoin that "they who live under obedience shall permit themselves to be moved and directed under Divine Providence by their superiors just as if they were a corpse, which allows itself to be moved and handled in any way."<sup>5</sup> The annals of mankind do not furnish another example of a despotism so finished. We know of no other instance in which the members of the body are so numerous, or the ramifications so wide, and yet the centralisation and cohesion so perfect.

We have traced at some length the long and severe discipline which every member must undergo before being admitted into the select class that by way of eminence constitute the society. Before arriving on the threshold of the inner circle of Jesuitism, three times has the candidate passed through that terrible ordeal—first as a novice, secondly as a scholar, thirdly as a coadjutor. Is his training held to be complete when he is admitted among the *Professed*? No: a fourth time must he undergo the same dreadful process. He is thrown back again into the crucible, and kept amid its fires, till pride, and obstinacy, and self-will, and love of ease—till judgment, soul, and conscience have all been purged out of him, and then he comes forth, fully refined, completely attempered and hardened, "a vessel fully fitted" for the use of his General; prepared to execute with a conscience that never remonstrates his most terrible command, and to undertake with a will that never rebels the most difficult and dangerous enterprises he may assign him. In the words of an eloquent writer—"Talk of drilling and discipline! why, the drilling and the discipline which gave to Alexander the men that marched in triumph from Macedon to the Indus; to Cæsar, the men that marched in triumph from Rome to the wilds of Caledonia; to Hannibal, the men that marched in triumph from Carthage to Rome; to Napoleon, the men whose achievements surpassed in brilliance the united glories of the soldiers of Macedon, of Carthage, and of Rome; and to Wellington, the men who smote into the dust the very flower of Napoleon's chivalry—why, the drilling and the discipline of all these combined cannot, in point of stern, rigid, and protracted severity, for a moment be compared to the drilling and discipline which fitted and moulded men for

<sup>1</sup> "Locum Dei tenenti." (*Constit. Societatis Jesu*, pars. vii., cap. 4, sec. 2.)

<sup>2</sup> *Constit. Societatis Jesu*, pars. vii., cap. 1, sec. 1.

<sup>3</sup> Chalotais, *Report Const. Jesuits*, p. 62.

<sup>4</sup> *Constit. Societatis Jesu*, pars. vi., cap. 1, sec. 1.

<sup>5</sup> *Constit. Societatis Jesu*, pars. vi., cap. 1, sec. 1.



## REALITIES AND COUNTERFEITS.

393

becoming full members of the militant institute of the Jesuits."<sup>1</sup>

Such Loyola saw was the corps that was needed to confront the armies of Protestantism and turn back the advancing tide of light and liberty. Touched with a Divine fire, the disciples of the Gospel attained at once to a complete renunciation of self, and a magnanimity of soul which enabled them to brave all dangers and endure all sufferings, and to bear the standard of a recovered Gospel over deserts and oceans, in the midst of hunger and pestilence, of dungeons and racks and fiery stakes. It was vain to think of overcoming warriors like these unless by combatants of an equal temper and

spirit, and Loyola set himself to fashion such. He could not clothe them with the panoply of light, he could not inspire them with that holy and invincible courage which springs from faith, nor could he so enkindle their souls with the love of the Saviour, and the joys of the life eternal, as that they should despise the sufferings of time; but he could give them their counterfeits: he could enkindle them with fanaticism, inspire them with a Luciferian ambition, and so pervert and indurate their souls by evil maxims, and long and rigorous training, that they should be insensible to shame and pain, and would welcome suffering and death. Such were the weapons of the men he sent forth to the battle.

## CHAPTER IV.

## MORAL CODE OF THE JESUITS—PROBABILISM, ETC.

The Jesuit cut off from Country—from Family—from Property—from the Pope even—The End Sanctifies the Means—The First Great Commandment and Jesuit Morality—When may a Man Love God?—Second Great Commandment—Doctrine of Probabilism—The Jesuit Casuists—Pascal—The Direction of the Intention—Illustrative Cases furnished by Jesuit Doctors—Marvellous Virtue of the Doctrine—A Pious Assassination!

WE have not yet surveyed the full and perfect equipment of those troops which Loyola sent forth to prosecute the war against Protestantism. Nothing was left unthought of and unprovided for which might assist them in covering their opponents with defeat, and crowning themselves with victory. They were set free from every obligation, whether imposed by the natural or the Divine law. Every stratagem, artifice, and disguise were lawful to men in whose favour all distinction between right and wrong had been abolished. They might assume as many shapes as Proteus, and exhibit as many colours as the chameleon. They stood apart and alone among the human race. First of all, they were cut off from country. Their vow bound them to go to whatever land their General might send them, and to remain there as long as he might appoint. Their country was the society. They were cut off from family and friends. Their vow taught them to forget their father's house, and to esteem themselves holy only when every affection and desire which nature had planted in their breasts had been plucked up by the roots. They were cut off from property and wealth. For although the society

was immensely rich, its individual members possessed nothing. Nor could they cherish the hope of ever becoming personally wealthy, seeing they had taken a vow of perpetual poverty. If it chanced that a rich relative died, and left them his heirs, the General relieved them of their vow, and sent them back into the world, for so long a time as might enable them to take possession of the wealth of which they had been named the heirs; but this done, they returned laden with their booty, and, resuming their vow as Jesuits, laid every penny of their newly-acquired riches at the feet of the General.

They were cut off, moreover, from the State. They were discharged from all civil and national relationships and duties. They were under a higher code than the national one—the *Institutions* namely, which Loyola had edited, and the Spirit of God had inspired; and they were the subjects of a higher monarch than the sovereign of the nation—their own General. Nay, more, the Jesuits were cut off even from the Pope. For if their General "held the place of the Omnipotent God," much more did he hold the place of "his Vicar." And so was it in fact; for soon the members of the Society of Jesus came to recognise no laws but their own, and though at their first formation they professed to have no

<sup>1</sup> *The Jesuits*. By Alexander Duff, D.D., LL.D. Pages 19, 20. Edin., 1869.

end but the defence and glory of the Papal See, it came to pass when they grew to be strong that, instead of serving the tiara, they compelled the tiara to serve the society, and made their own wealth, power, and dominion the one grand object of their existence. They were a Papacy within the Papacy—a Papacy whose organisation was more perfect, whose instincts were more cruel, whose workings were more mysterious, and whose dominion was more destructive than that of the old Papacy.

So stood the Society of Jesus. A deep and wide gulf separated it from all other communities and interests. Set free from the love of family, from the ties of kindred, from the claims of country, and from the rule of law, careless of the happiness they might destroy, and the misery and pain and woe they might inflict, the members were at liberty, without control or challenge, to pursue their terrible end, which was the dethronement of every other power, the extinction of every other interest but their own, and the reduction of mankind into abject slavery, that on the ruins of the liberty, the virtue, and the happiness of the world they might raise themselves to supreme, unlimited dominion. But we have not yet detailed all the appliances with which the Jesuits were careful to furnish themselves for the execution of their unspeakably audacious and diabolical design. In the midst of these abysses there opens to our eye a yet profounder abyss. To enjoy exemption from all human authority and from every earthly law was to them a small matter; nothing would satisfy their lust for licence save the entire abrogation of the moral law, and nothing would appease their pride save to trample under foot the majesty of heaven. We now come to speak of the moral code of the Jesuits.

The key-note of their ethical code is the famous maxim that *the end sanctifies the means*. Before that maxim the eternal distinction of right and wrong vanishes. Not only do the stringency and sanctions of human law dissolve and disappear, but the authority and majesty of the Decalogue are overthrown. There are no conceivable crime, villany, and atrocity which this maxim will not justify. Nay, such become dutiful and holy, provided they be done for “the greater glory of God,” by which the Jesuit means the honour, interest, and advancement of his society. In short, the Jesuit may do whatever he has a mind to do, all human and Divine laws notwithstanding. This is a very grave charge, but the evidence of its truth is, unhappily, too abundant, and the difficulty lies in making a selection.

What the Popes have attempted to do by the

plenitude of their power, namely, to make sin to be no sin, the Jesuit doctors have done by their casuistry. “The first and great commandment in the law,” said the same Divine Person who proclaimed it from Sinai, “is to love the Lord thy God.” The Jesuit casuists have set men free from the obligation to love God. Escobar<sup>1</sup> collects the different sentiments of the famous divines of the Society of Jesus upon the question, *When is a man obliged to have actually an affection for God?* The following are some of these:—Suarez says, “It is sufficient a man love him before he dies, not assigning any particular time. Vasquez, that it is sufficient even at the point of death. Others, when a man receives his baptism: others, when he is obliged to be contrite: others, upon holidays. But our Father Castro-Palao<sup>2</sup> disputes all these opinions, and that justly. Hurtado de Mendoza pretends that a man is obliged to do it once every year. Our Father Coninck believes a man to be obliged once in three or four years. Henriquez, once in five years. But Filiutius affirms it to be probable that in rigour a man is not obliged every five years. When then? He leaves the point to the wise.” “We are not,” says Father Sirmond, “so much commanded to love him as not to hate him.”<sup>3</sup> Thus do the Jesuit theologians make void “the first and great commandment in the law.”

The second commandment in the law is, “Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.” This second great commandment meets with no more respect at the hands of the Jesuits than the first. Their morality dashes both tables of the law in pieces; charity to man it makes void equally with the love of God. The methods by which this may be done are innumerable.<sup>4</sup>

The first of these is termed *probabilism*. This is

<sup>1</sup> Father Antoine Escobar, of Mendoza. He is said by his friends to have been a good man, and a laborious student. He compiled a work in six volumes, entitled *Exposition of Uncontroverted Opinions in Moral Theology*. It afforded a rich field for the satire of Pascal. Its characteristic absurdity is that its questions uniformly exhibit two faces—an affirmative and a negative—so that *escobarde* became a synonym in France for *duplicité*.

<sup>2</sup> Ferdinand de Castro-Palao was a Jesuit of Spain, and author of a work on *Virtues and Vices*, published in 1631.

<sup>3</sup> Escobar, tr. 1, ex. 2, n. 21; and tr. 5, ex. 4, n. 8. Sirmond, *Def. Virt.*, tr. 2, sec. 1.

<sup>4</sup> It is of no avail to object that these are the sentiments of individual Jesuits, and that it is not fair to impute them to the society. It was a particular rule in the Company of Jesus, “that nothing should be published by any of its members without the approbation of their superiors.” An express order was made obliging them to this in France by Henry III., 1583, confirmed by Henry IV., 1603, and by Louis XIII., 1612. So that the whole fraternity became responsible for all the doctrines taught in the books of its individual members, unless they were expressly condemned.

a device which enables a man to commit any act, be it ever so manifest a breach of the moral and Divine law, without the least restraint of conscience, remorse of mind, or guilt before God. What is probabilism? By way of answer we shall suppose that a man has a great mind to do a certain act, of the lawfulness of which he is in doubt. He finds that there are two opinions upon the point: the one *probably* true, to the effect that the act is lawful; the other *more probably* true, to the effect that the act is sinful. Under the Jesuit regimen the man is at liberty to act upon the *probable* opinion. The act is probably right, but more probably wrong, nevertheless he is safe in doing it, in virtue of the doctrine of probabilism. It is important to ask, what makes an opinion probable? To make an opinion probable a Jesuit finds easy indeed. If a single doctor has pronounced in its favour, though a score of doctors may have condemned it, or if the man can imagine in his own mind something like a tolerable reason for doing the act, the opinion that it is lawful becomes probable. It will be hard to name an act for which a Jesuit authority may not be produced, and harder still to find a man whose invention is so poor as not to furnish him with what he deems a good reason for doing what he is inclined to, and therefore it may be pronounced impossible to instance a deed, however manifestly opposed to the light of nature and the law of God, which may not be committed under the shield of the monstrous dogma of probabilism.<sup>1</sup>

We are neither indulging in satire nor incurring the charge of false-witness-bearing in this picture of Jesuit theology. "A person may do what he considers allowable," says Emmanuel Sa, of the Society of Jesus, "according to a probable opinion, although the contrary may be the more probable one. The opinion of a single grave doctor is all that is requisite." A yet greater doctor, Filiutius, of Rome, confirms him in this. "It is allowable," says he, "to follow the less probable opinion, even though it be the less safe one. That is the common judgment of modern authors." "Of two contrary opinions," says Paul Laymann, "touching the legality or illegality of any human action, every one may follow in practice or in action that which he should prefer, although it may appear to the agent himself less probable in theory." He adds: "A learned person may give contrary advice to different persons according to contrary probable opinions,

whilst he still preserves discretion and prudence." We may say with Pascal, "These Jesuit casuists give us elbow-room at all events!"<sup>2</sup>

*It is and it is not* is the motto of this theology. It is the true Lesbian rule which shapes itself according to that which we wish to measure by it. Would we have any action to be sinful, the Jesuit moralist turns this side of the code to us; would we have it to be lawful, he turns the other side. Right and wrong are put thus in our own power; we can make the same action a sin or a duty as we please, or as we deem it expedient. To steal the property, slander the character, violate the chastity, or spill the blood of a fellow-creature, is *most probably* wrong, but let us imagine some good to be got by it, and it is *probably* right. The Jesuit writers, for the sake of those who are dull of understanding and slow to apprehend the freedom they bring them, have gone into particulars and compiled lists of actions, esteemed sinful, unnatural, and abominable by the moral sense of all nations hitherto, but which, in virtue of this new morality, are no longer so, and they have explained how these actions may be safely done, with a minuteness of detail and a luxuriance of illustration, in which it were tedious in some cases, immodest in others, to follow them.

One would think that this was licence enough. What more can the Jesuit need, or what more can he possibly have, seeing by a little effort of invention he can overleap every human and Divine barrier, and commit the most horrible crimes, on the mightiest possible scale, and neither feel remorse of conscience nor fear of punishment? But this unbounded liberty of wickedness did not content the sons of Loyola. They panted for a liberty, if possible, yet more boundless; they wished to be released from the easy condition of imagining some good end for the wickedness they wished to perpetrate, and to be free to sin without the trouble of assigning even to themselves any end at all. This they have accomplished by the method of *directing the intention*.

This is a new ethical science, unknown to those ages which were not privileged to bask in the illuminating rays of the Society of Jesus, and it is as simple as convenient. It is the soul, they argue, that does the act, so far as it is moral or immoral. As regards the body's share in it, neither virtue nor vice can be predicated of it. If, therefore, while the hand is shedding blood, or the tongue is calumniating character, or uttering a falsehood, the soul can so abstract itself from what the body

<sup>1</sup> Probabilism will be denied, but it has not been renounced. In a late publication a member of the society has actually attempted to vindicate it. See *De l'Existence et de l'Institute des Jésuites*. Par le R. P. de Ravignan, de la Compagnie de Jésus. Paris, 1845. Page 83.

<sup>2</sup> Pascal, *Provincial Letters*, p. 70; Edin., 1847.

is doing as to occupy itself the while with some holy theme, or fix its meditation upon some benefit or advantage likely to arise from the deed, which it knows, or at least suspects, the body is at that moment engaged in doing, the soul contracts

break with him at once—such conduct is diabolical. This holds true, without exception, of age, sex, or rank. But when the person is not of such a wretched disposition as this, we try to put in practice our method of *directing the intention*, which



BLAISE PASCAL. (From the Portrait in the Edition of his Works published in Paris, 1819.)

neither guilt nor stain, and the man runs no risk of ever being called to account for the murder, or theft, or calumny, by God, or of incurring his displeasure on that ground. We are not satirising; we are simply stating the morality of the Jesuits. "We never," says the Father Jesuit in Pascal's *Letters*, "suffer such a thing as the formal intention to sin with the sole design of sinning; and if any person whatever should persist in having no other end but evil in the evil that he does, we

simply consists in his proposing to himself, as the end of his actions, some allowable object. Not that we do not endeavour, as far as we can, to dissuade men from doing things forbidden; but when we cannot prevent the action, we at least purify the motive, and thus correct the viciousness of the means by the goodness of the end. Such is the way in which our Fathers [of the society] have contrived to permit those acts of violence to which men usually resort in vindication of their honour.

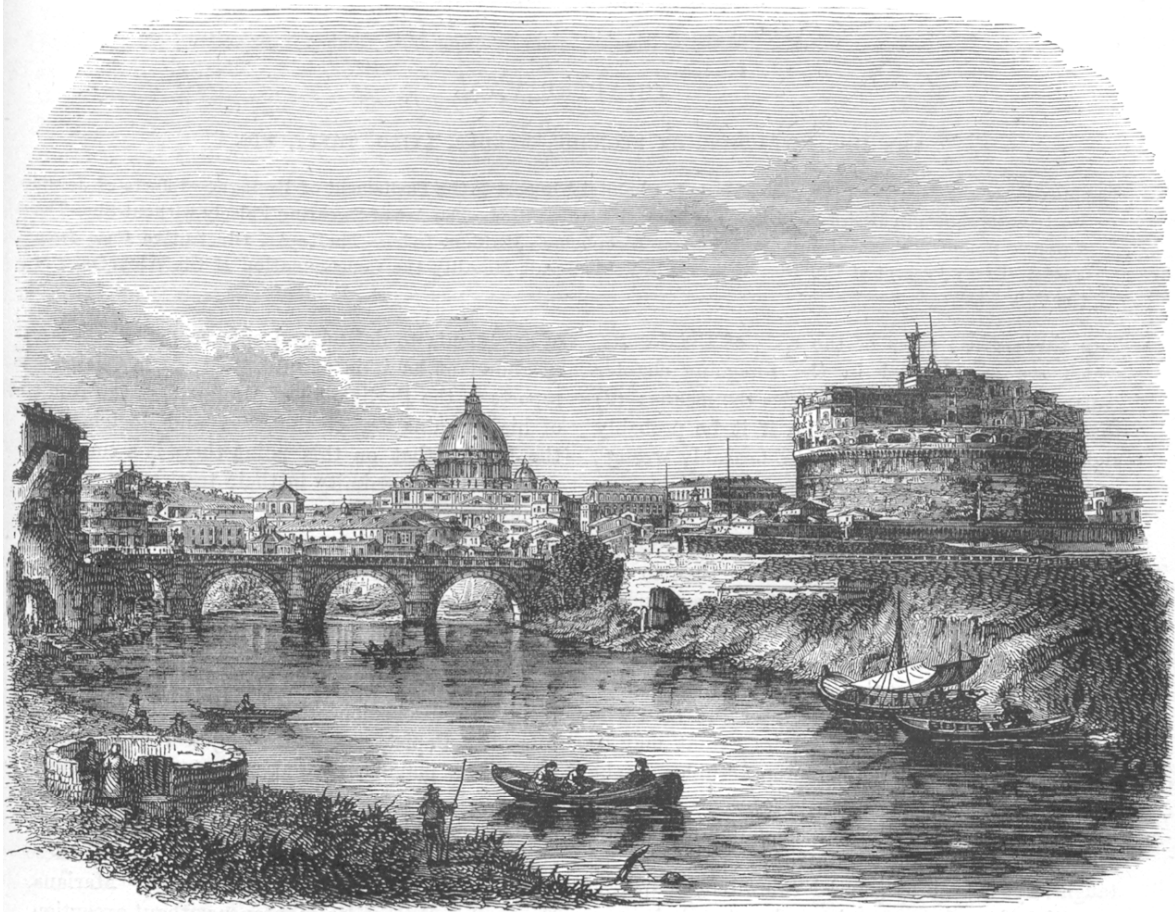


## DIRECTING THE INTENTION.

397

They have no more to do than to turn off the intention from the desire of vengeance, which is criminal, and to direct it to a desire to defend their honour, which, according to us, is quite warrantable. And in this way our doctors discharge all their duty towards God and towards man. By permitting the action they gratify the world; and by purifying the intention they give satisfaction

for evil, but with that of preserving his honour." Lessius<sup>3</sup> observes that if a man has received a blow on the face, he must on no account have an intention to avenge himself; but he may lawfully have an intention to avert infamy, and may, with that view, repel the insult immediately, even at the point of the sword. "If your enemy is disposed to injure you," says Escobar, "you have no



VIEW OF ROME, SHOWING THE CASTLE OF ST. ANGELO, AND ST. PETER'S IN THE DISTANCE.

to the Gospel. This is a secret, sir, which was entirely unknown to the ancients; the world is indebted for the discovery entirely to our doctors. You understand it now, I hope."<sup>1</sup>

Let us take a few illustrative cases, but only such as Jesuit casuists themselves have furnished. "A military man," says Reginald,<sup>2</sup> "may demand satisfaction on the spot from the person who has injured him, not indeed with the intention of rendering evil

right to wish his death by a movement of hatred, though you may to save yourself from harm." And says Hurtado de Mendoza,<sup>4</sup> "We may pray God to visit with speedy death those who are bent on persecuting us, if there is no other way of escaping from it." "An incumbent," says Gaspar de Hurtado,<sup>5</sup> "may without any mortal sin desire the decease of a life-renter on his benefice, and a son

<sup>1</sup> *The Provincial Letters*. Letter vii., p. 96; Edin., 1847.

<sup>2</sup> *In Praxi*, livr. xxi., num. 62.

<sup>3</sup> *De Just.*, livr. ii., c. 9, d. 12, n. 79.

<sup>4</sup> *De Spe*, vol. ii., d. 15, sec. 4.

<sup>5</sup> *De Sub. Pecc.*, diff. 9.

that of a father, and rejoice when it happens, provided always it is for the sake of the profit that is to accrue from the event, and not from personal aversion." Sanchez teaches that it is lawful to kill our adversary in a duel, or even privately, when he intends to deprive us of our honour or property

unjustly in a law-suit, or by chicanery, and when there is no other way of preserving them.<sup>1</sup> It is equally right to kill in a private way a false accuser, and his witness, and even the judge who has been bribed to favour them. "A most pious assassination!" exclaims Pascal.

## CHAPTER V.

### THE JESUIT TEACHING ON REGICIDE, MURDER, LYING, THEFT, ETC.

The Maxims of the Jesuits on Regicide—M. de la Chalotais' Report to the Parliament of Bretagne—Effects of Jesuit Doctrine as shown in History—Doctrine of Mental Equivocation—The Art of Swearing Falsely without Sin—The Seventh Commandment—Jesuit Doctrine on Blasphemy—Murder—Lying—Theft—An Illustrative Case from Pascal—Every Precept of the Decalogue made Void—Jesuit Morality the Consummation of the Wickedness of the Fall.

THE three great rules of the code of the Jesuits, which we have stated in the foregoing chapter—namely, (1) that the end justifies the means; (2) that it is safe to do any action if it be probably right, although it may be more probably wrong; and (3) that if one know to direct the intention aright, there is no deed, be its moral character what it may, which one may not do—may seem to give a licence of acting so immense that to add thereto were an altogether superfluous, and indeed an impossible task. But if the liberty with which these three maxims endow the Jesuit cannot be made larger, its particular applications may nevertheless be made more pointed, and the man who holds back from using it in all its extent may be emboldened, despite his remaining scruples, or the dullness of his intellectual perceptions, to avail himself to the utmost of the advantages it offers, "for the greater glory of God." He is to be taught, not merely by general rules, but by specific examples, how he may sin and yet not become sinful; how he may break the law and yet not suffer the penalty. But, further, these sons of Loyola are the kings of the world, and the sole heirs of all its wealth, honours, and pleasures; and whatever law, custom, sacred and venerable office, august and kingly authority, may stand between them and their rightful lordship over mankind, they are at liberty to throw down and tread into the dust as a vile and accursed thing. The moral maxims of the Jesuits are to be put in force against kings as well as against peasants.

The lawfulness of killing excommunicated, that is Protestant, kings, the Jesuit writers have been at great pains to maintain, and by a great variety

of arguments to defend and enforce. The proof is as abundant as it is painful. M. de la Chalotais reports to the Parliament of Bretagne, as the result of his examination of the laws and doctrines of the Jesuits, that on this point there is a complete and startling unanimity in their teaching. By the same logical track do the whole host of Jesuit writers arrive at the same terrible conclusion, the slaughter, namely, of the sovereign on whom the Pope has pronounced sentence of deposition. If he shall take meekly his extrusion from power, and seek neither to resist nor revenge his being hurled from his throne, his life may be spared; but should "he persist in disobedience," says M. de la Chalotais, himself a Papist, and addressing a Popish Parliament, "he may be treated as a tyrant, in which case anybody may kill him."<sup>2</sup> Such is the course of reasoning established by all authors of the society, who have written *ex professo* on these subjects—Bellarmino, Suarez, Molina, Mariana, Santarel—all the Ultramontanes without exception, since the establishment of the society."<sup>3</sup>

But have not the writers of this school expressed in no measured terms their abhorrence of murder? Have they not loudly exclaimed against the sacrilege of touching him on whom the Church's anointing oil has been poured as king? In short, do they not

<sup>1</sup> Sanchez, *Mor. Theol.*, livr. ii., c. 39, n. 7.

<sup>2</sup> "A quocumque privato protest interfici."—Suarez (i., 6, ch. 4)—Chalotais, *Report Constit. Jesuits*, p. 84.

<sup>3</sup> "There are," adds M. de la Chalotais, in a foot-note, "nearly 20,000 Jesuits in the world [1761], all imbued with Ultramontane doctrines, and the doctrine of murder." That is more than a century ago. Their numbers have prodigiously increased since.

## REGICIDE AND MURDER.

399

forbid and condemn the crime of regicide? Yes: this is true; but they protest with a warmth that is fitted to awaken suspicion. Rome can take back her anointing, and when she has stripped the monarch of his office he becomes the lawful victim of her consecrated dagger. On what grounds, the Jesuits demand, can the killing of one who is no longer a king be called regicide? Suarez tells us that when a king is deposed he is no longer to be regarded as a king, but as a tyrant: "he therefore loses his authority, and from that moment may be lawfully killed." Nor is the opinion of the Jesuit Mariana less decided. Speaking of a prince, he says: "If he should overthrow the religion of the country, and introduce a public enemy within the State, *I shall never consider that man to have done wrong, who, favouring the public wishes, would attempt to kill him.* . . . It is useful that princes should be made to know, that if they oppress the State and become intolerable by their vices and their pollution, they hold their lives upon this tenure, that *to put them to death is not only laudable, but a glorious action.* . . . It is a glorious thing to exterminate this pestilent and mischievous race from the community of men."<sup>1</sup>

Wherever the Jesuits have planted missions, opened seminaries, and established colleges, they have been careful to inculcate these principles in the minds of the youth; thus sowing the seeds of future tumults, revolutions, regicides, and wars. These evil fruits have appeared sometimes sooner, sometimes later, but they have never failed to show themselves, to the grief of nations and the dismay of kings. John Chatel, who attempted the life of Henry IV., had studied in the College of Clermont, in which the Jesuit Guignard was Professor of Divinity. In the chamber of the would-be regicide, a manuscript of Guignard was found, in which, besides other dangerous articles, that Father approved not only of the assassination of Henry III. by Clement, but also maintained that the same thing ought to be attempted against *le Bearnois*, as he called Henry IV., which occasioned the first banishment of the order out of France, as a society *detestable and diabolical*. The sentence of the Parliament, passed in 1594, ordained "that all the priests and scholars of the College of Clermont, and others calling themselves the Society of Jesus, as being corrupters of youth, disturbers of the public peace, and enemies of the king and State, should depart in three days from their house and college, and in fifteen days out of the whole kingdom."

<sup>1</sup> Mariana, *De Rege et Regis Institutione*, lib. i., cap. 6, p. 61, and lib. i., cap. 7, p. 64; ed. 1640.

But why should we dwell on these written proofs of the disloyal and murderous principles of the Jesuits, when their *acted deeds* bear still more emphatic testimony to the true nature and effects of their principles? We have only to look around, and on every hand the melancholy monuments of these doctrines meet our afflicted sight. To what country of Europe shall we turn where we are not able to track the Jesuit by his bloody foot-prints? What page of modern history shall we open and not read fresh proofs that the Papal doctrine of killing excommunicated kings was not meant to slumber in forgotten tomes, but to be acted out in the living world? We see Henry III. falling by their dagger. Henry IV. perishes by the same consecrated weapon. The King of Portugal dies by their order. The great Prince of Orange is dispatched by their agent, shot down at the door of his own dining-room. How many assassins they sent to England to murder Elizabeth, history attests. That she escaped their machinations is one of the marvels of history. Nor is it only the palaces of monarchs into which they have crept with their doctrines of murder and assassination; the very sanctuary of their own Popes they have defiled with blood. We behold Clement XIV. signing the order for the banishment of the Jesuits, and soon thereafter he is overtaken by their vengeance, and dies by poison. In the Gunpowder Plot we see them deliberately planning to destroy at one blow the nobility and gentry of England. To them we owe those civil wars which for so many years drenched with blood the fair provinces of France. They laid the train of that crowning horror, the St. Bartholomew massacre. Philip II. and the Jesuits share between them the guilt of the "Invincible Armada," which, instead of inflicting the measureless ruin and havoc which its authors intended, by a most merciful Providence became the means of exhausting the treasures and overthrowing the prestige of Spain. What a harvest of plots, tumults, seditions, revolutions, torturings, poisonings, assassinations, regicides, and massacres has Christendom reaped from the seed sown by the Jesuits! Nor can we be sure that we have yet seen the last and greatest of their crimes.

We can bestow only the most cursory glance at the teaching of the Jesuits under the other heads of moral duty. Let us take their doctrine of mental reservation. Nothing can be imagined more heinous and, at the same time, more dangerous. "The doctrine of equivocation," says Blackwell, "is for the consolation of afflicted Roman Catholics and the instruction of all the godly." It has been of special use to them when residing among infidels

and heretics. In heathen countries, as China and Malabar, they have professed conformity to the rites and the worship of paganism, while remaining Roman Catholics at heart, and they have taught their converts to venerate their former deities in appearance, on the strength of directing aright the intention, and the pious fraud of concealing a crucifix under their clothes.

Equivocation they have carried into civil life as well as into religion. "A man may swear," says Sanchez, "that he hath not done a thing though he really have, by understanding within himself that he did it not *on such and such a day*, or *before he was born*; or by reflecting on some other circumstance of the like nature; and yet the words he shall make use of shall not have a sense implying any such thing; and this is a thing of great convenience on many occasions, and is always justifiable when it is necessary or advantageous in anything that concerns a man's health, honour, or estate."<sup>1</sup> Filiutius, in his *Moral Questions*, asks, "Is it wrong to use equivocation in swearing? I answer, first, that it is not in itself a sin to use equivocation in swearing. . . . This is the common doctrine after Suarez." "Is it perjury or sin to equivocate in a just cause?" he further asks. "It is not perjury," he answers. "As, for example, in the case of a man who has outwardly made a promise without the intention of promising; if he is asked whether he has promised, he may deny it, *meaning that he has not promised with a binding promise*; and thus he may swear."

Filiutius asks yet again, "With what precaution is equivocation to be used? When we begin, for instance, to say, *I swear*, we must insert in a subdued tone the mental restriction, *that to-day*, and then continue aloud, *I have not eaten such a thing*; or, *I swear*—then insert, *I say*—then conclude in the same loud voice, *that I have not done this or that thing*; for thus the whole speech is most true."<sup>2</sup> What an admirable lesson in the art of speaking the truth to one's self, and lying and swearing falsely to everybody else!<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Sanch. *Op. Mor.*, pars. 2, lib. iii., cap. 6.

<sup>2</sup> *Mor. Quæst. de Christianis Officiis et Casibus Conscientiæ*, tom. ii., tr. 25, cap. 11, n. 321—328; Lugduni, 1633.

<sup>3</sup> It is easy to see how these precepts may be put in practice in swearing the oath of allegiance, or promising to obey the law, or engaging not to attack the institutions of the State, or to obey the rules and further the ends of any society, lay or clerical, into which the Jesuit may enter. The swearer has only to repeat aloud the prescribed words, and insert silently such other words, at the fitting places, as shall make void the oath, clause by clause—nay, bind the swearer to the very opposite of that which the administrator of the oath intends to pledge him to.

We shall offer no comment on the teaching of the Jesuits under the head of the seventh commandment. The doctrines of the society which relate to chastity are screened from exposure by the very enormity of their turpitude. We pass them as we would the open grave, whose putrid breath kills all who inhale it. Let all who value the sweetness of a pure imagination, and the joy of a conscience undefiled, shun the confessional as they would the chamber in which the plague is shut up, or the path in which lurks the deadly scorpion. The teaching of the Jesuits—everywhere deadly—is here a poison that consumes flesh, and bones, and soul.

Which precept of the Decalogue is it that the theology of the Jesuits does not set aside? We are commanded "to fear the great and dreadful name of the Lord our God." The Jesuit Bauny teaches us to blaspheme it. "If one has been hurried by passion into *cursing and doing despite to his Maker*, it may be determined that he has only sinned *venially*."<sup>4</sup> This is much, but Casnedi goes a little farther. "Do what your conscience tells you to be good, and commanded," says this Jesuit; "if through invincible error you believe lying or blasphemy to be commanded by God, *blaspheme*."<sup>5</sup> The licence given by the Jesuits to regicide we have already seen; not less ample is the provision their theology makes for the perpetration of ordinary homicides and murders. Reginald says it is lawful to kill a false witness, seeing otherwise one should be killed by him.<sup>6</sup> Parents who seek to turn their children from the faith, says Fagundez, "*may justly be killed by them*."<sup>7</sup> The Jesuit Amicus teaches that it is lawful for an ecclesiastic, or one in a religious order, *to kill a calumniator* when other means of defence are wanting.<sup>8</sup> And Airult extends the same privilege to laymen. If one brings an impeachment before a prince or judge against another, and if that other cannot by any means avert the injury to his character, *he may kill him secretly*. He fortifies his opinion by the authority of Bannez, who gives the same latitude to the right of defence, with this slight qualification, that the calumniator should first be warned that he desist from his slander, *and if he will not, he should be killed, not openly, on account of the scandal, but secretly*.<sup>9</sup>

<sup>4</sup> Stephen Bauny, *Som. des Pêches*; Rouen, 1653.

<sup>5</sup> *Crisis Theol.*, tom. i., disp. 6, sect. 2, § 1, n. 59.

<sup>6</sup> *Præcis Fori Pœnit.*, tom. ii., lib. xxi, cap. 5, n. 57.

<sup>7</sup> *In Præcep. Decal.*, tom. i., lib. iv., cap. 2, n. 7, 8.

<sup>8</sup> *Cursus Theol.*, tom. v., disp. 36, sec. 5, n. 118.

<sup>9</sup> *Cens.*, pp. 319, 320—*Collation faite à la requête de l'Université de Paris*, 1643; Paris, 1720.



Of a like ample kind is the liberty which the Jesuits permit to be taken with the property of one's neighbour. Dishonesty in all its forms they sanction. They encourage cheats, frauds, purloinings, robberies, by furnishing men with a ready justification of these misdeeds, and especially by persuading their votaries that if they will only take the trouble of doing them in the way of directing the *intention* according to their instructions, they need not fear being called to a reckoning for them hereafter. The Jesuit Emmanuel Sa teaches "that it is not a mortal sin to *take secretly* from him who would give if he were asked;" that "it is *not theft* to take a *small thing* from a husband or a father;" that if one has taken what he *doubts* to have been his own, that *doubt* makes it *probable* that it is *safe to keep it*; that if one, from an urgent necessity, or without causing much loss, *takes wood* from another man's pile, *he is not obliged to restore it*. One who has stolen small things at different times, is not obliged to make restitution till such time as they amount together to a considerable sum. But should the purloiner feel restitution burdensome, it may comfort him to know that some Fathers *deny it with probability*.<sup>1</sup>

The case of merchants, whose gains may not be increasing so fast as they could wish, has been kindly considered by the Fathers. Francis Tolet says that if a man cannot sell his wine at a fair price—that is, at a fair profit—he may mix a little water with his wine, or diminish his measure, and sell it for pure wine of full measure. Of course, if it be lawful to mix wine, it is lawful to adulterate all other articles of merchandise, or to diminish the weight, and go on vending as if the balance were just and the article genuine. Only the trafficker in spurious goods, with false balances, must be careful not to tell a lie; or if he should be compelled to equivocate, he must do it in accordance with the rules laid down by the Fathers for enabling one to say what is not true without committing falsehood.<sup>2</sup>

Domestic servants also have been taken by the Fathers under the shield of their casuistry. Should a servant deem his wages not enough, or the food, clothing, and other necessities provided for him not equal to that which is provided for servants of similar rank in other houses, he may recompense himself by abstracting from his master's property as much as shall make his wages commensurate

with his services. So has Valerius Reginald decided.<sup>3</sup>

It is fair, however, that the pupil be cautioned that this lesson cannot safely be put in practice against his teacher. The story of John d'Alba, related by Pascal, shows that the Fathers do not relish these doctrines *in praxi* nearly so well as *in thesi*, when they themselves are the sufferers by them. D'Alba was a servant to the Fathers in the College of Clermont, in the Rue St. Jacques, and thinking that his wages were not equal to his merits, he stole somewhat from his masters to make up the discrepancy, never dreaming that they would make a criminal of him for following their approved rules. However, they threw him into prison on a charge of larceny. He was brought to trial on the 16th April, 1647. He confessed before the court to having taken some pewter plates, but maintained that the act was not to be regarded as a theft, on the strength of this same doctrine of Father Bauny, which he produced before the judges, with attestation from another of the Fathers, under whom he had studied these cases of conscience. Whereupon the judge, M. de Montrouge, gave sentence as follows:—"That the prisoner should not be acquitted upon the writings of these Fathers, containing a doctrine so unlawful, pernicious, and contrary to all laws, natural, Divine, and human, such as might confound all families, and authorise all domestic frauds and infidelities;" but that the over-faithful disciple "should be whipt before the College gate of Clermont by the common executioner, who at the same time should burn all the writings of those Fathers treating of theft; and that they should be prohibited to teach any such doctrine again *under pain of death*."<sup>4</sup>

But we should swell beyond all reasonable limits our enumeration, were we to quote even a tithe of the "moral maxims" of the Jesuits. There is not one in the long catalogue of sins and crimes which their casuistry does not sanction. Pride, ambition, avarice, luxury, bribery, and a host of vices which we cannot specify, and some of which are too horrible to be mentioned, find in these Fathers their patrons and defenders. The alchemists of the Middle Ages boasted that their art enabled them to operate on the essence of things, and to change what was vile into what was noble. But the still darker art of the Jesuits acts in the reverse order; it changes all that is noble into all that is vile. Theirs is an accursed alchemy by which they

<sup>1</sup> *Aphorismi Confessariorum—verbo furtum*, n. 3—8; Coloniae, 1590.

<sup>2</sup> *Instructio Sacerdotum—De Septem Peccat. Mort.*, cap. 49, n. 5; Romae, 1601.

<sup>3</sup> *Praxis Fori Penitentialis*, lib. xxv., cap. 44, n. 555; Lugduni, 1620.

<sup>4</sup> Pascal, Letter vi., pp. 90, 91; Edin., 1847.

transmute good into evil, and virtue into vice. There is no destructive agency with which the world is liable to be visited, that penetrates so deep, or inflicts so remediless a ruin, as the morality of the Jesuits. The tornado sweeps along over the surface of the globe, leaving the earth naked and

effaced and forgotten in the greater splendour and the more solid strength of the restored structures. Revolution may overturn thrones, abolish laws, and break in pieces the framework of society; but when the fury of faction has spent its rage, order emerges from the chaos, law resumes its supremacy, and the



ST. FRANCIS XAVIER.

bare as before tree or shrub beautified it; but the summers of after-years re-clothe it with verdure and beautify it with flowers, and make it smile as sweetly as before. The earthquake overturns the dwelling of man, and swallows up the proudest of his cities; but his skill and power survive the shock, and when the destroyer has passed, the architect sets up again the fallen palace, and rebuilds the ruined city, and the catastrophe is

institutions which had been destroyed in the hour of madness, are restored in the hour of calm wisdom that succeeds. But the havoc the Jesuit inflicts is irremediable. It has nothing in it counteractive or restorative; it is only evil. It is not upon the works of man or the institutions of man merely that it puts forth its fearfully destructive power; it is upon man himself. It is not the body of man that it strikes, like the pestilence; it is the soul.

## THE GOAL OF JESUITISM.

403

It is not a part, but the whole of man that it consigns to corruption and ruin. Conscience it destroys, knowledge it extinguishes, the very power of discerning between right and wrong it takes away, and shuts up the man in a prison whence no created agency or influence can set him free.

man. The full triumph of Jesuitism would leave nothing spiritual, nothing moral, nothing intellectual, nothing strictly and properly human existing upon the earth. Man it would change into the animal, impelled by nothing but appetites and passions, and these more fierce and cruel than those of the tiger.



A GROUP OF JESUITS.

The Fall defaced the image of God in which man was made; we say, defaced; it did not totally obliterate or extinguish it. Jesuitism, more terrible than the Fall, totally effaces from the soul of man the image of God. Of the "knowledge, righteousness, and true holiness" in which man was made it leaves not a trace. It plucks up by its very roots the moral constitution which God gave

Society would become simply a herd of wolves, lawless, ravenous, greedy of each other's blood, and perpetually in quest of prey. Even Jesuitism itself would perish, devoured by its own progeny. Our earth at last would be simply a vast sepulchre, moving round the sun in its annual circuit, its bosom as joyless, dreary, and waste as are those silent spaces through which it rolls.

## CHAPTER VI.

## THE "SECRET INSTRUCTIONS" OF THE JESUITS.

The Jesuit Soldier in Armour complete—*Secret Instructions*—How to Plant their First Establishments—Taught to Court the Parochial Clergy—to Visit the Hospitals—to Find out the Wealth of their several Districts—to make Purchases in another Name—to Draw the Youth round them—to Supplant the Older Orders—How to get the Friendship of Great Men—How to Manage Princes—How to Direct their Policy—Conduct their Embassies—Appoint their Servants, &c.—Taught to Affect a Great Show of Lowliness.

So far we have traced the enrolment and training of that mighty army which Loyola had called into existence for the conquest of Protestantism. Their leader, who was quite as much the shrewd calculator as the fiery fanatic, took care before sending his soldiers into the field to provide them with armour, every way fitted for the combatants they were to meet, and the campaign they were to wage. The war in which they were to be occupied was one against right and truth, against knowledge and liberty, and where could weapons be found for the successful prosecution of a conflict like this, save in the old-established arsenal of sophisms?

The schoolmen, those Vulcans of the Middle Ages, had forged these weapons with the hammers of their speculation on the anvil of their subtlety, and having made them sharp of edge, and given them an incomparable flexibility, they stored them up, and kept them in reserve against the great coming day of battle. To this armoury Loyola, and the chiefs that succeeded him in command, had recourse. But not content with these weapons as the schoolmen had left them, the Jesuit doctors put them back again into the fire; they kept them in a furnace heated seven times, till every particle of the dross of right and truth that cleaved to them had been purged out, and they had acquired a flexibility absolutely and altogether perfect, and a keenness of edge unattained before, and were now deemed every way fit for the hands that were to wield them, and every way worthy of the cause in which they were to be drawn. They would cut through shield and helmet, through body and soul of the foe.

Let us survey the soldier of Loyola, as he stands in the complete and perfect panoply his General has provided him with. How admirably harnessed for the battle he is to fight! He has his "loins girt about with" mental and verbal equivocation; he has "on the breast-plate of" probabilism; his "feet are shod with the preparation of the" *Secret Instructions*. "Above all, taking the shield of" intention, and rightly directing it, he is "able to

quench all the fiery darts of" human remorse and Divine threatenings. He takes "for an helmet the hope of" Paradise, which has been most surely promised him as the reward of his services; and in his hand he grasps the two-edged sword of a fiery fanaticism, wherewith he is able to cut his way, with prodigious bravery, through truth and righteousness.<sup>1</sup> Verily, the man who has to sustain the onset of soldiers like these, and parry the thrusts of their weapons, had need to be mindful of the ancient admonition, "Take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand."

Shrewd, practical, and precise are the instructions of the Jesuits. First of all they are told to select the best points in that great field, all of which they are in due time to subjugate and possess. That field is Christendom. They are to begin by establishing convents, or colleges, in the chief cities. The great centres of population and wealth secured, the smaller places will be easily occupied.

Should any one ask on what errand the good Fathers have come, they are instructed to make answer that their "sole object is the salvation of souls." What a pious errand! Who would not strive to be the first to welcome to their houses, and to seat at their tables, men whose aims are so unselfish and heavenly? They are to be careful to maintain a humble and submissive deportment; they are to pay frequent visits to the hospitals, the sick-chamber, and the prisons. They are to make great show of charity, and as they have nothing of their own to give to the poor, they are "to go far and near" to receive even the "smallest atoms." These good deeds will not lose their reward if only they take care not to do them in secret. Men will begin to speak of them and say, What a humble, pious, charitable order of men these Fathers of the Society of Jesus are! How unlike the Franciscans and Dominicans, who once a day cared for the sick

<sup>1</sup> See Ephesians vi. 14—17.



## THE "SECRET INSTRUCTIONS."

405

and the poor, but have now forgotten the virtues of a former time, and are grown proud, indolent, luxurious, and rich! Thus the "new-comers," the *Instructions* hint, will supplant the other and older orders, and will receive "the respect and reverence of the best and most eminent in the neighbourhood."<sup>1</sup>

Further, they are enjoined to conduct themselves very deferentially towards the parochial clergy, and not to perform any sacred function till first they have piously and submissively asked the bishop's leave. This will secure their good graces, and dispose the secular clergy to protect them; but by-and-by, when they have ingratiated themselves with the people, they may abate somewhat of this subserviency to the clergy.

The individual Jesuit takes a vow of poverty, but the society takes no such vow, and is qualified to hold property to any amount. Therefore, while seeking the salvation of souls, the members are carefully to note the rich men in the community. They must find out who own the estates in the neighbourhood, and what are their yearly values. They are to secure these estates by gift, if possible; if not, by purchase. When it happens that they "get anything that is considerable, let the purchase be made under a strange name, by some of our friends, that our poverty may still seem the greater."<sup>2</sup> And let our provincial "assign such revenues to some other colleges, more remote, that neither prince nor people may discover anything of our profits"<sup>3</sup>—a device that combines many advantages. Every day their acres will increase, nevertheless their apparent poverty will be as great as ever, and the flow of benefactions and legacies to supply it will remain undiminished, although the sea into which all these rivers run will never be full.

Among the multifarious duties laid upon the Jesuits, special prominence was given to the *instruction of youth*. It was by this arm that they achieved their most brilliant success. "Whisper it sweetly in their [the people's] ears, that they are come to catechise the children *gratis*."<sup>4</sup> Wherever the Jesuits came they opened schools, and gathered the youth around them; but despite their zeal in the work of education, knowledge somehow did not increase. The intellect refused to expand and the genius to open under their tutelage. Kingdoms like Poland, where they became the privileged and

only instructors of youth, instead of taking a higher place in the commonwealth of letters, fell back into mental decrepitude, and lost their rank in the community of nations. The Jesuits communicated to their pupils little besides a knowledge of Latin. History, philosophy, and science were sealed books. They initiated their disciples into the mysteries of probabilism, and the art of directing the intention, and the youth trained in these paths, when old did not depart from them. They dwarfed the intellect and narrowed the understanding, but they gained their end. They stamped anew the Roman impress upon many of the countries of Europe.

The second chapter of the *Instructions* is entitled "What must be done to get the ear and intimacy of great men?" To stand well with monarchs and princes is, of course, a matter of such importance that no stone is to be left unturned to attain it. The *Instructions* here, as we should expect them to be, are full and precise. The members of the Society of Jesus are first of all to imbue princes and great men with the belief that they cannot dispense with their aid if they would maintain the pomp of their State, and the government of their realms. Should princes be filled with a conceit of their own wisdom, the Fathers must find some way of dispelling this egregious delusion. They are to surround them with confessors chosen from their society; but by no means are they to bear hard on the consciences of their royal penitents. They must treat them "sweetly and pleasantly," oftener administering opiates than irritants. They are to study their humours, and if, in the matter of marriage, they should be inclined—as often happens with princes—to contract alliance with their own kindred, they are to smooth their way, by hinting at a dispensation from the Pope, or finding some palliative for the sin from the pharmacopœia of their theology. They may tell them that such marriages, though forbidden to the commonalty, are sometimes allowed to princes, "for the greater glory of God."<sup>5</sup> If a monarch is bent on some enterprise—a war, for example—the issue of which is doubtful, they are to be at pains so to shape their counsel in the matter, that if the affair succeeds they shall have all the praise, and if it misgives the blame shall rest with the king alone. And, lastly, when a vacancy occurs near the throne, they are to take care that the empty post shall be filled by one of the tried friends of the society, of whom they are enjoined to have, at all times, a list in their posses-

<sup>1</sup> *Secreta Monita*, cap. 1, sec. 1.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, cap. 1, sec. 5.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, cap. 1, sec. 6.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.* (tr. from a French copy, Lond., 1679), cap. 1, sec. 11.

<sup>5</sup> *Secreta Monita*, cap. 2, sec. 2.

sion. It may be well, in order still more to advance their interests at courts, to undertake embassies at times. This will enable them to draw the affairs of Europe into their own hands, and to make princes feel that they are indispensable to them, by showing them what an influence they wield at the courts of other sovereigns, and especially how great their power is at that of Rome. Small services and trifling presents they are by no means to overlook. Such things go a great way in opening the hearts of princes. Be sure, say the *Instructions*, to paint the men whom the prince dislikes in the same colours in which his jealousy and hatred teach him to view them. Moreover, if the prince is unmarried, it will be a rare stroke of policy to choose a wife for him from among the beautiful and noble ladies known to their society. "This is seen," say the *Instructions*, "by experience in the House of Austria, and in the Kingdoms of Poland and France, and in many other principalities."<sup>1</sup>

"We must endeavour," say the *Instructions*, with remarkable plainness, but in the belief, doubtless, that the words would meet the faithful eyes of the members of the Society of Jesus only—"We must endeavour to breed dissension among great men, and raise seditions, or anything a prince would have us to do to please him. If one who is chief Minister of State to a monarch who is our friend oppose us, and that prince cast his whole favours upon him, so as to add titles to his honour, we must present ourselves before him, and court him in the highest degree, as well by visits as all humble respect."<sup>2</sup>

Having specified the arts by which princes may be managed, the *Instructions* next prescribe certain methods for turning to account others "of great authority in the commonwealth, that by their credit we obtain profit and preferment." "If," say the *Instructions*,<sup>3</sup> "these lords be seculars, we ought to have recourse to their aid and friendship against our adversaries, and to their favour in our own suits, and those of our friends, and to their authority and power in the purchase of houses, manors, and gardens, and of stones to build with, especially in those places that will not endure to hear of our settling in them, because the authority of these lords serveth very much for the appeasing of the populace, and making our ill-willers quiet."

Nor are they less sedulously to make court to the bishops. Their authority—great everywhere—is especially so in some kingdoms, "as in Germany,

Poland, and France;" and, the bishops conciliated, they may expect to obtain a gift of "new-erected churches, altars, monasteries, foundations, and in some cases the benefices of the secular priests and canons, with the preferable right of preaching in all the great towns." And when bishops so befriend them, they are to be taught that there is no less profit than merit in the deed; inasmuch as, done to the Order of Jesus, they are sure to be repaid with most substantial services; whereas, done to the other orders, they will have nothing in return for their pains "but a song."<sup>4</sup>

To love their neighbour, and speak well of him, while they held themselves in lowly estimation, was not one of the failings of the Jesuits. Their own virtues they were to proclaim as loudly as they did the faults of their brother monks. Their *Instructions* commanded them to "imprint upon the spirits of those princes who love us, that our order is more perfect than all other orders." They are to supplant their rivals, by telling monarchs that no wisdom is competent to counsel in the affairs of State but "ours," and that if they wish to make their realms resplendent with knowledge, they must surrender the schools to Jesuit teachers. They are especially to exhort princes that they owe it as a duty to God to consult them in the distribution of honours and emoluments, and in all appointments to places of importance. Further, they are ever to have a list in their possession of the names of all persons in authority and power throughout Christendom, in order that they may change or continue them in their several posts, as may be expedient. But so covertly must this delicate business be gone about, that their hand must not be seen in it, nor must it once be suspected that the change comes from them.<sup>5</sup>

While slowly and steadily climbing up to the control of kings, and the government of kingdoms, they are to study great modesty of demeanour and simplicity of life. The pride must be worn in the heart, not on the brow; and the foot must be set down softly that is to be planted at last on the neck of monarchs. "Let ours that are in the service of princes," say the *Instructions*, "keep but a very little money, and a few movables, contenting themselves with a little chamber, modestly keeping company with persons in humble station; and so being in good esteem, they ought prudently to persuade princes to do nothing without their counsel, whether it be in spiritual or temporal affairs."<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Secreta Monita*, cap. 2, sec. 5.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, cap. 2, sec. 9, 10.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, cap. 3, sec. 1.

<sup>4</sup> "Præter cantum." (*Secreta Monita*, cap. 3, sec. 3.)

<sup>5</sup> *Secreta Monita*, cap. 4, sec. 1—6.

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid.*, cap. 4, sec. 5.

## THE JESUITS AND RICH WIDOWS.

407

## CHAPTER VII.

## JESUIT MANAGEMENT OF RICH WIDOWS AND THE HEIRS OF GREAT FAMILIES.

How Rich Widows are to be Drawn to the Chapels and Confessionals of the Jesuits—Kept from Thoughts of a Second Marriage—Induced to Enter an Order, and Bequeath their Estates to the Society—Sons and Daughters of Widows—How to Discover the Revenues and Heirs of Noble Houses—Illustration from Spain—Borrowing on Bond—The *Instructions* to be kept Secret—If Discovered, to be Denied—How the *Instructions* came to Light.

THE sixth chapter of the *Instructions* treats "Of the Means to acquire the Friendship of Rich Widows." On opening this new chapter, the reflection that forces itself on one is—how wide the range of objects to which the Society of Jesus is able to devote its attention! The greatest matters are not beyond its strength, and the smallest are not beneath its notice! From counselling monarchs, and guiding ministers of State, it turns with equal adaptability and dexterity to caring for widows. The *Instructions* on this head are minute and elaborate to a degree, which shows the importance the society attaches to the due discharge of what it owes to this class of its clients.

True, some have professed to doubt whether the action of the society in this matter be wholly and purely disinterested, from the restriction it puts upon the class of persons taken under its protection. The *Instructions* do not say "widows," but "rich widows." But all the more on that account do widows need defence against the arts of chicanery and the wiles of avarice, and how can the Fathers better accord them such than by taking measures to convey their bodies and their goods alike within the safe walls of a convent? There the cormorants and vultures of a wicked world cannot make them their prey. But let us mark how they are to proceed. First, a Father of suitable gifts is to be selected to begin operations. He must not, in point of years, exceed middle age; he must have a fresh complexion, and a gracious discourse. He is to visit the widow, to touch feelingly on her position, and the snares and injuries to which it exposes her, and to hint at the fraternal care that the society of which he is a member delights to exercise over all in her condition who choose to place themselves under its guardianship. After a few visits of this sort, the widow will probably appear at one of the chapels of the society. Should it so happen, the next step is to appoint a confessor of their body for the widow. Should these delicate steps be well got over, the matter will begin to be hopeful. It will be the confessor's duty to see that

the wicked idea of marrying again does not enter her mind, and for this end he is to picture to her the delightful and fascinating freedom she enjoys in her widowhood, and over against it he is to place the cares, vexations, and tyrannies which a second matrimony would probably draw upon her. To second these representations, the confessor is empowered to promise exemption from purgatory, should the holy estate of widowhood be persevered in. To maintain this pious frame of mind on the part of the object of these solitudes, the *Instructions* direct that it may be advisable to have an oratory erected in her house, with an altar, and frequent mass and confession celebrated thereat. The adorning of the altar, and the accompanying rites, will occupy the time of the widow, and prevent the thoughts of a husband entering her mind. The matter having been conducted to this stage, it will be prudent now to change the persons of trust about her, and to replace them with persons devoted to the society. The number of religious services must also be increased, especially confession, "so that," say the *Instructions*, "knowing their former accusations, manners, and inclinations, the whole may serve as a guide to make them obey our wills."<sup>1</sup>

These steps will have brought the widow very near the door of a convent. A continuance a little longer in the same cautious and skilful tactics is all that will be necessary to land her safely within its walls. The confessor must now enlarge on the quietude and eminent sanctity of the cloister—how surely it conducts to Paradise; but should she be unwilling to assume the veil in regular form, she may be induced to enter some religious order, such as that of Paulina, "so that being caught in the vow of chastity, all danger of her marrying again may be over."<sup>2</sup> The great duty of Alms, that queen of the graces, "without which, it is to be represented to her, she cannot inherit the king-

<sup>1</sup> *Secreta Monita*, cap. 6, sec. 6.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, cap. 6, sec. 8.



dom of heaven," is now to be pressed upon her; "which alms, notwithstanding, she ought not to dispose to every one, if it be not by the advice and with the consent of her spiritual father."<sup>1</sup> Under this *Direction* it is easy to see in what exchequer the lands, manors, and revenues of widows will ultimately be garnered.

But the Fathers deemed it inexpedient to leave

to be persuaded to select a patron, or tutelary saint, say St. Francis or St. Xavier. Provision is to be made that all they do may be known, by placing about them only persons recommended by the society. We must be excused for not giving in the words of the Fathers the fourteenth section of this chapter. That section gives their *protégées* great licence, indeed all licence, "provided they be



VIEW IN ROME: THE VILLA PAMPHILI-DORIA.

such an issue the least uncertain, and accordingly the seventh chapter enters largely into the "Means of keeping in our hands the Disposition of the Estates of Widows." To shut out worldly thoughts, and especially matrimonial ones, the time of such widows must be occupied with their devotions; they are to be exhorted to curtail their expenditure and abound yet more in alms "to the Church of Jesus Christ." A dexterous confessor is to be appointed them. They are to be frequently visited, and entertained with pleasant discourse. They are

liberal and well-affected to our society, and that all things be carried cunningly and without scandal." But the one great point to be aimed at is to get them to make an entire surrender of their estates to the society. This is to reach perfection now, and it may be to attain in future the yet higher reward of canonisation. But should it so happen, from love of kindred, or other motives, that they have not endowed the "poor companions of Jesus" with all their worldly goods, when they come to die, the preferable claims of "the Church of Jesus Christ" to those of kindred are to be urged upon them, and they are to be exhorted "to contribute to the

<sup>1</sup> *Secreta Monita*, cap. vi., sec. 10.



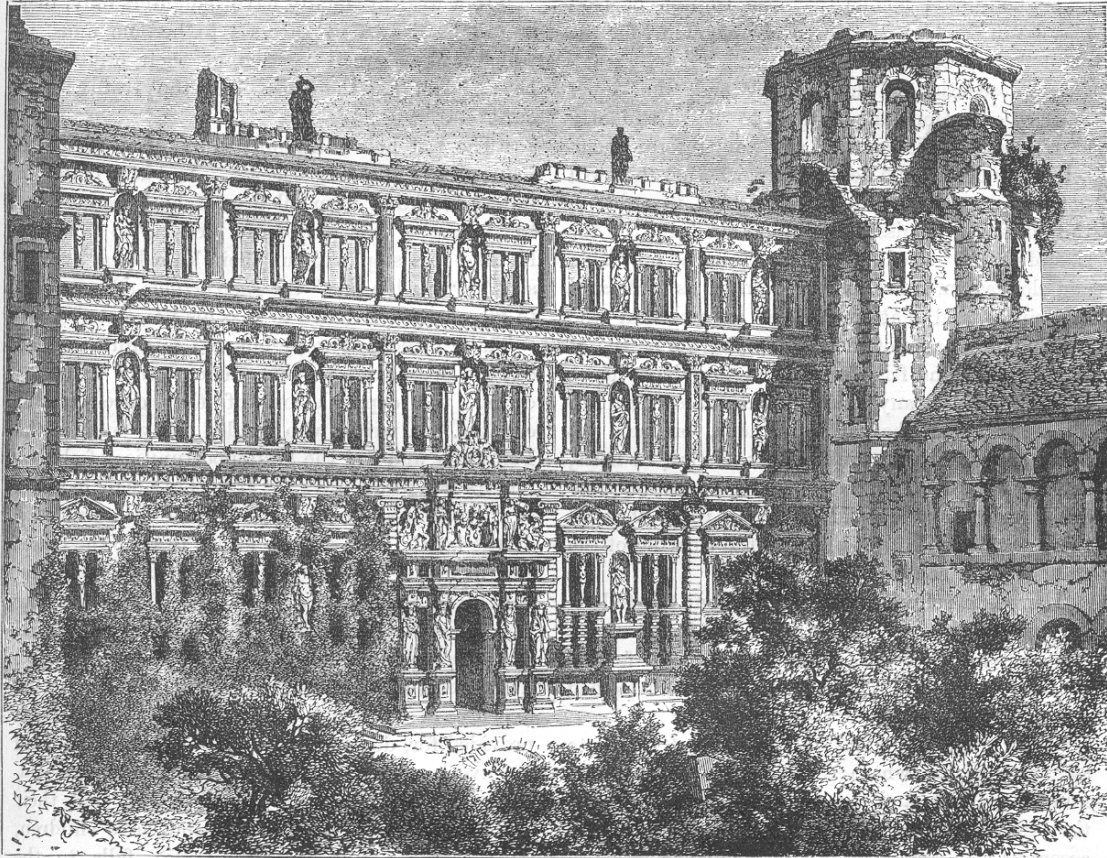
## JESUITS AND THE DISPOSAL OF RICHES.

409

finishing of our colleges, which are yet imperfect, for the greater glory of God, giving us lamps and pixes, and for the building of other foundations and houses, which we, the poor servants of the Society of Jesus, do still want, that all things may be perfected."<sup>1</sup> "Let the same be done with princes," the *Instructions* go on to say, "and our other benefactors, who build us any sumptuous pile, or erect any founda-

state, but now that by the providence of God she is raised to a *monarchy*, and that in those times the Church was nothing but a *broken rock*, which is now become a *great mountain*."<sup>2</sup>

In the chapter that follows—the eighth, namely—the net is spread still wider. It is around the feet of "the sons and daughters of devout widows" that its meshes are now drawn. The scheme of machina-



VIEW OF HEIDELBERG CASTLE.

tion, representing to them, in the first place, that the benefits they thus do us are consecrated to eternity; that they shall become thereby perfect models of piety; that we will have thereof a very particular memory, and that in the next world they shall have their reward. But if it be objected that Jesus Christ was born in a stable, and had not where to lay his head, and that we, who are his *companions*, ought not to enjoy perishing goods, we ought to imprint strongly on their spirits that in truth, at first, the Church was also in the same

tion and seduction unfolded in this chapter differs only in its minor points from that which we have already had disclosed to us. We pass it therefore, and go on to the ninth chapter, where we find the scheme still widening, and wholesale rapacity and extortion, sanctified of course by the end in view, still more openly avowed and enjoined. The chapter is entitled "Of the Means to Augment the Revenues of our Colleges," and these means, in short, are the astute and persistent deception, circumvention, and robbery of every class. The net is thrown,

<sup>1</sup> *Secreta Monita*, cap. 7, sec. 23.

<sup>2</sup> *Secreta Monita*, cap. 7, sec. 24.

almost without disguise, over the whole community, in order that the goods, heritages, and possessions of all ranks—prince, peasant, widow, and orphan—may be dragged into the convents of the Jesuits. The world is but a large preserve for the mighty hunters of the Society of Jesus. "Above and before all other things," says this Instruction, "we ought to endeavour our own greatness, by the direction of our superiors, who are the only judges in this case, and who should labour that the Church of God may be in the highest degree of splendour, for the greater glory of God."<sup>1</sup>

In prosecution of this worthy end, the *Secret Instructions* enjoin the Fathers to visit frequently at rich and noble houses, and to "inform themselves, prudently and dexterously, whether they will not leave something to our Churches, in order to the obtaining remission of their sins, and of the sins of their kindred."<sup>2</sup> Confessors—and only able and eloquent men are to be appointed as confessors to princes and statesmen—are to ascertain the name and surname of their penitents, the names of their kindred and friends, whether they have hopes of succeeding to anything, and how they mean to dispose of what they already have, or may yet have; whether they have brothers, sisters, or heirs, and of what age, inclination, and education they are. And they "should persuade them that all these questions do tend much to the clearing of the state of their conscience."<sup>3</sup>

There is a refreshing plainness about the following Instructions. They are given with the air of men who had so often repeated their plea "for the greater glory of God," that they themselves had come at last to believe it:—

"Our provincial ought to send expert men into all those places where there is any considerable number of rich and wealthy persons, to the end they may give their superiors a true and faithful account."

"Let the stewards of our college get an exact knowledge of the houses, gardens, quarries of stone, vineyards, manors, and other riches of every one who lives near the place where they reside, and if it be possible, what degree of affection they have for us."

"In the next place we should discover every man's office, and the revenue of it, their possessions, and the articles of their contracts, which they may surely do by confessions, by meetings, and by entertainments, or by our trusty friends. And gene-

rally when any confessor lights upon a wealthy person, from whom he hath good hopes of profit, he is obliged forthwith to give notice of it, and discover it at his return."

"They should also inform themselves exactly whether there be any hope of obtaining bargains, goods, possessions,<sup>4</sup> pious gifts, and the like, in exchange for the admission of their sons into our society."<sup>5</sup>

"If a wealthy family have daughters only, they are to be drawn by caresses to become nuns, in which case a small portion of their estate may be assigned for their use, and the rest will be ours."

"The last heir of a family is by all means to be induced to enter the society. And the better to relieve his mind from all fear of his parents, he is to be taught that it is more pleasing to God that he take this step without their knowledge or consent.<sup>6</sup> "Such a one," the *Instructions* add, "ought to be sent to a distance to pass his novitiate."

These directions were but too faithfully carried out in Spain, and to this among other causes is owing the depopulation of that once-powerful country. A writer who resided many years in the Peninsula, and had the best opportunities of observing its condition, says: "If a gentleman has two or three sons and as many daughters, the confessor of the family adviseth the father to keep the eldest son at home, and send the rest, both sons and daughters, into a convent or monastery; praising the monastic life, and saying that to be retired from the world is the safest way to heaven. . . . The fathers of these families, glad of lessening the expenses of the house, and of seeing their children provided for, do send them into the desert place of a convent, which is really the middle of the world. Now observe that it is twenty to one that their heir dieth before he marrieth and have children, so the estate and everything else falls to the second, who is a professed friar, or nun, and as they cannot use the expression of *meum* or *tuum*, all goes that way to the society. And this is the reason why many families are extinguished, and their names quite out of memory, the convent so crowded, the kingdom so thin of people, and the friars, nuns, and monasteries so rich."<sup>7</sup>

Further, the Fathers are counselled to raise large

<sup>4</sup> "Contractus et possessiones"—leases and possessions. (Lat. et Ital. ed., Roma. Con approv.)

<sup>5</sup> *Secreta Monita*, cap. 9, secs. 7–10.

<sup>6</sup> "Ostendendo etiam Deo sacrificium gratissimum fore si parentibus insciis et invitis aufugerit." (Lat. ed., cap. 9, sec. 8. L'Estrange's tr., sec. 14.)

<sup>7</sup> *A Master-Key to Popery*, p. 70.

<sup>1</sup> *Secreta Monita*, cap. 9, sec. 1.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, sec. 4.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, sec. 5.

## DISCOVERY OF THE "SECRET INSTRUCTIONS."

411

sums of money on bond. The advantage of this method is, that when the bond-holder comes to die, it will be easy to induce him to part with the bond in exchange for the salvation of his soul. At all events, he is more likely to make a gift of the deed than to bequeath the same amount in gold. Another advantage of borrowing in this fashion, is that their pretence of poverty may still be kept up. Owners of a fourth or of a half of the property of a county, they will still be "the poor companions of Jesus."<sup>1</sup>

We make but one other quotation from the *Secret Instructions*. It closes this series of pious advices and is, in one respect, the most characteristic of them all. "Let the superior keep these secret advices with great care, and let them not be communicated but to a very few discreet persons, and that only by parts; and let them instruct others with them, when they have profitably served the society. And then let them not communicate them as rules they have received, but as the effects of their own prudence. But if they should happen to fall into the hands of strangers, who should give them an ill sense or construction, let them be assured the society owns them not in that sense, which shall be confirmed by instancing those of our order who assuredly know them not."<sup>2</sup>

It was some time before the contingency of exposure here provided against actually happened. But in the beginning of the seventeenth century the accidents of war dragged these *Secret Instructions* from the darkness in which their authors had hoped to conceal them from the knowledge of the world. The Duke of Brunswick, having plundered the Jesuits' college at Paderborn in Westphalia, made a present of their library to the Capuchins of the same town. Among the books which had thus come into their possession was found a copy of the *Secret Instructions*. Another copy is said to have been discovered in the Jesuits' college at Prague. Soon thereafter reprints and translations appeared in Germany, Holland, France, and England. The authenticity of the work was denied, as was to be expected; for any society that was astute enough to compile such a book would be astute enough to deny it. To only the fourth or highest order of Jesuits were these *Instructions* to

be communicated; the others, who were ignorant of them in their written form, were brought forward to deny on oath that such a book existed, but their protestations weighed very little against the overwhelming evidence on the other side. The perfect uniformity of the methods followed by the Jesuits in all countries favoured a presumption that they acted upon a prescribed rule; and the exact correspondence between their methods and the *secret advices* showed that this was the rule. Gretza, a well-known member of the society, affirmed that the *Secreta Monita* was a forgery by a Jesuit who had been dismissed with ignominy from the society in Poland, and that he published it in 1616. But the falsehood of the story was proved by the discovery in the British Museum of a work printed in 1596, twenty years before the alleged forgery, in which the *Secreta Monita* is copied.<sup>3</sup>

Since the first discovery in Paderborn, copies of the *Secreta Monita* have been found in other libraries, as in Prague, noted above. Numerous editions have since been published, and in so many languages, that the idea of collusion is out of the question. These editions all agree with the exception of a few unimportant variations in the reading.<sup>4</sup> "These private directions," says M. l'Estrange, "are quite contrary to the rules, constitutions, and instructions which this society professeth publicly in those books it hath printed on this subject. So that without difficulty we may believe that the greatest part of their governors (if a very few be excepted especially) have a double rule as well as a double habit—one for their private and particular use, and another to flaunt with before the world."<sup>5</sup>

<sup>3</sup> *Secreta Monita*; Lond., 1850. Pref. by H. M. W., p. ix.

<sup>4</sup> Among the various editions of the *Secreta Monita* we mention the following:—Bishop Compton's translation; Lond., 1669. Sir Roger L'Estrange's translation; Lond., 1679; it was made from a French copy, printed at Cologne, 1678. Another edition, containing the Latin text with an English translation, dedicated to Sir Robert Walpole, Premier of England: Lond., 1723. This edition says, in the Preface, that Mr. John Schipper, bookseller at Amsterdam, bought a copy of the *Secreta Monita*, among other books, at Antwerp, and reprinted it. The Jesuits bought up the whole edition, a few copies excepted. From one of these it was afterwards reprinted. Of late years there have been several English reprints. One of the copies which we have used in this compend of the book was printed at Rome, in the printing-press of the Propaganda, and contains the Latin text page for page with a translation in Italian.

<sup>5</sup> *The Cabinet of the Jesuits' Secrets Opened*; Lond., 1679.

<sup>1</sup> *Secreta Monita*, cap. 9, sec. 18, 19.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, cap. 16 (L'Estrange's tr.); printed as the Preface in the Latin edition.



## CHAPTER VIII.

## DIFFUSION OF THE JESUITS THROUGHOUT CHRISTENDOM.

The Conflict Great—the Arms Sufficient—The Victory Sure—Set Free from Episcopal Jurisdiction—Acceptance in Italy—Venice—Spain—Portugal—Francis Xavier—France—Germany—Their First Planting in Austria—In Cologne and Ingolstadt—Thence Spread over all Germany—Their Schools—Wearing of Crosses—Revival of the Popish Faith.

THE soldiers of Loyola are about to go forth. Before beginning the campaign we see their chief assembling them and pointing out the field on which their prowess is to be displayed. The nations of Christendom are in revolt: it will be theirs to subjugate them, and lay them once more, bound in chains, at the feet of the Papal See. They must not faint; the arms he has provided them with are amply sufficient for the arduous warfare on which he sends them. Clad in that armour, and wielding it as he has been at pains to instruct them, they will expel knowledge as night chases away the day; liberty will die wherever their foot treads; and in the ancient darkness they will be able to rear again the fallen throne of the great Hierarch of Rome. But if the service is hard, the wages will be ample. As the saviours of that throne they will be greater than it. And though meanwhile their work is to be done in great show of humility and poverty, the silver and the gold of Christendom will in the end be theirs; they will be the lords of its lands and palaces, the masters of the bodies and the souls of its inhabitants, and nothing of all that the heart can desire will be withholden from them if only they will obey him.

The Jesuits rapidly multiplied, and we are now to follow them in their peregrinations over Europe. Going forth in little bands, animated with an entire devotion to their General, schooled in all the arts which could help to further their mission, they planted themselves in a few years in all the countries of Christendom, and made their presence felt in the turning of the tide of Protestantism, which till then had been on the flow.

There was no disguise they could not assume, and therefore there was no place into which they could not penetrate. They could enter unheard the closet of the monarch, or the cabinet of the statesman. They could sit unseen in Convocation or General Assembly, and mingle unsuspected in the deliberations and debates. There was no tongue they could not speak, and no creed they could not profess, and thus there was no people among whom they might not sojourn, and no Church whose membership they

might not enter, and whose functions they might not discharge. They could execrate the Pope with the Lutheran, and swear the Solemn League with the Covenanter. They had their men of learning and eloquence for the halls of nobles and the courts of kings; their men of science and letters for the education of youth; their unpolished but ready orators to harangue the crowd; and their plain, unlettered monks, to visit the cottages of the peasantry and the workshops of the artisan. "I know these men," said Joseph II. of Austria, writing to Choiseul, the Prime Minister of Louis XV.—"I know these men as well as any one can do: all the schemes they have carried on, and the pains they have taken to spread darkness over the earth, as well as their efforts to rule and embroil Europe from Cape Finisterre to Spitzbergen! In China they were mandarins; in France, academicians, courtiers, and confessors; in Spain and Portugal, grandees; and in Paraguay, kings. Had not my grand-uncle, Joseph I., become emperor, we had in all probability seen in Germany, too, a Malagrida or an Alvieros."

In order that they might be at liberty to visit what city and diocese they pleased, they were exempted from episcopal jurisdiction. They could come and go at their pleasure, and perform all their functions without having to render account to any one save to their superior. This arrangement was resisted at first by certain prelates; but it was universally conceded at last, and it greatly facilitated the wide and rapid diffusion of the Jesuit corps.

Extraordinary success attended their first efforts throughout all Italy. Designed for the common people, the order found equal acceptance from princes and nobles. In Parma the highest families submitted themselves to the "Spiritual Exercises." In Venice, Lainez expounded the Gospel of St. John to a congregation of nobles; and in 1542 a Jesuits' college was founded in that city. The citizens of Montepulciano accompanied Francisco Strada through the streets begging. Their chief knocked at the doors, and his followers received

## THE JESUITS IN EUROPE.

413

the alms. In Faenza, they succeeded in arresting the Protestant movement, which had been commenced by the eloquent Bernardino Ochino, and by the machinery of schools and societies for the relief of the poor, they brought back the population to the Papacy. These are but a few instances out of many.<sup>1</sup>

In the countries of Spain and Portugal their success was even greater than in Italy. A son of the soil, its founder had breathed a spirit into the order which spread among the Spaniards like an infection. Some of the highest grandees enrolled themselves in its ranks. In the province of Valencia, the multitudes that flocked to hear the Jesuit preacher, Araoz, were such that no cathedral could contain them, and a pulpit was erected for him in the open air. From the city of Salamanca, where in 1548 they had opened their establishment in a small, wretched house, the Jesuits spread themselves over all Spain. Two members of the society were sent to the King of Portugal, at his own request: the one he retained as his confessor, the other he dispatched to the East Indies. This was that Francis Xavier who there gained for himself, says Ranke, "the name of an apostle, and the glory of a saint." At the courts of Madrid and Lisbon they soon acquired immense influence. They were the confessors of the nobles and the counsellors of the monarch.

The Jesuits found it more difficult to force their way into France. Much they wished to found a college in that city where their first vow had been recorded, but every attempt was met by the determined opposition of the Parliament and the clergy, who were jealous of their enormous privileges. The wars between the Guises and the Huguenots at length opened a door for them. Lainez, who by this time had become their General, saw his opportunity, and in 1561 succeeded in effecting his object, although on condition of renouncing the peculiar privileges of the order, and submitting to episcopal jurisdiction. "The promise was made, but with a mental reservation, which removed the necessity of keeping it."<sup>2</sup> They immediately founded a college in Paris, opened schools—which were taught by clever teachers—and planted Jesuit seminaries at Avignon, Rhodes, Lyons, and other places. Their intrigues kept the nation divided, and much inflamed the fury of the civil wars. Henry III. was massacred by an agent of theirs: they next attempted the life of Henry IV. This crime led to their first banishment from France, in 1594; but

soon they crept back into the kingdom in the guise of traders and operatives. They were at last openly admitted by the monarch—a service which they repaid by slaughtering him in the streets of his capital. Under their rule France continued to bleed and agonise, to plunge from woe into crime, and from crime into woe, till the crowning wickedness of the revocation of the Edict of Nantes laid the country prostrate; and it lay quiet for more than half a century, till, recovering somewhat from its exhaustion, it lifted itself up, only to encounter the terrible blow of its great Revolution.

We turn to Germany. Here it was that the Church of Rome had suffered her first great losses, and here, under the arms of the Jesuits, was she destined to make a beginning of those victories which recovered not a little of the ground she had lost. A generation had passed away since the rise of Protestantism. It is the year 1550: the sons of the men who had gathered round Luther occupy the stage when the van of this great invading host makes its appearance. They come in silence; they are plain in their attire, humble and submissive in their deportment; but behind them are the stakes and scaffolds of the persecutor, and the armies of France and Spain. Their quiet words find their terrible reverberations in those awful tempests of war which for thirty years desolated Germany.

Ferdinand I. of Austria, reflecting on the decay into which Roman Catholic feeling had fallen in Germany, sent to Ignatius Loyola for a few zealous teachers to instruct the youth of his dominions. In 1551, thirteen Jesuits, including Le Jay, arrived at Vienna. They were provided with pensions, placed in the university chairs, and crept upwards till they seized the entire direction of that seminary. From that hour date the crimes and misfortunes of the House of Austria.<sup>3</sup>

A little colony of the disciples of Loyola had, before this, planted itself at Cologne. It was not till some years that they took root in that city; but the initial difficulties surmounted, they began to effect a change in public sentiment, which went on till Cologne became, as it is sometimes called, the "Rome of the North." About the same time, the Jesuits became flourishing in Ingolstadt. They had been driven away on their first entrance into that university seat, the professors dreading them as rivals; but in 1556 they were recalled, and soon rose to influence, as was to be expected in a city where the memory of Dr. Eck was still fresh.

<sup>1</sup> Ranke, *Hist. of the Popes*, bk. ii., sec. 7.

<sup>2</sup> Duller, *Hist. of the Jesuits*, p. 83; Lond., 1845.

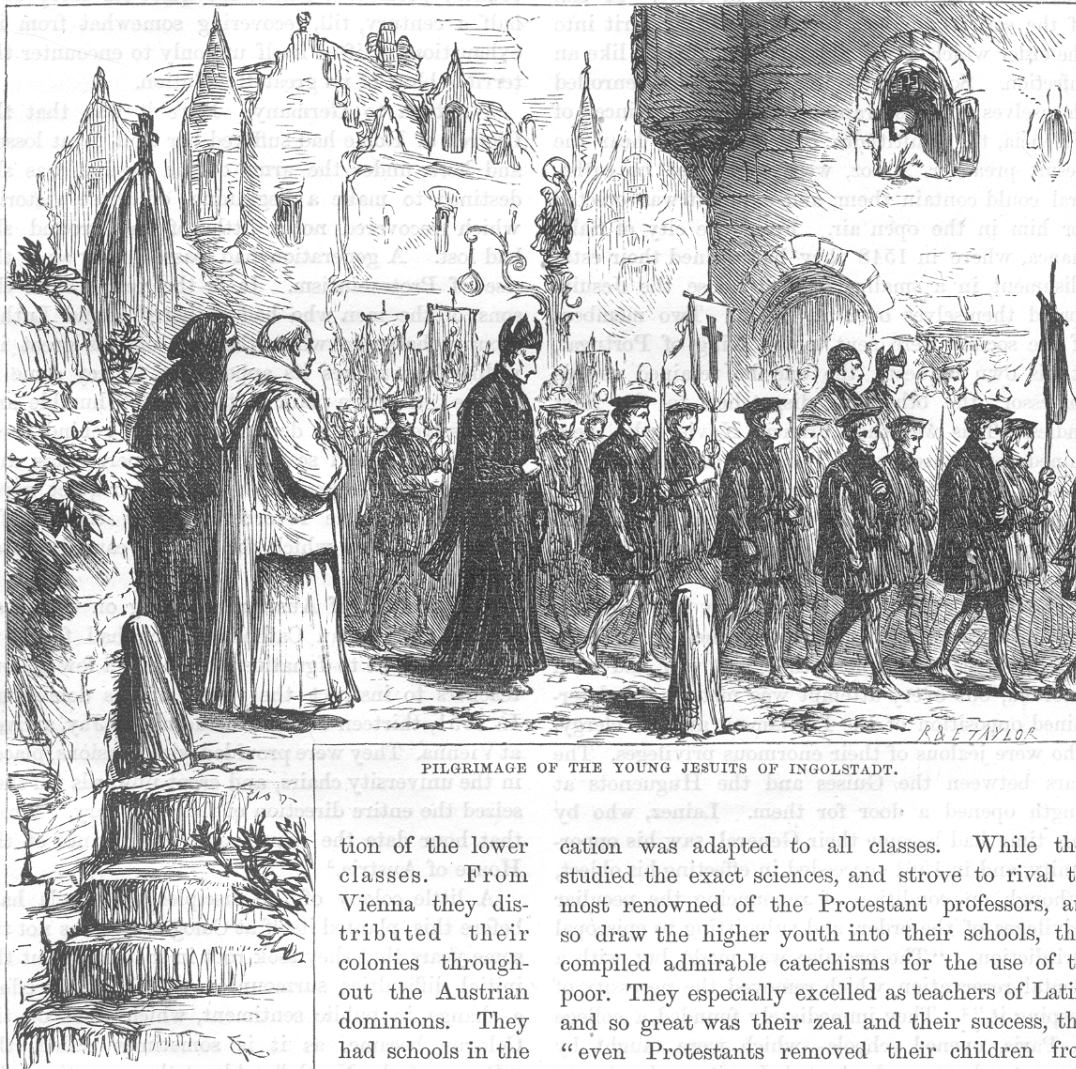
<sup>3</sup> Ranke, bk. v., sec. 3.

Their battles, less noisy than his, were fated to accomplish much more for the Papacy.

From these three centres—Vienna, Cologne, and Ingolstadt—the Jesuits extended themselves over all Germany. They established colleges in the chief cities for the sons of princes and nobles, and they opened schools in town and village for the instruc-

resort of the most learned men of the German nation.

Wherever the Jesuits came, there was quickly seen a manifest revival of the Popish faith. In the short space of ten years, their establishments had become flourishing in all the countries in which they were planted. Their system of edu-



PILGRIMAGE OF THE YOUNG JESUITS OF INGOLSTADT.

tion of the lower classes. From Vienna they distributed their colonies throughout the Austrian dominions. They had schools in the Tyrol and the cities at the foot

of its mountains. From Prague they ramified over Bohemia, and penetrated into Hungary. Their colleges at Ingolstadt and Munich gave them the possession of Bavaria, Franconia, and Swabia. From Cologne they extended their convents and schools over Rhenish Prussia, and, planting a college at Spire, they counteracted the influence of Heidelberg University, then the

cation was adapted to all classes. While they studied the exact sciences, and strove to rival the most renowned of the Protestant professors, and so draw the higher youth into their schools, they compiled admirable catechisms for the use of the poor. They especially excelled as teachers of Latin; and so great was their zeal and their success, that "even Protestants removed their children from distant schools, to place them under the care of the Jesuits."<sup>1</sup>

The teachers seldom failed to inspire the youth in their schools with their own devotion to the Popish faith. The sons of Protestant fathers were drawn to confession, and by-and-by into general conformity to Popish practices. Food which the Church had forbidden they would not touch on the interdicted

<sup>1</sup> Ranke, bk. v., sec. 3.



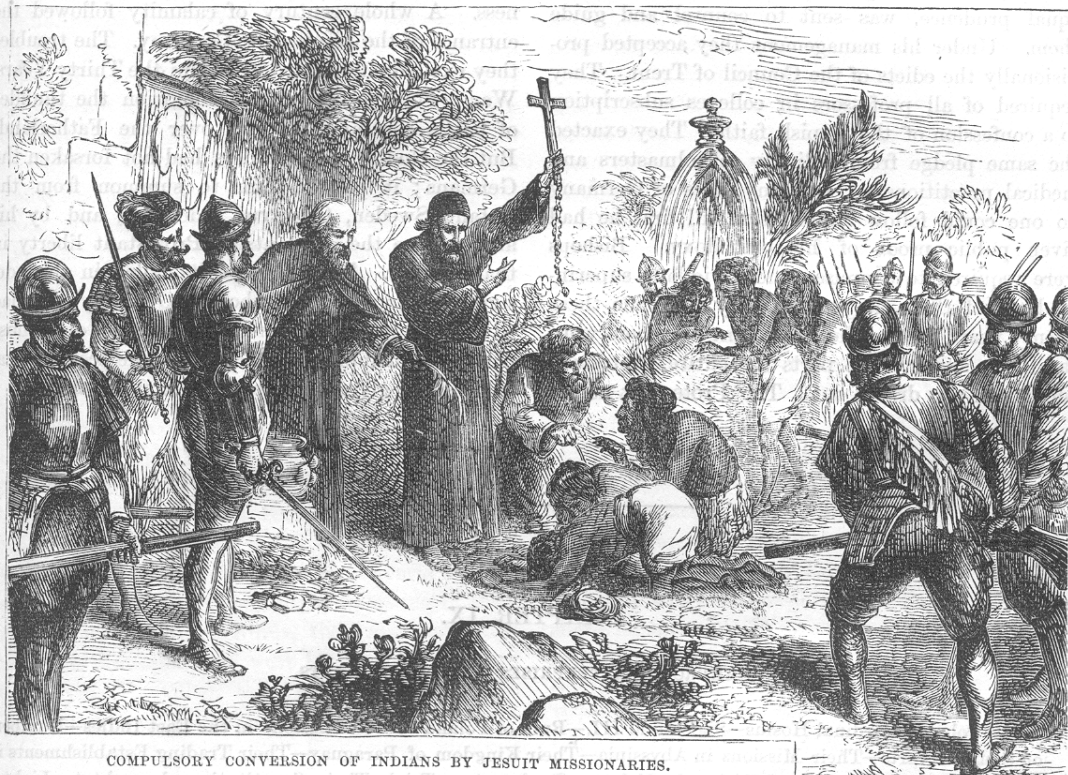
## JESUIT SUCCESSES.

415

days, although it was being freely used by the other members of the family. They began, too, to distinguish themselves by the use of Popish symbols. The wearing of crosses and rosaries is recorded by Ranke as one of the first signs of the setting of the tide toward Rome. Forgotten rites began to be revived; relics which had been thrown aside and

Walpurgis."<sup>1</sup> The modes of thought and feeling thus implanted in the schools were, by means of preaching and confession, propagated through the whole population.

While the Jesuits were busy in the seminaries, the Pope operated powerfully in the political sphere. He had recourse to various arts to gain over the



COMPULSORY CONVERSION OF INDIANS BY JESUIT MISSIONARIES.

buried in darkness, were sought out and exhibited to the public gaze. The old virtue returned into rotten bones, and the holiness of faded garments flourished anew. The saints of the Church came out in bold relief, while those of the Bible receded into the distance. The light of candles replaced the Word of Life in the temples; the newest fashions of worship were imported from Italy, and music and architecture in the style of the Restoration were called in to reinforce the movement. Customs which had not been witnessed since the days of their grandfathers, began to receive the reverent observance of the new generation. "In the year 1560, the youth of Ingolstadt belonging to the Jesuit school walked, two and two, on a pilgrimage to Eichstadt, in order to be strengthened for their confirmation by the dew that dropped from the tomb of St.

princes. Duke Albert V. of Bavaria had a grant made him of one-tenth of the property of the clergy. This riveted his decision on the side of Rome, and he now set himself with earnest zeal and marked success to restore, in its ancient purity and vigour, the Popery of his territories. The Jesuits lauded the piety of the duke, who was a second Josias, a new Theodosius."<sup>2</sup>

The Popes saw clearly that they could never

<sup>1</sup> Ranke, bk. v., sec. 3.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*



hope to restore the ancient discipline and rule of their Church without the help of the temporal sovereigns. Besides Duke Albert, who so powerfully contributed to re-establish the sway of Rome over all Bavaria, the ecclesiastical princes, who governed so large a part of Germany, threw themselves heartily into the work of restoration. The Jesuit Canisius, a man of blameless life, of consummate address, and whose great zeal was regulated by an equal prudence, was sent to counsel and guide them. Under his management they accepted provisionally the edicts of the Council of Trent. They required of all professors in colleges subscription to a confession of the Popish faith. They exacted the same pledge from ordinary schoolmasters and medical practitioners. In many parts of Germany no one could follow a profession till first he had given public proof of his orthodoxy. Bishops were required to exercise a more vigilant superintendence of their clergy than they had done these twenty years past. The Protestant preachers were banished; and in some parts the entire Protestant population was driven out. The Protestant nobles

were forbidden to appear at court. Many withdrew into retirement, but others purchased their way back by a renunciation of their faith. By these and similar arts Protestantism was conquered on what may be regarded as its native soil. If not wholly rooted up it maintained henceforward but a languishing existence; its leaf faded and its fruit died in the mephitic air around it, while Romanism shot up in fresh strength and robustness. A whole century of calamity followed the entrance of the Jesuits into Germany. The troubles they excited culminated at last in the Thirty Years' War. For the space of a generation the thunder of battle continued to roll over the Fatherland. But the God of their fathers had not forsaken the Germans; it pleased him to summon from the distant Sweden, Gustavus Adolphus, and by his arm to save the remnants of Protestant liberty in that country. Thus the Jesuits failed in their design of subjugating the whole of Germany, and had to content themselves with dominating over those portions, unhappily large, of which the ecclesiastical princes had given them possession at the first.

## CHAPTER IX.

### COMMERCIAL ENTERPRISES AND BANISHMENTS.

England—Poland—Cardinal Hosius—Sigismund III.—Ruin of Poland—Jesuit Missions in the East Indies—Numbers of their Converts—Their Missions in Abyssinia—Their Kingdom of Paraguay—Their Trading Establishments in the West Indies—Episode of Father la Valette—Bankruptcy—Trial—Their Constitutions brought to Light—Banished from all Popish Kingdoms—Suppressed by Clement XIV.—The Pope Dies Suddenly—The Order Restored by Pius VII.—The Jesuits the Masters of the Pope.

OF the entrance of the Jesuits into England, the arts they employed, the disguises they wore, the seditions they sowed, the snares they laid for the life of the sovereign, and the plots they concocted for the overthrow of the Protestant Church, we shall have an opportunity of speaking when we come to narrate the history of Protestantism in Great Britain. Meanwhile, we consider their career in Poland.

Cardinal Hosius opened the gates of this country to the Jesuits. Till then Poland was a flourishing country, united at home and powerful abroad. Its literature and science during the half-century preceding had risen to an eminence that placed Poland on a par with the most enlightened countries of Christendom. It enjoyed a measure of toleration

which was then unknown to most of the nations of Europe. Foreign Protestants fled to it as a refuge from the persecution to which they were exposed in their native land, bringing to their adopted country their skill, their wealth, and their energy. Its trade increased, and its towns grew in population and riches. Italian, German, French, and Scottish Protestant congregations existed at Cracow, Vilna, and Posnania.<sup>1</sup> Such was Poland before the foot of Jesuit had touched its soil.

But from the hour that the disciples of Loyola entered the country Poland began to decline. The Jesuits became supreme at court; the monarch,

<sup>1</sup> Krasinski, *Rise, Progress, and Decline of the Reformation in Poland*, vol. ii., p. 196; Lond., 1840.

## THE JESUITS ABROAD.

417

Sigismund III., gave himself entirely up to their guidance ; no one could hope to rise in the State who did not pay court to them ; the education of youth was wholly in their hands, and the effects became speedily visible in the decay of literature,<sup>1</sup> and the growing decrepitude of the national mind. At home the popular liberties were attacked in the persons of the Protestants, and abroad the nation was humiliated by a foreign policy inspired by the Jesuits, which drew upon the country the contempt and hostility of neighbouring powers. These evil courses of intrigue and faction within the country, and impotent and arrogant policy outside of it, were persisted in till the natural issue was reached in the partition of Poland. It is at the door of the Jesuits that the fall of that once-enlightened, prosperous, and powerful nation is to be laid.

It concerns us less to follow the Jesuits into those countries which lie beyond the boundaries of Christendom, unless in so far as their doings in these regions may help to throw light on their principles and tactics. In following their steps among heathen nations and savage races, it is alike impossible to withhold our admiration of their burning zeal and intrepid courage, or our wonder at their prodigiously rapid success. No sooner had the Jesuit missionary set foot on a new shore, or preached, by an interpreter it might be, his first sermon in a heathen city, than his converts were to be counted in tens of thousands. Speaking of their missions in India, Sacchinus, their historian, says that "ten thousand men were baptised in the space of one year."<sup>2</sup> When the Jesuit mission to the East Indies was set on foot in 1559, Torrez procured royal letters to the Portuguese viceroys and governors, empowering them to lend their assistance to the missionaries for the conversion of the Indians. This shortened the process wonderfully. All that had to be done was to ascertain the place where the natives were assembled for some religious festival, and surround them with a troop of soldiers, who, with levelled muskets, offered them the alternative of baptism. The rite followed immediately upon the acceptance of the alternative ; and next day the baptised were taught the sign of the cross. In this excellent and summary way was the evangelisation of the island of Goa effected!<sup>3</sup>

By similar methods did they attempt to plant the Popish faith and establish their own dominion in Abyssinia, and also at Mozambique (1560) on the opposite coast of Africa. One of the pioneers,

Oviedo, who had entered Ethiopia, wrote thus to the Pope :—"He must be permitted to inform his Holiness that, with the assistance of 500 or 600 Portuguese soldiers, he could at any time reduce the Empire of Abyssinia to the obedience of the Pontificate ; and when he considered that it was a country surrounded with territories abounding with the finest gold, and promising a rich harvest of souls to the Church, he trusted his Holiness would give the matter further consideration."<sup>4</sup> The Emperor of Ethiopia was gained by flatteries and miracles ; a terrible persecution was raised against the native Christians ; thousands were massacred ; but at last, the king having detected the authors of these barbarities plotting against his own life and throne, they were ignominiously expelled the country.

Having secured the territory of Paraguay, a Portuguese possession in South America, the Jesuits founded a kingdom there, and became its sovereigns. They treated the natives at first with kindness, and taught them several useful arts, but by-and-by they changed their policy, and, reducing them to slavery, compelled them to labour for their benefit. Dealing out to the Paraguayan peasant from the produce of his own toil as much as would suffice to feed and clothe him, the Fathers laid up the rest in large storehouses, which they had erected for the purpose. They kept carefully concealed from the knowledge of Europe this seemingly exhaustless source of wealth, that no one else might share its sweets. They continued all the while to draw from it those vast sums wherewith they carried on their machinations in the Old World. With the gold wrung from the Paraguayan peasants' toil they hired spies, bribed courtiers, opened new missions, and maintained that pomp and splendour of their establishments by which the populace were dazzled.<sup>5</sup>

Their establishments in Brazil formed the basis of a great and enriching trade, of which Santa Fé and Buenos Ayres were the chief depôts. But the most noted episode of this kind in their history is that of Father Lavalette (1756). He was Visitor-General and Apostolic Prefect of their Missions in the West Indies. "He organised offices in St. Domingo, Granada, St. Lucia, St. Vincent, and other islands, and drew bills of exchange on Paris, London, Bordeaux, Nantes, Lyons, Cadiz, Leghorn, and Amsterdam." His vessels, loaded with riches, comprising, besides colonial produce, negro slaves, "crossed the sea continually."<sup>6</sup> Trading on credit,

<sup>1</sup> Krasinski, vol. ii., pp. 197, 198.

<sup>2</sup> Sacchinus, lib. vi., p. 172.

<sup>3</sup> Steinmetz, *Hist. of the Jesuits*, vol. ii., pp. 46—48. Sacchinus, lib. iii., p. 129.

<sup>4</sup> Steinmetz, lib. ii., p. 59.

<sup>5</sup> Duller, *Hist. of the Jesuits*, pp. 135—138.

<sup>6</sup> *A Glimpse of the Great Secret Society*, p. lxxix ; ed. Lond., 1872.

they professed to give the property of the society as security. Their methods of business were abnormal. Treaties obeyed by other merchants they disregarded. Neutrality laws were nothing to them. They hired ships which were used as traders or privateers, as suited them, and sailed under whatever flag was convenient. At last, however, came trouble to these Fathers, who were making, as the phrase is, "the best of both worlds." The Brothers Lioncy and Gouffre, of Marseilles, had accepted their bills for a million and a half of livres, to cover which two vessels had been dispatched for Martinique with merchandise to the value of two millions. Unfortunately for the Fathers, the ships were captured at sea by the English.

The house of Lioncy and Gouffre asked the superior of the Jesuits in Marseilles for four thousand livres, as part payment of their debt, to save them from bankruptcy. The Father replied that the society was not answerable, but he offered the Brothers Lioncy and Gouffre the aid of their prayers, fortified by the masses which they were about to say for them. The masses would not fill the coffers which the Jesuits had emptied, and accordingly the merchants appealed to Parliament craving a decree for payment of the debt. The appeal was allowed, and the Jesuits were condemned to honour the bills drawn by their agent. At this critical moment the General of the society died: delay was inevitable: the new General sent all the funds he could raise; but before these supplies could reach Marseilles, Lioncy and Gouffre had become bankrupt, involving in their misfortune their connections in all parts of France.

Now that the ruin had come and publicity was inevitable, the Jesuits refused to pay the debt, pleading that they were protected from the claims of their creditors by their Constitutions. The cause now came to a public hearing. After several pleas had been advanced and abandoned, the Jesuits took their final stand on the argument which, in an evil hour for themselves, they had put forth at first in their defence. Their rules, they said, forbade them to trade; and the fault of individual members could not be punished upon the order: they were shielded by their Constitutions. The Parliament ordered these documents to be produced. They had been kept secret till now. They were laid before Parliament on the 16th of April, 1761. The result was disastrous for the Jesuits. They lost their cause, and became much more odious than before. The disclosure revealed Jesuitism to men as an organisation based on the most iniquitous maxims, and armed with the most terrible weapons for the accomplishment of their

object, which was to plant their own supremacy on the ruin of society. The Constitutions were one of the principal grounds of the decree for the extinction of the order in France, in 1762.<sup>1</sup>

That political kingdoms and civil communities should feel the order a burden too heavy to be borne, is not to be wondered at when we reflect that even the Popes, of whose throne it was the pillar, have repeatedly decreed its extinction. Strange as it may seem, the first bolt in later times that fell on the Jesuits was launched by the hand of Rome. Benedict IV., by a bull issued in 1741, prohibited them from engaging in trade and making slaves of the Indians. In 1759, Portugal, finding itself on the brink of ruin by their intrigues, shook them off. This example was soon followed in France, as we have already narrated. Even in Spain, with all its devotion to the Papal See, all the Jesuit establishments were surrounded, one night in 1767, with troops, and the whole fraternity, amounting to 7,000, were caught and shipped off to Italy. Immediately thereafter a similar expulsion befell them in South America. Naples, Malta, and Parma were the next to drive them from their soil. The severest blow was yet to come. Clement XIII., hitherto their firm friend, yielding at last to the unanimous demands of all the Roman Catholic courts, summoned a secret conclave for the suppression of the order: "a step necessary," said the brief of his successor, "in order to prevent Christians rising one against another, and massacring one another in the very bosom of our common mother the Holy Church." Clement died suddenly the very evening before the day appointed for the conclave. Lorenzo Ganganelli was elevated to the vacant chair under the title of Clement XIV. Ganganelli was studious, learned, of pure morals, and of genuine piety. From the schoolmen he turned to the Fathers, forsaking the Fathers he gave himself to the study of the Holy Scriptures, where he learned on what Rock to fix the anchor of his faith. Clement XIV. strove for several years, with honest but mistaken zeal, to reform the order. His efforts were fruitless. On the 21st of July, 1773, he issued the famous bull, "Dominus ac Redemptor noster," by which he "dissolved and for ever annihilated the order as a corporate body," at a moment when it counted 22,000 members.<sup>2</sup>

The bull justifies itself by a long and formidable list of charges against the Jesuits. Had this accusation proceeded from a Protestant pen it might

<sup>1</sup> *A Glimpse of the Great Secret Society*, pp. lxxviii.—lxxxi. Chalotais, *Report to Parl. of Bretagne*.

<sup>2</sup> Duller, *Hist. of the Jesuits*, p. 151.



## SUPPRESSION AND RESTORATION OF THE JESUITS.

419

have been regarded as not free from exaggeration, but coming from the Papal chair it must be accepted as the sober truth. The bull of Clement charged them with raising various insurrections and rebellions, with plotting against bishops, undermining the regular monastic orders, and invading pious foundations and corporations of every sort, not only in Europe, but in Asia and America, to the danger of souls and the astonishment of all nations. It charged them with engaging in trade, and that, instead of seeking to convert the heathen, they had shown themselves intent only on gathering gold and silver and precious jewels. They had interpolated pagan rites and manners with Christian beliefs and worship: they had set aside the ordinances of the Church, and substituted opinions which the apostolic chair had pronounced *fundamentally erroneous and evidently subversive of good morals*. Tumults, disturbances, violences, had followed them in all countries. In fine, they had broken the peace of the Church, and so incurably that the Pontificates of his predecessors, Urban VIII., Clements IX., X., XI., and XII., Alexanders VII. and VIII., Innocents X., XI., XII., and XIII., and Benedict XIV., had been passed in abortive attempts to re-establish the harmony and concord which they had destroyed. It was now seen that the peace of the Church would never be restored while the order existed, and hence the necessity of the bull which dispossessed the Jesuits of "every office, service, and administration;" took away from them "their houses, schools, hospitals, estates;" withdrew "all their statutes, usages, decrees, customs, and ordinances;" and pronounced "all the power of the General, Provincial, Visitors, and every other head of the same order, whether spiritual or secular, to be for ever annulled and suppressed." "The present ordinance," said the bull, in conclusion, "shall remain in full force and operation from henceforth and for ever."

Nothing but the most tremendous necessity could have made Clement XIV. issue this bull. He knew well how unforgiving was the pride and how deadly the vengeance of the society, and he did not conceal from himself the penalty he should have to pay for decreeing its suppression. On laying down his pen, after having put his name to the bull, he said to those around him that he had subscribed his death-warrant.<sup>1</sup> The Pope was at that time in robust health, and his vigorous constitution and temperate habits promised a long life. But now dark rumours began to be whispered in Italy that the Pontiff

would die soon. In April of the following year he began to decline without any apparent cause: his illness increased: no medicine was of any avail: and after lingering in torture for months, he died, September 22nd, 1774. "Several days before his death," says Caraccioli, "his bones were exfoliated and withered like a tree which, attacked at its roots, withers away and throws off its bark. The scientific men who were called in to embalm his body found the features livid, the lips black, the abdomen inflated, the limbs emaciated, and covered with violet spots. The size of the heart was diminished, and all the muscles were shrunk up, and the spine was decomposed. They filled the body with perfumed and aromatic substances, but nothing could dispel the mephitic effluvia."<sup>2</sup>

The suppression with which Clement XIV. smote the Society of Jesus was eternal; but the "for ever" of the bull lasted only in actual deed during the brief interval that elapsed between 1773 and 1814. That short period was filled up with the awful tempest of the French Revolution—to the fallen thrones and desecrated altars of which the Jesuits pointed as the monuments of the Divine anger at the suppression of their order. Despite the bull of Clement, the Jesuits had neither ceased to exist nor ceased to act. Amid the storms that shook the world they were energetically active. In revolutionary conventions and clubs, in war-councils and committees, on battle-fields they were present, guiding with unseen but powerful touch the course of affairs. Their maxim is, if despotisms will not serve them, to demoralise society and render government impossible, and from chaos to remodel the world anew. Thus the Society of Jesus, which had gone out of existence before the Revolution, as men believed, started up in full force the moment after, prepared to enter on the work of moulding and ruling the nations which had been chastised but not enlightened. Scarcely had Pius VII. returned to the Vatican, when, by a bull dated August 7th, 1814, he restored the Order of Jesus. Thaddeus Borzodzowsky was placed at their head. Once more the brotherhood stalked abroad in their black birettas. In no long time their colleges, seminaries, and novitiates began to flourish in all the countries of Europe, Ireland and England not excepted. Their numbers, swelled by the sodalities of "St. Vincent de Paul," "Brothers of the Christian Doctrine," and other societies affiliated with

<sup>2</sup> All the world believed that Clement had been made to drink the *Aqua Tofana*, a spring in Perugia more famous than healthful. Some one has said that if Popes are not liable to err, they are nevertheless liable to sudden death.

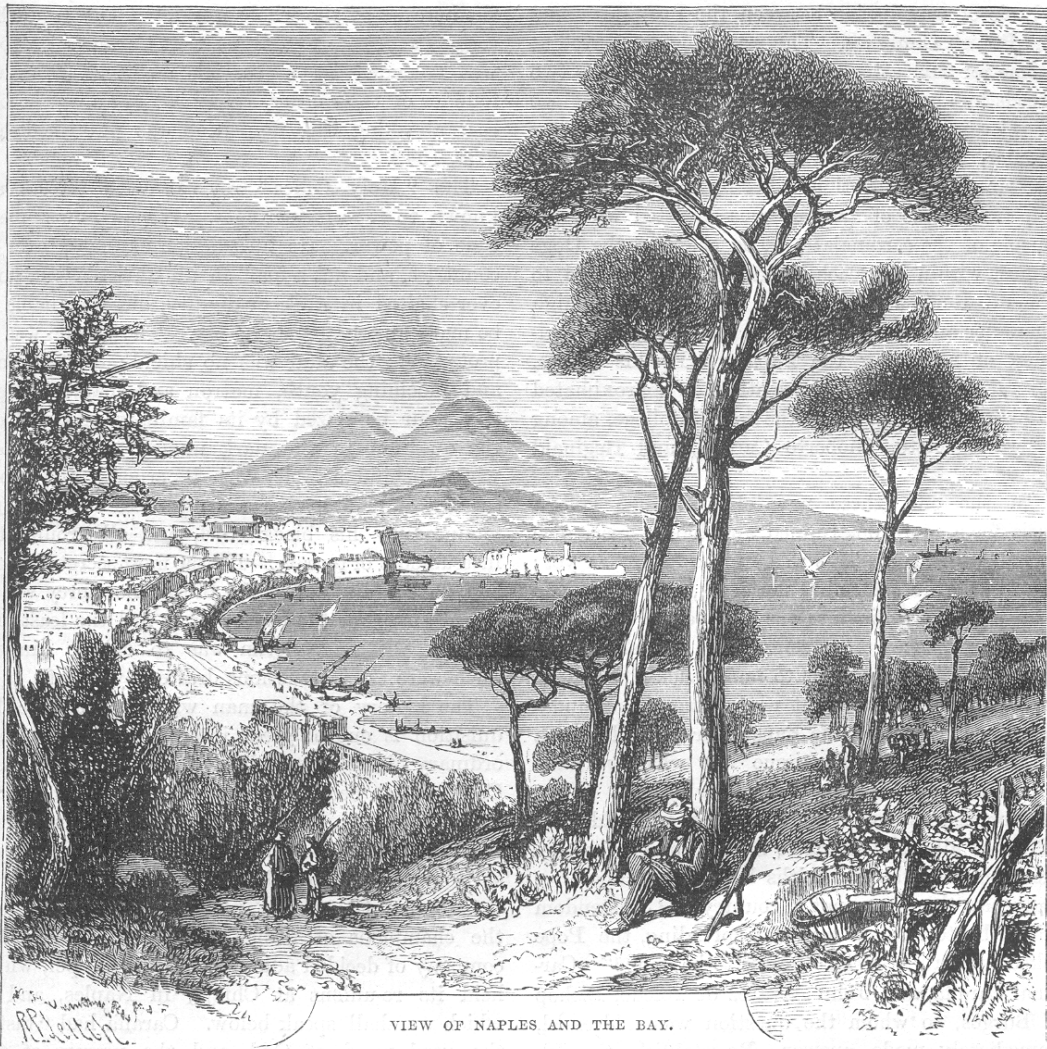
<sup>1</sup> "Sotto-scriviamo la nostra morte."



POPE PIUS VII.

the order, became greater, perhaps, than they ever were at any former period. And their importance was vastly enhanced by the fact that the contest between the "Order" and the "Papal

Chair" ended—temporarily, at any rate—in the enslavement of the Popedom, of which they inspired the policy, indited the decrees, and wielded the power.



VIEW OF NAPLES AND THE BAY.

## CHAPTER X.

## RESTORATION OF THE INQUISITION.

Failure of Ratisbon Conference—What Next to be Done?—Restore the Inquisition—Paul III.—Caraffa—His History—Spread of Protestantism in Italy—Juan di Valdez—His Re-unions at Chiaja—Peter Martyr Vermigli—Bernardino Ochino—Galeazzo Caraccioli—Vittoria Colonna, &c.—Pietro Carnesecchi, &c.—Shall Naples or Geneva Lead in the Reform Movement?

THERE is one arm of the Jesuits to which we have not yet adverted. The weapon that we refer to was not indeed unknown to former times, but it had fallen out of order, and had to be refurbished, and made fit for modern exigencies. No small part

of the success that attended the operations of the Jesuits was owing to their use of it. That weapon was the Inquisition.

We have narrated in a former chapter the earnest attempt made at the Conference of Ratisbon to find



a basis of conciliation between the Protestant and the Popish Churches. The way had been paved at Rome for this attempted reconciliation of the two creeds by an infusion of new blood into the College of Cardinals. Gaspar Contarini, a senator of Venice, who was known to hold opinions on the doctrine of justification differing very little, if at all, from those of Luther,<sup>1</sup> was invested with the purple of the cardinalate. The chair of the Doge almost within his reach, Contarini was induced to come to Rome and devote the influence of his high character and great talents to the doubtful experiment of reforming the Papacy. By his advice, several ecclesiastics whose sentiments approximated to his own were added to the Sacred College, among others Sadoletto, Gioberto Caraffa, and Reginald Pole.

In the end, these new elections but laid a basis for a more determined and bloody resistance to Protestantism. This was in the future as yet; meanwhile the reforming measures, for which this change in the cardinalate was to pave the way, were taken. Deputies were sent to the Ratisbon Conference, with instructions to make such concessions to the Reformers as might not endanger the fundamental principles of the Papacy, or strip the tiara of its supremacy. The issue was what we have announced in a previous part of our history. When the deputies returned from the Diet, and told Paul III. that all their efforts to frame a basis of agreement between the two faiths had proved abortive, and that there was not a country in Christendom where Protestantism was not spreading, the Pope asked in alarm, "What then is to be done?" Cardinal Caraffa, and John Alvarez de Toledo, Bishop of Burgos, to whom the question was addressed, immediately made answer, Re-establish the Inquisition.

The proposal accorded well with the gloomy genius, unbending opinions, and stern bigotry of the men from whom it came. Caraffa and Toledo were old Dominicans, the same order to whom Innocent III. had committed the working of the "Holy Tribunal," when it was first set up. Men of pure but austere life, they were prepared to endure in their own persons, or to inflict on the persons of others, any amount of suffering and pain, rather than permit the Roman Church to be overthrown. Re-establish the Inquisition, said Caraffa; let the supreme tribunal be set up in Rome, with subordinate branches ramifying over all Europe. "Here in Rome must the successors of Peter destroy all

the heresies of the whole world."<sup>2</sup> The Jesuit historians take care to tell us that Caraffa's proposal was seconded by a special memorial from the founder of their order, Ignatius Loyola. The bull re-establishing the Inquisition was published July 21st, 1542.

The "Holy Office" revived with terrors unknown to it in former ages. It had now a plenitude of power. Its jurisdiction extended over all countries, and not a man in all Christendom, however exalted in rank or dignity, but was liable to be made answerable at its bar. The throne was no protection; the altar was no shield; withered age and blooming youth, matron and maiden, might any hour be seized by its familiars, and undergo the question in the dark underground chamber, where, behind a table, with its crucifix and taper, sat the inquisitor, his stern pitiless features surmounted by his black cowl, and all around the instruments of torture. Till the most secret thought had been wrung out of the breast, no mercy was to be shown. For the inquisitor to feel the least pity for his writhing victim was to debase himself. Such were the instructions drafted by Caraffa.

The history of the man who restored the Inquisition is one of great interest, and more than ordinary instruction, but it is touchingly sad. Caraffa had been a member of the Oratory of *Divine Love*, which was a little circle of moderate Reformers, that held its sittings in the Trastevere at Rome, and occupied, as regarded the Reform of the Roman Church, a position midway between the champions of things as they were, and the company of decided adherents of the Gospel, which held its re-unions at Chiaja, in Naples, and of which we shall speak below. Caraffa had "tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come," but the gracious stirrings of the Spirit, and the struggles of his own conscience, he had quelled, and from the very threshold of Rest which he was seeking in the Gospel, he had cast himself again into the arms of an infallible Church. With such a history it was not possible that Caraffa could act a middle part. He threw himself with sterner zeal into the dreadful work of reviving the Inquisition than did even Paul III., under whom he served, and whom he was destined to succeed. "Caraffa," says the historian Ranke, "lost not a moment in carrying this edict into execution; he would have thought it waste of time to wait for the usual issue of means from the apostolic treasury, and, though by no means rich, he

<sup>1</sup> So he himself declared on his death-bed to Bernardino Ochino in 1542. (*M<sup>c</sup> Crie, Prog. and Sup. Ref. in Italy*, p. 220.)

<sup>2</sup> Bromato, *Vita di Paolo*, tom. iv., lib. vii., sec. 3. Ranke, bk. ii., sec. 6.



## PROTESTANT DAWN AT NAPLES.

423

hired a house for immediate proceedings at his own expense; this he fitted up with rooms for the officers, and prisons for the accused, supplying the latter with strong bolts and locks, with dungeons, chains, blocks, and every other fearful appurtenance of his office. He appointed commissioners-general for the different countries."<sup>1</sup>

The resolution to restore the Inquisition was taken at a critical moment for Italy, and all the countries south of the Alps. The dawn of the Protestant day was breaking around the very throne of the Pope. From the city of Ferrara in the north, where the daughter of Louis XII., the correspondent of Calvin, sheltered in her palace the disciples of the Gospel, to the ancient Parthenope, which looks down from its fig and aloe covered heights upon the calm waters of its bay, the light was breaking in a clearness and fulness that gave promise that in proportion to the depth of the previous darkness, so would be the splendours of the coming day. Distinguished as the land of the Renaissance, Italy seemed about to become yet more distinguished as the land of Protestantism. At the foot of Fiesole, and in that Florence on which Cosmo and the brilliant group of scholars around him had so often looked down, while they talked of Plato, there were men who had learned a better knowledge than that which the Greek sage had taught. In Padua, in Bologna, in Lucca, in Modena, in Rome,<sup>2</sup> and in other cities of classic fame, some of the first families had embraced the Gospel. Men of rank in the State, and of eminence in the Church, persons of mark in the republic of letters, orators, poets, and some noble ladies, as eminent for their talents as for their birth, were not ashamed to enrol themselves among the disciples of that faith which the Lutheran princes had confessed at Augsburg, and which Calvin was propagating from the little town on the shores of the Leman, then beginning to attract the notice of the world. But of all the Protestant groups now forming in Italy, none equalled in respect of brilliance of rank, lustre of talent, and devotion of faith, that which had gathered round Juan di Valdez on the lovely shore of Naples.

This distinguished Spaniard had been forced to leave the court of Charles V. and his native land for the sake of the Gospel. On the western arm of the Bay of Naples, hard by the tomb of Virgil, looking forth on the calm sea, and the picturesque island of Capri, with the opposite shore, on which Vesuvius, with its pennon of white vapour a-top,

kept watch over the cities which 1,400 years before it had wrapped in a winding-sheet of ashes, and enclosed in a tomb of lava, was placed the villa of Valdez. There his friends often assembled to discuss the articles of the Protestant creed, and confirm one another in their adherence to the Gospel. Among these was Peter Martyr Vermigli, Prior of St. Peter's *ad aram*. In the wilderness of Romanism the prior had become parched with thirst, for no water could he find that could refresh his soul. Valdez led him to a fountain, whereat Martyr drank, and thirsted no more. In his turn he zealously led others to the same living stream. Another member of that Protestant band was Caserta, a Neapolitan nobleman. He had a young relative, then wholly absorbed in the gaities and splendours of Naples; him Caserta introduced to Valdez. This was Galeazzo Caraccioli, only son of the Marquis of Vico, who embraced the Gospel with his whole heart, and when the tempest dispersed the brilliant company to which he had joined himself, leaving his noble palace, his rich patrimony, his virtuous wife, his dear children, and all his flourishing honours, he cleaved to the cross, and repairing to Geneva was there, in the words of Calvin, "content with our littleness, and lives frugally according to the habits of the commonalty—neither more nor less than any one of us."<sup>3</sup>

In 1536 this select society received another member. Bernardino Ochino, the great orator of Italy, came at that time to Naples to preach the Lent Sermons. A native of Sienna, he assumed the cowl of St. Francis, which he afterwards exchanged for the frock of the more rigid order of the Capuchins. He was so eloquent that Charles V. said of him, "That man is enough to make the stones weep." His discourses were impregnated with the great principles of the Protestant faith, and his eloquence drew overwhelming crowds to the Church of St. Giovanni Maggiore, where he was now preaching. His accession to the society around Valdez gave it great additional strength, for the preacher was daily scattering the seeds of Divine truth among the common people. And not among these only, for persons of all ranks crowded to hear the eloquent Capuchin. Among his audience might be seen Giulia de Gonzaga, widow of the Duke of Trajetto, reputed the most beautiful woman in Italy, and, what was higher praise, one of the most humble and sincere of its Christians. And there was Vittoria Colonna, Marchioness of Pescara, also renowned for the loveliness of her person, and not less renowned for her talents and virtues. And there was Pietro Carne-

<sup>1</sup> Ranke, bk. ii., sec. 6.

<sup>2</sup> See M'Crie, *Prog. and Supp. Ref. in Italy*, chap. 3.

<sup>3</sup> Calvin, *Comment. on 1st Corinthians—Dedication*.

secchi, a patrician of Florence, and a former secretary of Clement VII., now a disciple, and afterwards to be a martyr, of the Gospel. Such were the illustrious men and the high-born women that formed this Protestant propaganda in Naples. It comprehended elements of power which promised brilliant results in the future. It formed a galaxy of rank, talent, oratory, genius, and tact, adapted to all classes of the nation, and constituted, one would have thought, such an organisation or "Bureau" as was sure to originate, and in due time accomplish, the Reformation of Italy. The ravages the Gothic nations had inflicted, and the yet greater ravages of the Papacy, were on the point of being repaired, and the physical loveliness which Italy had known in her first days, and a moral beauty greater than she had ever known, were about to be restored to her. It was during those same years that Calvin was beginning his labours at Geneva, and fighting with the Pantheistic Libertines for a secure foothold on which to place his Reformation, that this little phalanx of devoted Protestant champions was formed on the shore of Naples.

Of the two movements, the southern one appeared at that hour by much the more hopeful. Contemplated from a human point of view, it had all the elements of success. Here the flower of an ancient nation was gathering on its own soil to essay the noble task of evoking into a second development those mighty energies which had long slumbered, but were not dead, in the bosom of a race that had given arts and letters and civilisation to the West. Every needful power and gift was present in the

little company here confederate for the glorious enterprise. Though small in numbers this little host was great in names, comprehending as it did men of ancient lineage, of noble birth, of great wealth, of accomplished scholarship, of poetical genius, and of popular eloquence. They could appeal, moreover, to a past of renown, the traditions of which had not yet perished, and the memory of which might be helpful in the struggle to shake off the yoke of the present. These were surpassing advantages compared with the conditions of the movement at Geneva—a little town which had borrowed glory from neither letters nor arms; with a population rude, lawless, and insolent; a diminutive territory, overshadowed on all sides by powerful and hostile monarchs, who stood with arm uplifted to strike down Protestantism should it here raise its head; and, most discouraging of all, the movement was guided by but one man of note, and he a stranger, an exile, without the prestige of birth, or rank, or wealth. The movement at Geneva cannot succeed; that at Naples cannot fail: so would we have said. But the battle of Protestantism was not to the strong. The world needs to have the lesson often repeated, that it is the truth of principles and not the grandeur of names that gives assurance of victory. The young vine planted beneath the towers of the ancient Parthenope, and which was shooting forth so hopefully in the golden air of that classic region, was to wither and die, while that which had taken root beneath the shadow of the Alps was to expand amid the rude blasts of the Swiss mountains, and stretch its boughs over Christendom.

## CHAPTER XI.

### THE TORTURES OF THE INQUISITION.

A Stunning Blow—Three Classes in Italy—Flight of Peter Martyr Vermigli—of Ochino—Caraffa made Pope—The Martyrs, Mollio and Tisserano—Italian Protestantism Crushed—A Notable Epoch—Three Movements—The Inquisition at Nuremberg—The Torture-Chamber—Its Furnishings—Max Tower—The Chamber of Question—The various Instruments of Torture—The Subterranean Dungeons—The Iron Virgin—Her Office—The Burial of the Dead.

THE re-establishment of the Inquisition settled the question of the Reformation of Italy. The country, struck with this blow as it was lifting itself up, instantly fell back into the old gulf. It had become suddenly apparent that religious reform must be won with a great fight of suffering, and Italy had not strength to press on through chains, and dun-

geons, and scaffolds to the goal she wished to reach. The prize was glorious, she saw, but the price was great. Pallavicino has confessed that it was the Inquisition that saved Italy from lapsing into Protestantism.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Istoria Conc. Trent.*, lib. xiv., cap. 9.

## AN ITALIAN MARTYR.

425

The religious question had divided the Italians of that day into three classes. The bulk of the nation had not thought on the question at all, and harboured no purpose of leaving the Church of Rome. To them the restoration of the Inquisition had no terrors. There was another and large class who had abandoned Rome, but who had not clearness to advance to the open profession of Protestantism. They were most to be pitied of all should they fall into the hands of the inquisitors, seeing they were too undecided either to decline or to face the horrors of the Holy Office. The third class were in no doubt as to the course they must pursue. They could not return to a Church which they held to be superstitious, and they had no alternative before them but provide for their safety by flight, or await death amid the fires of the Inquisition. The consternation was great; for the Protestants had not dreamed of their enemies having recourse to such violent measures. Numbers fled, and these fugitives were to be found in every city of Switzerland and Germany.<sup>1</sup> Among these was Bernardino Ochino, on whose eloquent orations all ranks of his countrymen had been hanging but a few months before, and in whose audience the emperor himself might be seen when he visited Italy. Not, however, till he had been served with a citation from the Holy Office at Rome did Ochino make his escape. Flight was almost as bitter as death to the orator. He was leaving behind him the scene of those brilliant triumphs which he could not hope to renew on a foreign soil. Pausing on the summit of the Great St. Bernard, he devoted a few moments to those feelings of regret which were so natural on abandoning so much that he could not hope ever again to enjoy. He then went forward to Geneva. But, alas! the best days of the eloquent monk were past. At Geneva, Ochino's views became tainted and obscured with the new philosophy, which was beginning to air itself at that young school of pantheism.

Peter Martyr Vermigli soon followed. He was presiding over the convent of his order in Lucca, when the storm came with such sudden violence. He set his house in order and fled; but it was discovered after he was gone that the heresy remained although the heretic had escaped, his opinions having been embraced by many of the Luccese monks. The same was found to be the case with the order to which Ochino belonged, the Capuchins namely, and the Pope at first meditated, as the only cure, the suppression of both orders. Peter Martyr went ultimately to Strasburg, and a place was found for him

in its university, where his lamp continued to burn clearly to the close. Juan di Valdez died before the tempest burst, which drove beyond the Alps so many of the distinguished group that had formed itself around him at Pausilippo, and saw not the evil days which came on his adopted country. But the majority of those who had embraced the Protestant faith were unable to escape. They were immured in the prisons of the various Holy Offices throughout Italy; some were kept in dark cells for years, in the hope that they would recant, others were quickly relieved by martyrdom. The restorer of the Inquisition, the once reforming Caraffa, mounted the Papal chair, under the name of Paul IV. The rigours of the Holy Office were not likely to be relaxed under the new Pope; but twenty years were needed to enable the torture and the stake to annihilate the Protestants of Italy.<sup>2</sup>

Of those who suffered martyrdom we shall mention only two—Mollio, a Bolognese professor, renowned throughout Italy for his learning and his pure life; and Tisserano, a native of Perugia. On the 15th of September, 1553, an assembly of the Inquisition, consisting of six cardinals with their episcopal assessors, was held with great pomp at Rome. A train of prisoners, with burning tapers in their hands, was led in before the tribunal. All of them recanted save Mollio and Tisserano. On leave being given them to speak, Mollio broke out, says M<sup>c</sup>Crie, "in a strain of bold and fervid invective, which chained them to their seats, at the same time that it cut them to the quick." He rebuked his judges for their lewdness, their avarice, and their blood-thirsty cruelty, and concluded as follows:—"Wherefore I appeal from your sentence, and summon you, cruel tyrants and murderers, to answer before the judgment-seat of Christ at the last day, where your pompous titles and gorgeous trappings will not dazzle, nor your guards and torturing apparatus terrify us. And in testimony of this, take back that which you have given me." In saying this, he threw the flaming torch which he held in his hand on the ground, and extinguished it. Galled, and gnashing upon him with their teeth, like the persecutors of the first Christian martyrs, the cardinals ordered Mollio, together with his companion, who approved of the testimony he had borne, to instant execution. They were conveyed, accordingly, to the Campo del Fior, where they died with the most pious fortitude.<sup>3</sup>

The eight years that elapsed between 1534 and 1542 are notable ones in the annals of Protestant Christianity. That epoch witnessed the birth of

<sup>1</sup> Ranke, bk. ii., sec. 6, p. 157; Lond., 1847.

<sup>2</sup> M<sup>c</sup>Crie, p. 233; Edin., 1833.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 318—320.



three movements, which were destined to stamp a character upon the future of Europe, and powerfully to modify the conflict then in progress in Christendom. In 1534 the Jesuits recorded their first vow in the Church of Montmartre, in Paris. In 1540 their society was regularly launched by

earth, and that never does an agency start up to destroy the world, but there is set over against it a yet more powerful agency to convert the evil it would inflict into good.

It is one of these great epochs at which we have arrived. Jesuitism, the consummation of error—the



PETER MARTYR VERMIGLI. (From the Portrait in Beza's "Icones.")

the Papal edict. In 1542, Paul III. issued the bull for the re-establishment of the Inquisition; and in 1541, Calvin returned to Geneva, to prepare that spiritual army that was to wage battle with Jesuitism backed by the Inquisition. The meeting of these dates—the contemporaneous rise of these three instrumentalities, is sufficiently striking, and is one of the many proofs which we meet in history that there is an Eye watching all that is done on

Inquisition, the maximum of force, stand up and array themselves against a now fully developed Protestantism. In following the steps of the combatants, we shall be led in succession to the mountains of the Waldenses, to the cities of France, to the swamps of Holland, to the plains of Germany, to Italy, to Spain, to England and Scotland. Round the whole of Christendom will roll the tide of this great battle, casting down one nation into the darkness of

## THE TORTURE-CHAMBER.

427

slavery, and lifting up another into the glory of freedom, and causing the gigantic crimes of the persecutor and the despot to be forgotten in the excelling splendour of the patriot and the martyr. This is the struggle with the record of which we shall presently be occupied. Meanwhile we proceed to describe one of those few Inquisitions that remain to this day in almost the identical state in which they existed when the Holy Office was being

genius, meet one at every step. We shall first describe the *Chamber of Torture*.<sup>1</sup>

The house so called immediately adjoins the Imperial Castle, which from its lofty site looks down on the city, whose Gothic towers, sculptured fronts, and curiously ornamented gables are seen covering both banks of the Pegnitz, which rolls below. The house may have been the guard-room of the castle. It derives its name, the *Torture-chamber*, not from



MOLLIO THROWING DOWN HIS TORCH BEFORE THE INQUISITION.

vigorously worked. This will enable us to realise more vividly the terror of that weapon which Paul III. prepared for the hands of the Jesuits, and the Divine power of that faith which enabled the confessors of the Gospel to withstand and triumph over it.

Turn we now to the town of Nuremberg, in Bavaria. The zeal with which Duke Albert, the sovereign of Bavaria, entered into the restoration of Roman Catholicism, we have already narrated. To further the movement, he provided every one of the chief towns of his dominions with a Holy Office, and the Inquisition of Nuremberg still remains—an anomalous and horrible monument in the midst of a city where the memorials of an exquisite art, and the creations of an unrivalled

the fact that the torture was here inflicted, but because into this one chamber has been collected a complete set of the instruments of torture gleaned from the various Inquisitions that formerly existed in Bavaria. A glance suffices to show the whole dreadful apparatus by which the adherents of Rome sought to maintain her dogmas. Placed next to the door, and greeting the sight as one enters, is a collection of hideous masks. These represent creatures monstrous of shape, and malignant and

<sup>1</sup> The Author was conducted over the Inquisition at Nuremberg in September, 1871, and wrote the description given of it in the text immediately thereafter on the spot. Others must have seen it, but he knows of no one who has described it.

fiendish of nature. It is in beholding them that we begin to perceive how subtle was the genius that devised this system of coercion, and that it took the mind as well as the body of the victim into account. In gazing on them, one feels as if he had suddenly come into polluting and debasing society, and had sunk to the same moral level with the creatures here figured before him. He suffers a conscious abatement of dignity and fortitude. The persecutor had calculated, doubtless, that the effect produced upon the mind of his victim by these dreadful apparitions, would be that he would become morally relaxed, and less able to sustain his cause. Unless of strong mind, indeed, the unfortunate prisoner, on entering such a place, and seeing himself encompassed with such unearthly and hideous shapes, must have felt as if he were the vile heretic which the persecutor styled him, and as if already the infernal den had opened its portals, and sent forth its venomous swarms to bid him welcome. Yourself accursed, with accursed beings are you henceforth to dwell—such was the silent language of these abhorred images.

We pass on into the chamber, where more dreadful sights meet our gaze. It is hung round and round with instruments of torture, so numerous that it would take a long while even to name them, and so diverse that it would take a much longer time to describe them. We must take them in groups, for it were hopeless to think of going over them one by one, and particularising the mode in which each operated, and the ingenuity and art with which all of them have been adapted to their horrible end. There were instruments for compressing the fingers till the bones should be squeezed to splinters. There were instruments for probing below the finger-nails till an exquisite pain, like a burning fire, would run along the nerves. There were instruments for tearing out the tongue, for scooping out the eyes, for grubbing-up the ears. There were bunches of iron cords, with a spiked circle at the end of every whip, for tearing the flesh from the back till bone and sinew were laid bare. There were iron cases for the legs, which were tightened upon the limb placed in them by means of a screw, till flesh and bone were reduced to a jelly. There were cradles set full of sharp spikes, in which victims were laid and rolled from side to side, the wretched occupant being pierced at each movement of the machine with innumerable sharp points. There were iron ladles with long handles, for holding molten lead or boiling pitch, to be poured down the throat of the victim, and convert his body into a burning cauldron. There were frames

with holes to admit the hands and feet, so contrived that the person put into them had his body bent into unnatural and painful positions, and the agony grew greater and greater by moments, and yet the man did not die. There were chestfuls of small but most ingeniously constructed instruments for pinching, probing, or tearing the more sensitive parts of the body, and continuing the pain up to the very verge where reason or life gives way. On the floor and walls of the apartment were other and larger instruments for the same fearful end—lacerating, mangling, and agonising living men; but these we shall meet in other dungeons we are yet to visit.

The first impression on entering the chamber was one of bewildering horror; a confused procession of mangled, mutilated, agonising men, speechless in their great woe, the flesh peeled from off their livid sinews, the sockets where eyes had been, hollow and empty, seemed to pass before one. The most dreadful scenes which the great genius of Dante has imagined, appeared tame in comparison with the spectral groups which this chamber summoned up. The first impulse was to escape, lest images of pain, memories of tormented men, who were made to die a hundred deaths in one, should take hold of one's mind, never again to be effaced from it.

The things we have been surveying are not the mere models of the instruments made use of in the Holy Office; they are the veritable instruments themselves. We see before us the actual implements by which hundreds and thousands of men and women, many of them saints and confessors of the Lord Jesus, were torn, and mangled, and slain. These terrible realities the men of the sixteenth century had to face and endure, or renounce the hope of the life eternal. Painful they were to flesh and blood—nay, not even endurable by flesh and blood unless sustained by the Spirit of the mighty God.

We leave the Torture-chamber to visit the Inquisition proper. We go eastward, about half a mile, keeping close to the northern wall of the city, till we come to an old tower, styled in the common *parlance* of Nuremberg the Max Tower. We pull the bell, the iron handle and chain of which are seen suspended beside the door-post. The cicerone appears, carrying a bunch of keys, a lantern, and some half-dozen candles. The lantern is to show us our way, and the candles are for the purpose of being lighted and stuck up at the turnings in the dark underground passages which we are about to traverse. Should mischance befall our lantern, these tapers, like beacon-lights in a narrow creek, will pilot us safely back into the day. The cicerone,



## THE CHAMBER OF QUESTION.

429

selecting the largest from the bunch of keys, inserts it in the lock of the massy portal before which we stand, bolt after bolt is turned, and the door, with hoarse heavy groan as it turns on its hinge, opens slowly to us. We begin to descend. We go down one flight of steps; we go down a second flight; we descend yet a third. And now we pause a moment. The darkness is intense, for here never came the faintest glimmer of day; but a gleam thrown forward from the lantern showed us that we were arrived at the entrance of a horizontal, narrow passage. We could see, by the flickering of the light upon its sides and roof, that the corridor we were traversing was hewn out of the rock. We had gone only a few paces when we were brought up before a massy door. As far as the dim light served us, we could see the door, old, powdery with dust, and partly worm-eaten. Passing in, the corridor continued, and we went forward other three paces or so, when we found ourselves before a second door. We opened and shut it behind us as we did the first. Again we began to thread our way: a third door stopped us. We opened and closed it in like manner. Every step was carrying us deeper into the heart of the rock, and multiplying the barriers between us and the upper world. We were shut in with the thick darkness and the awful silence. We began to realise what must have been the feelings of some unhappy disciple of the Gospel, surprised by the familiars of the Holy Office, led through the midnight streets of Nuremberg, conducted to Max Tower, led down flight after flight of stairs, and along this horizontal shaft in the rock, and at every few paces a massy door, with its locks and bolts, closing behind him! He must have felt how utterly he was beyond the reach of human pity and human aid. No cry, however piercing, could reach the ear of man through these roofs of rock. He was entirely in the power of those who had brought him thither.

At last we came to a side-door in the narrow passage. We halted, applied the key, and the door, with its ancient mould, creaking harshly as if moving on a hinge long disused, opened to let us in. We found ourselves in a rather roomy chamber, it might be about twelve feet square. This was the *Chamber of Question*. Along one side of the apartment ran a low platform. There sat of old the inquisitors, three in number—the first a divine, the second a casuist, and the third a civilian. The only occupant of that platform was the crucifix, or image of the Saviour on the cross, which still remained. The six candles that usually burned before the “holy Fathers” were, of course, extinguished, but our lantern supplied their place, and showed us the

grim furnishings of the apartment. In the middle was the horizontal rack or bed of torture, on which the victim was stretched till bone started from bone, and his dislocated frame became the seat of agony, which was suspended only when it had reached a pitch that threatened death.

Leaning against the wall of the chamber was the upright rack, which is simpler, but as an instrument of torture not less effectual, than the horizontal one. There was the iron chain which wound over a pulley, and hauled up the victim to the vaulted roof; and there were the two great stone weights which, tied to his feet, and the iron cord let go, brought him down with a jerk that dislocated his limbs, while the spiky rollers, which he grazed in his descent, cut into and excoriated his back, leaving his body a bloody, dislocated mass.<sup>1</sup>

Here, too, was the cradle of which we have made mention above, amply garnished within with cruel knobs, on which the sufferer, tied hand and foot, was thrown at every movement of the machine, to be bruised all over, and brought forth discoloured, swollen, bleeding, but still living.

All round, ready to hand, were hung the minor instruments of torture. There were screws and thumbkins for the fingers, spiked collars for the neck, iron boots for the legs, gags for the mouth, cloths to cover the face, and permit the slow percolation of water, drop by drop, down the throat of the person undergoing this form of torture. There were rollers set round with spikes, for bruising the arms and back; there were iron scourges, pincers, and tongs for tearing out the tongue, slitting the nose and ears, and otherwise disfiguring and mangling the body till it was horrible and horrifying to look upon it. There were other things of which an expert only could tell the name and the use. Had these instruments a tongue, and could the history of this chamber be written, how awful the tale!

We shall suppose that all this has been gone through; that the confessor has been stretched on the bed of torture; has been gashed, broken, mangled, and yet, by power given him from above, has not denied his Saviour: he has been “tortured not accepting deliverance:” what further punishment has the Holy Office in reserve for those from whom its torments have failed to extort a recantation? These dreadful dungeons furnish us with the means of answering this question.

We return to the narrow passage, and go forward a little way. Every few paces there comes a door,

<sup>1</sup> The Author has described with greater minuteness the horizontal and upright racks in his account of the dungeons underneath the Town-house of Nuremberg. (See *ante*, bk. ix., chap. 5, p. 501.)



originally strong and massy, and garnished with great iron knobs but now old and mouldy, and creaking when opened with a noise painfully loud in the deep stillness. The windings are numerous, but at every turning of the passage a lighted candle is placed, lest peradventure the way should be missed, and the road back to the living world be lost for ever. A few steps are taken downwards, very cautiously, for a lantern can barely show the ground. Here there is a vaulted chamber, entirely dug out of the living rock, except the roof, which is formed of hewn stone. It contains an iron image of the Virgin; and on the opposite wall, suspended by an iron hook, is a lamp, which when lighted shows the goodly proportions of "Our Lady." On the instant of touching a spring the image flings open its arms, which resemble the doors of a cupboard, and which are seen to be stuck full on the inside with poignards, each about a foot in length. Some of these knives are so placed as to enter the eyes of those whom the image enfolded in its embrace, others are set so as to penetrate the ears and brain, others to pierce the breast, and others again to gore the abdomen.

The person who had passed through the terrible ordeal of the Question-chamber, but had made no recantation, would be led along the tortuous passage by which we had come, and ushered into this vault, where the first object that would greet his eye, the pale light of the lamp falling on it, would

be the iron Virgin. He would be bidden to stand right in front of the image. The spring would be touched by the executioner—the Virgin would fling open her arms, and the wretched victim would straightway be forced within them. Another spring was then touched—the Virgin closed upon her victim; a strong wooden beam, fastened at one end to the wall by a movable joint, the other placed against the doors of the iron image, was worked by a screw, and as the beam was pushed out, the spiky arms of the Virgin slowly but irresistibly closed upon the man and did their work.

When the dreadful business was ended, it needed not that the executioner should put himself to the trouble of making the Virgin unclasp the mangled carcase of her victim; provision had been made for its quick and secret disposal. At the touching of a third spring, the floor of the image would slide aside, and the body of the victim drop down the mouth of a perpendicular shaft in the rock. Down this pit, at a great depth, could be discerned the shimmer of water. A canal had been made to flow underneath the vault where stood the iron Virgin, and when she had done her work upon those who were delivered over to her tender mercies, she let them fall, with quick descent and sullen plunge, into the canal underneath, where they were floated to the Pegnitz, and from the Pegnitz to the Rhine, and by the Rhine to the ocean, there to sleep beside the dust of Huss and Jerome.

## Book Sixteenth.

### PROTESTANTISM IN THE WALDENSIAN VALLEYS.

#### CHAPTER I.

##### ANTIQUITY AND FIRST PERSECUTIONS OF THE WALDENSES.

Their Unique Position in Christendom—Their Twofold Testimony—They Witness against Rome and for Protestantism—Hated by Rome—The Cottian Alps—Albigenses and Waldenses—The Waldensian Territory Proper—Papal Testimony to the Flourishing State of their Church in the Fourteenth Century—Early Bulls against them—Tragedy of Christmas, 1400—Constancy of the Waldenses—Crusade of Pope Innocent VIII.—His Bull of 1487—The Army Assembles—Two Frightful Tempests approach the Valleys.

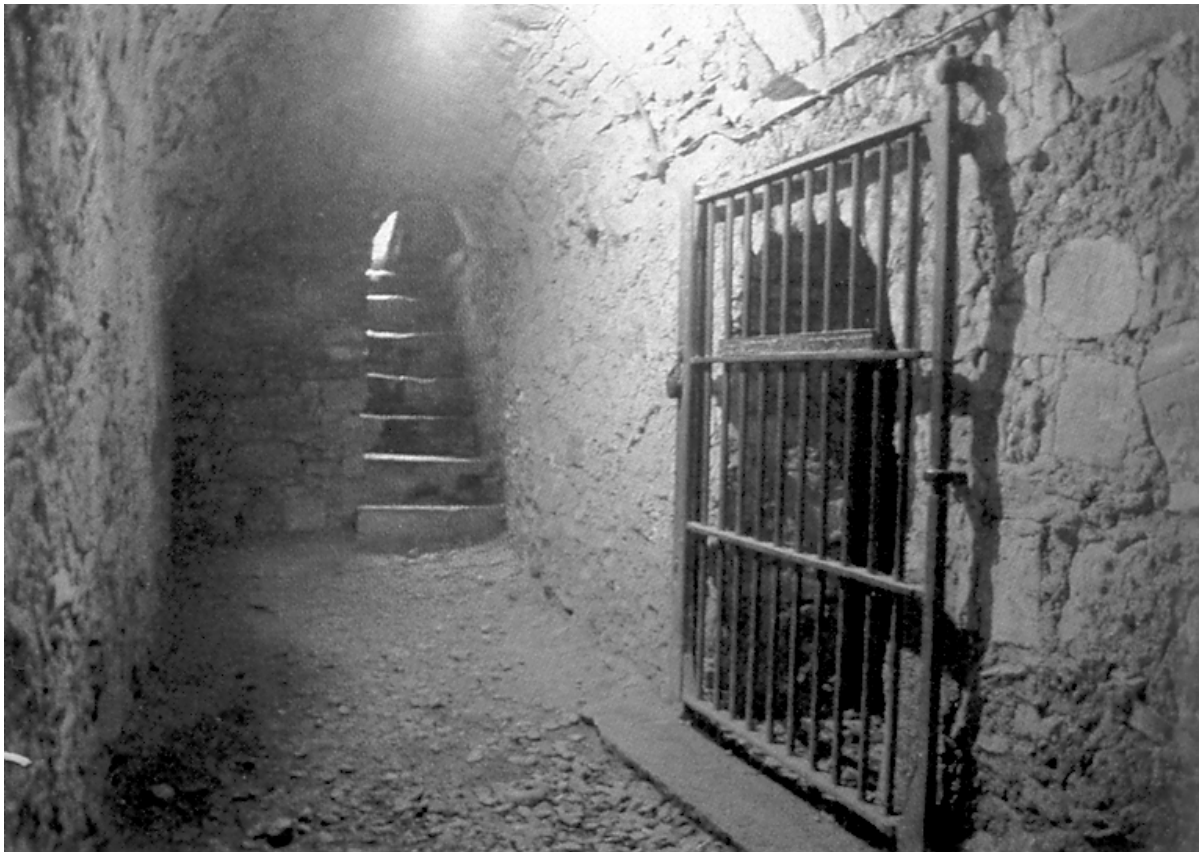
THE Waldenses stand apart and alone in the Christian world. Their place on the surface of Europe is unique; their position in history is not less unique; and the end appointed them to fulfil is one which

has been assigned to them alone, no other people being permitted to share it with them.

The Waldenses bear a twofold testimony. Like the snow-clad peaks amid which their dwelling is



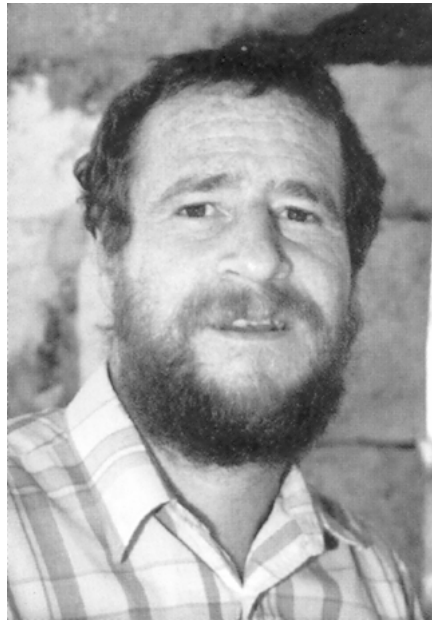
**Death Mask of the Inquisition's Executioners, 1600s**



**Underground Torture Chamber of the Holy Office, Ireland, 1600s**

*The (New, Illustrated) Great Controversy*, Ellen G. White, (DeLand, Florida, Laymen for Religious Liberty, 1990).

## Appendix VI



Barry Chamish, 2000 <sup>#759</sup>

### Author, Revisionist Zionist Jew, Israeli Patriot

The author regards Barry Chamish as the foremost Jewish authority when it comes to the real truth behind all political intrigue within Israel. As the founder of the groundbreaking periodical *Inside Israel* and author of several extremely critical books, including *Israel Betrayed* (2000), *Who Murdered Yitzhak Rabin?* (2000) and *Save Israel!* (2002), his newest CD release is most important of all. *Zion First: The Vatican's New Crusade for Jerusalem* details Rome's quest to make Jerusalem an international city, as advocated by JFK assassin, Francis Cardinal Spellman. His exposure of Jesuit-trained Knight of Malta, King Juan Carlos of Spain advising Shimon Peres, and Knight of Malta Henry Kissinger advising Ariel Sharon are key points in proving Rome's secret rule over both Labor and Likud political parties. It was Barry who informed the author that Shimon Peres and Yossi Beilin deeded the Temple Mount to the Vatican in 1993; a few months later Rome recognized the nation of Israel—to the chagrin of the Arab world! For the ~~Black Pope~~ considers Israel, created and ruled by Jesuit Temporal Coadjutors since 1948, to be the restored “~~Kingdom of Jerusalem~~” of the Pope's ~~Dark Ages~~, when the crusading and bloody Knights Templars also sought to rebuild the Temple of Solomon. Barry exposes the fact that Rome rules Israel via New York's Council on Foreign Relations now directed by the “Archbishop of the Capital of the World,” Edward Cardinal Egan. Because of his imperial works, he now lives in Vancouver, B.C., due to several attempts on his life. May this brave and persistent Judas Maccabeus of the 21<sup>st</sup> Century continue to sound the warning: “Israel is ruled by Sabbatian Frankist, Masonic Jewish Labor Zionist, CFR-directed, popish traitors loyal to that Antichrist in the Vatican.” Barry may be reached at [www.barrychamish.com](http://www.barrychamish.com); [chamish@netvision.net.il](mailto:chamish@netvision.net.il).

*Israel Betrayed*, Barry Chamish, (Jerusalem: Zionist Book Club, 2000).



**Leo Lyon Zagami, 2006** <sup>#760</sup>

**Italian Noble, Moslem, Ex-Illuminatus, Ex-P2 33<sup>rd</sup> Degree Freemason**

Although Zagami has an obvious, evil-looking “Count Dracula” countenance due to his rearing and many years within the highest levels of the **Black Pope’s** occult Illuminati and Freemasonry, the author is convinced of his sincerity and selfless intent to expose the plans of America’s destroyers. Raised a Roman Catholic and a member of P2 Monte Carlo Lodge’s “Masonic Executive Committee,” Leo “the prince” had been groomed to replace aged Illuminati “king,” P2 Grand Master and Knight of Malta, Licio Gelli. Fleeing for his life, Leo left Italy and now resides in Norway from where he conducts his work of exposing the spiritual and temporal powers of the Illuminati controlled by the most powerful sorcerers and black magicians in the world—the Jesuits! Leo’s work has sustained most of the conclusions put forth in *VIII* such as: the **Black Pope** controls the **White Pope**; the Vatican Empire and its American Empire are mere tools of the Jesuits; the Knights of Malta control the Pope’s unified international intelligence community as well as Rome’s international banking fraternity; the Sicilian Mafia directs the Pope’s international drug trade, prostitution racket and pornography industry; the Knights of Malta ruling the CIA are responsible for 911; the war in Iraq is, in fact, a 21<sup>st</sup> Century Crusade against Islam while serving as a distraction for the planned destruction of the American Empire; and the **Black Pope** rules the Masonic Chief Rabbis of Rome and Jerusalem, and thus is the secret master of international Masonic Jewish Labor Zionism. Zagami also admits that notable Jews are mere Masonic pawns in the **Black Pope’s** grand conspiracy for a world government to be centered in a Third Hebrew Temple in Jerusalem. May this brave Roman of noble blood continue to expose the power and plan of the Vatican’s Jesuit/Illuminati and come to know the true **Lord Jesus Christ** of the **A1611 Bible**. Leo can be reached at [www.illuminaticonfessions.webfriend.it](http://www.illuminaticonfessions.webfriend.it).

## **Appendix VII**

*On the Author, Eric Jon Phelps*

**April 4, 2006**

**TO:** Individuals of Interest  
**SUBJECT:** Résumé; Theological Sketch  
**FROM:** Eric Jon Phelps



**Eric Jon Phelps, 2006**

**Born:** December 3, 1953

**City and State of Birth:** Oakland, California

**Race:** White; mix of Scotch-Irish, Irish, Swedish, Native American Indian

**Native Language:** English

**Reared:** Pinole, California; White Roman Catholic culture

**High School:** Pinole Valley High School, 1968-1972

**Military Service:** United States Air Force, 1972-1977

**Education:** B.S. in Bible, Lancaster Bible College, 1981

**Marital Status:** Wife, Danita; Son, Skyler-7; Son, Jordan-2;

Two sons to previous marriage:

Benjamin-27; Profession: Mechanical Engineer

Nathan-25; Profession: Commercial Pilot

**Trade:** Concrete Worker; Independent Contractor 1982-1996

Retired in 1996; Student of Bible, Law, Medicine and History, 1996-Present

Advocate of Alternate Therapies for both Acute and Chronic Diseases;

Member; National Health Federation, 1980-Present

*Exposing the Papacy's Medical Inquisition within Western Civilization put upon us by the Order's Rockefeller-financed medical schools, the AMA and ADA; enforced by Rome's Holy Office of the FDA using the Company's Fascist Justice Department.*



**Citizenship Status:** Citizen of Pennsylvania-First;  
 Article IV, Section 2, U.S. Citizen-Secondly  
 Released from Privileges and Immunities of  
 Rome's Fourteenth Amendment Citizenship, 1989

**Father:** Lourn G. Phelps, 1924-Present  
 Race: Scotch-Irish; Welsh; Native American Indian  
 Religion: Historic Protestant; Bible-Rejecting Anglican

**Mother:** Lynn M. Phelps, (maiden name, Callahan); 1928-Present  
 Race: Irish-Swedish;  
 Religion: Historic Protestant; Bible-Rejecting Atheist

**Siblings:**  
 Sister, Linda Shaw  
 Brother, Craig Phelps  
 Brother, Kristen Phelps

**Religion:**

**Sect:** Born-Again, Saved, Bible-believing, Independent Baptist, 1971

**Final Authority:** *The AV1611 English Bible*;

**Calvinist:** Holding to the Doctrines of Grace; London Baptist Confession

**Protestant:** Denouncing the Usurpations of the Papacy Including:

**Spiritual and Temporal Powers** of the Pope;

**Papal Infallibility**, Deification of the Pope (Bull: *Unam Sanctam*);

**Anti Society of Jesus**, i.e., **the Company of Jesus**, presently ruling the world through the **Papacy**, including the **Pope** of its making, the Roman Hierarchy, its several Orders, both Military and Religious of the Roman Catholic Institution; Occult Freemasonry; the Illuminati, the **Sabbatian-Frankist Masonic Jewish Labor Zionists**, Masonic Moslems (Sunni, Shiite and Wahhabi), along with a host of subordinate Egyptian, Gnostic, Hermetic Secret Societies having penetrated all Church-State religions, encompassing one grand, international, Satanic conspiracy to culminate in a world government to be ruled by **Satan** through a final and last Pope, murdered, risen from the dead and indwelt by **Satan**, ruling the world from the future international city of **Jerusalem** within a new Temple of Solomon—the **Third Hebrew Temple**. This **Beast**, the **Antichrist**, will also rule the world's politics and commerce from the treasure city of ancient **Babylon**, yet to be built after the Pope's present Crusade against the Islamic peoples, as well as against the historic White British and American Protestant peoples once having composed the Jesuit Society's greatest enemy—**White Anglo-Saxon Protestant Western Civilization**—in accordance with **the Company's Counter-Reformation Council of Trent**; its bloody **Fourth Vow** known in history as *the Jesuit Oath*; its *Monita Secreta* (*Secret Instructions of the Jesuits*); its *Syllabus of Errors* (Eighty Errors of Modern Civilization “reprobated, forbidden and condemned”) incorporated into the Jesuit-led, **Ultramontane**, openly fascist and anti-communist **First Vatican Council of 1870**; and its *The Protocols of the*

*Learned Elders of Zion*, authored by the Order's "Fathers of the Faith," composing the **Community of Sion** in Valais, Switzerland, prior to the Jesuit-inspired Dreyfus Affair. An attempt was made by the Order, however, to prove *The Protocols* "a forgery" of the Russian Tzarist Secret Police (the Okhrana—then in the hands of **Spanish Jesuit General Louis Martin** through his creature, the Jew-hating absolutist, **Knight of Malta Tzar Nicholas II**). That attempt, in covering-up the Order's authorship of *The Protocols*, became the life's work of **Belgian Jesuit Pierre Charles** according to a French Socialist-Communist and occult Jesuit Temporal Coadjutor, **Jean Lacouture**, as revealed in his *Jesuits: A Multibiography*.

**Dispensationalist; Distinguishing Between:**

**The Body of Christ** (the true New Testament Bible-believing Church)

**The Nation of Israel** (the Race of Hebrew/Israelitic/Jewish People)

**The Gentile Nations:** Composed of the Descendants of

Japheth (the Whites), and their geographic nations

Shem (the Orientals) and their geographic nations

Ham (the Blacks) and their geographic nations

**Biblical, Non-Hateful, Racial and Ethnic Separatist of the Nations:**

Advocating the Separation of the Nations; each nation being composed of a distinct **race**, **language** and **culture** of a people dwelling within a specific **geographic area** on any given continent; each people being a self-governing, autonomous entity, enjoying the fruit of their own labors utilizing their own natural resources while protecting their domestic manufacturers; and armed with a nationalistic military composed of its own citizens set for the defense of their own distinct nation and civilization.

**Biblical, Non-Hateful, Racial and Ethnic Separatist from the Jews:**

Advocating the Racial Separation of Gentile Nations from **the LORD's** beloved Hebrew/Jewish/Israelitic people, who, racially, are yet to inherit the promises given to the fathers, **Abraham**, **Isaac** and **Jacob** in addition to the promise given to Israel's Prophet and King, **David**, all of whom will be resurrected to enjoy the fulfillment of their specific promises via the power of **the Lord Jesus Christ**, He ruling the world from **Jerusalem**, "**the holy city**," after He has smashed **the Antichrist's** racially Jew-hating nations at His Second Coming foretold by the Old Testament as explained by the New Testament, **The King James AV1611 Bible** for English-speaking peoples. We refuse to persecute or amalgamate with this special racial people—"the holy people," lest we pollute their seed, while they await the fulfillment of their earthly promises and we await the fulfillment of our heavenly promises.

Advocating the benevolent treatment of Jews within Gentile nations that the blessing of the Abrahamic promise may be extended to those nations by the risen **Son of God** now seated at the right hand of His Father, **the Lord Jesus**



Christ expecting “*his enemies to be made his footstool*” once “*the fullness of the Gentiles*” (i.e., the Jew/Gentile elect’s salvation in Christ) is complete.

Advocating the right of the Hebrew/Jewish/Israelitic people, “*the holy seed*,” to the land of ancient Israel, which land promise given to **Abram** (*Genesis 12:1-3*), and his physical posterity through **Isaac** and **Jacob**, was in fact unilateral and thus unconditional, solely dependent upon **God** vindicating His **Holy Name** for its ultimate fulfillment. These specific promises to the fathers, Jesus Christ came to confirm (*Romans 15:8*). The right of a remnant of the Hebrew people to occupy their land is not premised upon national repentance, evidenced by their presence in the land while suffering under a foretold condition of unbelief. The Jewish people’s presence in the land is a necessity for the prophetic Scriptures to be fulfilled (*Daniel 9:27; Ezekiel 38:8; Zechariah 12:8-10; 14:1-4; Matthew 24:15*). The Nation of Israel is no longer under the conditional **Law of Moses**, or the **Mosaic Covenant**, but only under the **Abrahamic Covenant** with the promise of being brought under the **Messiah’s New Covenant** as declared by the prophets *Jeremiah* (31:32-34) and *Ezekiel* (36:25-27). It is for this reason the Arab Moslems within Israel have no right whatsoever to the land or a nation within the land promised to Abraham, and therefore should be peaceably removed, given necessary funds by the super-rich Islamic cartel-capitalists ruling the Arab Moslem world—on behalf of the Papacy—and repatriated to neighboring Arab states, again given monies, houses and lands to begin anew. This in turn would eliminate the Jesuit Order’s generational agitation between Jews and Arabs, the Society’s high-level Freemasons, both Jewish and Islamic, controlling both factions—as directed by Rome, thus ending the continued diplomacy benefiting the Vatican.

The author’s study of the Jesuit Order was prompted by three great injustices:

1. The Assassination of **President John F. Kennedy**;
2. The Assassination of **President Abraham Lincoln**;
3. The Concerted Attack upon the Bible of the English Reformation, *The King James Authorized Version of 1611* translated from the Hebrew Masoretic Text and the Greek Received Text, all of which Reformation Bibles in every “vulgar” tongue are condemned by the Order’s Counter-Reformation, “heretic and liberal”-condemning, **Dark Age Council of Trent** (1545-1563).

I have devoted over twenty-five years, off and on, to this study; authored *Vatican Assassins: “Wounded In The House Of My Friends;”* and have finished the Third edition, doubled in length from the First edition, its intent being to awaken individuals to the occult dictatorship of the **Society of Jesus** within their own nations via “trusted third parties,” and the assassination and murder of their duly elected officials—including **John F. Kennedy**—when “the ends justify the means.” This spiritual and political **Great Awakening**, prayerfully to be brought about by the preaching of the true **New Testament Gospel of the Grace of God in Christ**, in

conjunction with the exposure of the **Devil's** unfruitful works of darkness, will hopefully lead **the LORD's** obedient elect people (as well as all honest and patriotic men within all nations), to issue the clarion call for the expulsion of the **Society of Jesus** from their national borders. These expulsions will hopefully lead to the subsequent **Suppression and Extinction** of the **Company of Jesus** through a formal **Papal Bull** issued by the Pope, confiscating all its wealth and property (including the Society's stupendous gold horde—stored in the central banks of the world—as well as controlling stocks in the world's military industrial complexes and international oil monopoly), this marvelous, forthcoming **Second Bull of Suppression and Extinction** to be issued in the near future—by the grace of the living, **Sovereign God!** As was done in 1773 by the virtuous **Pope Clement XIV**, so may it be accomplished again by a repentant and humbled **Pope Benedict XVI**, whose unfortunate ties to the Bavarian Illuminati Jesuits—Hitler's SS henchmen of World War II—may be broken, his life preserved and his **Bull of Suppression and Extinction** promulgated throughout the earth for the benefit and blessing of all mankind.

I am available for interviews and public speaking engagements.

**Contact Information:**

Eric Jon Phelps  
Lowvehm, Inc.  
P.O. Box 326  
Newmanstown, PA  
17073  
Ph. 610-589-5300  
Email: [eric@vaticanassassins.org](mailto:eric@vaticanassassins.org)  
Website: [www.vaticanassassins.org](http://www.vaticanassassins.org)

**The End**